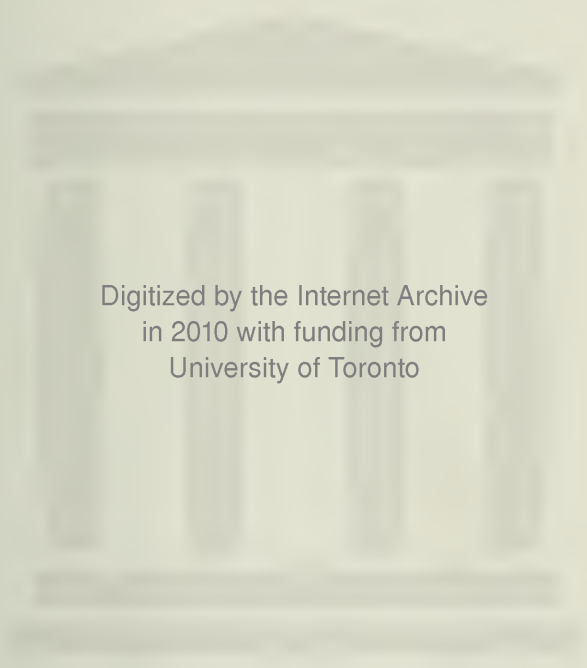
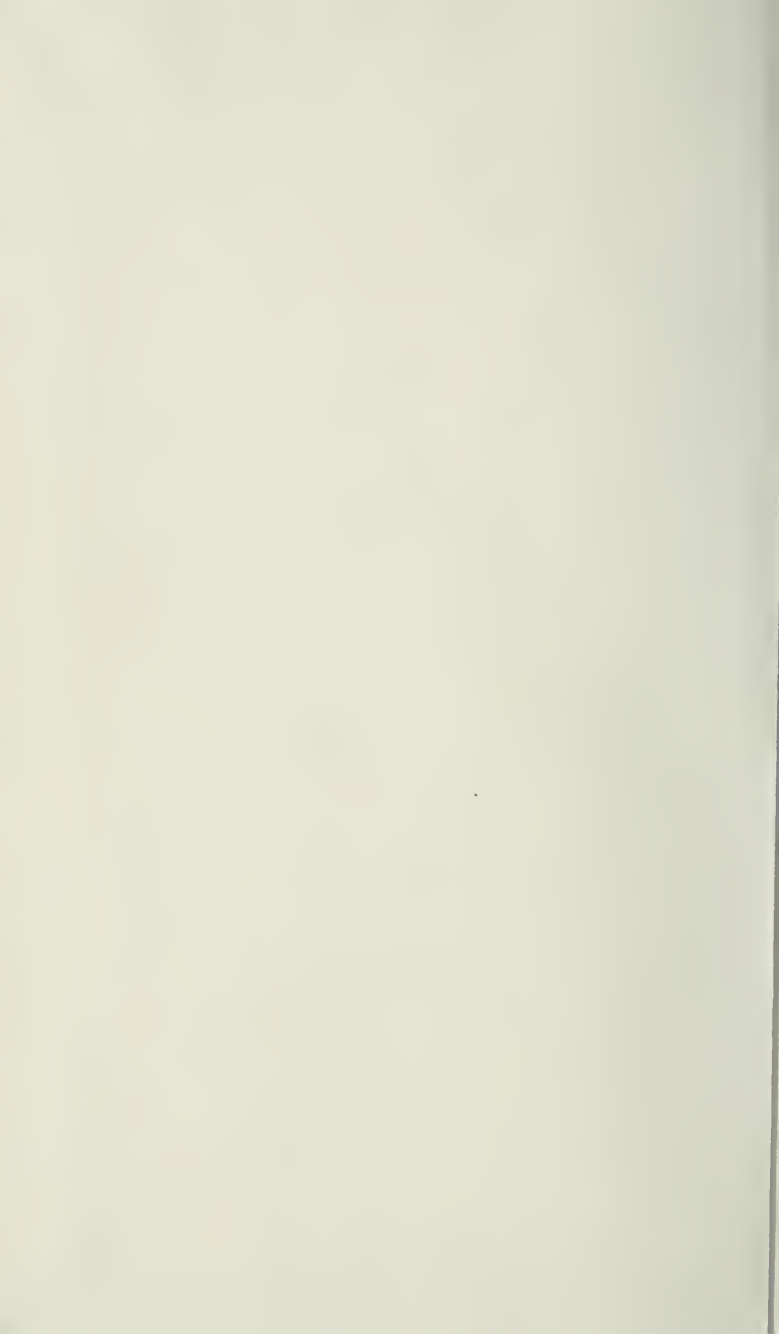
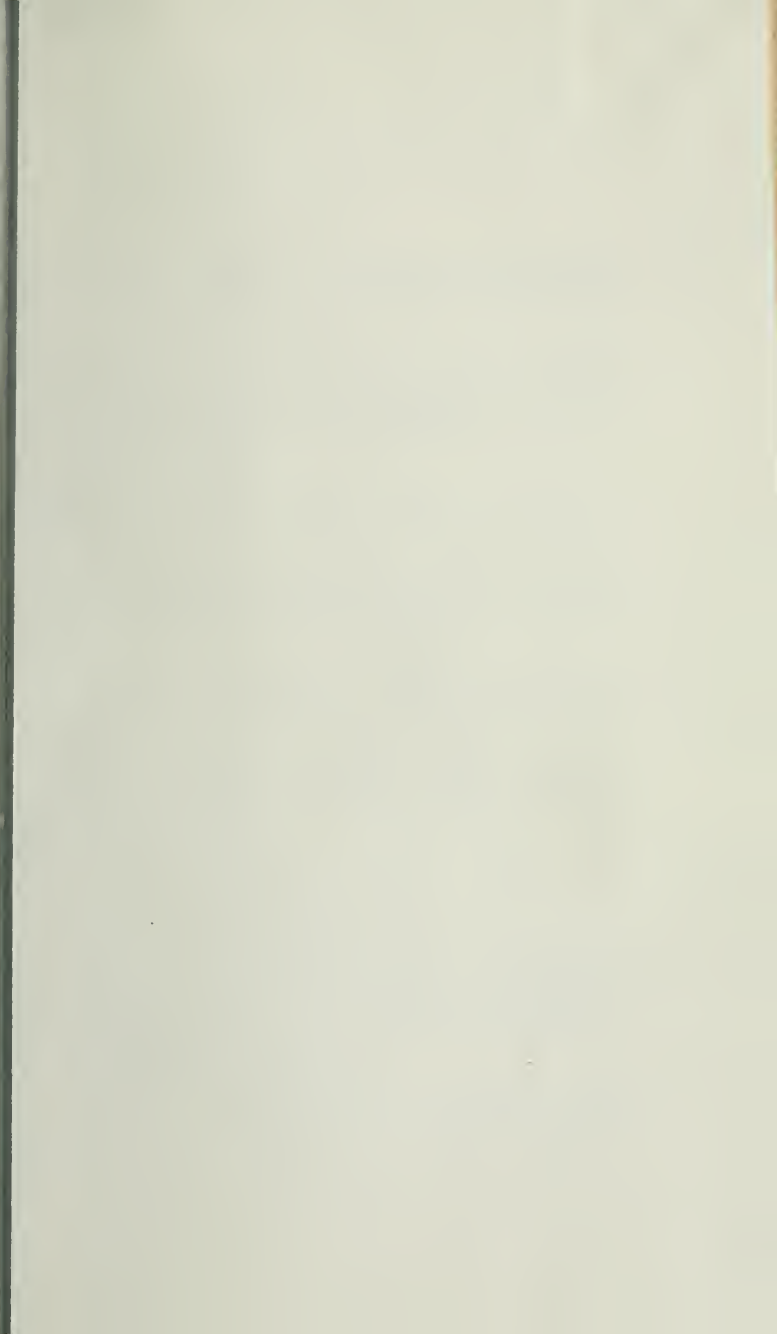


3 1761 04013 7036



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2010 with funding from
University of Toronto





RECOMMENDATIONS.

"Mr. ROWLAND's Grammar is not only based on the most approved systems, but, as a manual, is the most important, useful, and satisfactory work that has been penned upon the subject."—*Carnarvon and Denbigh Herald*.

"The author may safely be complimented as having produced a volume well worthy of the age we live in, and of the estimation in which he is held by his countrymen generally. . . . We have little doubt but that it will soon be reckoned amongst the best recognized authorities of Welsh Literature."—*North Wales Chronicle*.

"Decidedly the best Grammar of modern Cymraeg extant, and reflects very great credit upon the learned and judicious author."—*Rev. John Williams Ab Ithel*.

"The best Welsh Grammar, arranged after the model of the Greek and Latin Grammars that have more recently appeared in Germany, and therefore much more complete and precise in the doctrine of words than the earlier Welsh Grammars."—*F. J. Mone, Director des Archivs zu Carlsruhe*.

"Mr. ROWLAND's Welsh Grammar is always one of my travelling companions. I think it one of the most valuable modern contributions to Welsh Literature."—*A. J. Johnes, Esq., Judge of the County Court*.

"I wish also to construct an Elementary Grammar in Breton. I intend to write on this subject to Mr. ROWLAND, to ask his permission to translate his excellent Grammar, or at least a great portion of it."—*Charles de Gaulle, (Barz Bro C'hall), Secretary to the Breuriez Breiz*.

"There was no Grammar worthy of the name or of the British Language until Mr. ROWLAND brought forth his."—*Dr. Rudolf Siegfried*.

"Y mae Mr. ROWLAND wedi cychwyn yn yr iawn gyfeiriad. Nid Grammadeg o'r iaith Seisnig wedi ei gyfieithu a'i draws-gymmhwyso at y Gymraeg yw ei lyfr; ond Grammadeg o'r iaith Gymraeg yn ei holl deithi a'i dulliau priodol ei hun, er ei fod wedi ei ysgrifenu yn Seisneg. Ceir yma holl esgyrn yr iaith, nid yn unig ar wahan, ond hefyd yn eu perthynas â'u gilydd; a theflir goleuni ar y cymnalau bychain sydd yn cyssylltu yr aelodau â'u gilydd."—*Y Traethodydd*.

"Os nad ydym yn camsynied yn fawr, mae tyngedfen y Grammadeg Cymreig hwn i ddyfod yn safou grammadegol yr iaith Gymraeg."—*Yr Haul*.

Preparing for publication, by the same Author,

A

BOOK OF EXERCISES;

ADAPTED TO THE

THIRD EDITION

OF

ROWLAND'S GRAMMAR.

3elt
835g

A GRAMMAR
OF
THE WELSH LANGUAGE,

BASED ON THE MOST APPROVED SYSTEMS,

With Copious Examples

FROM SOME OF THE MOST CORRECT WELSH WRITERS.

BY

THE REV. THOMAS ROWLAND,

RECTOR OF PENNANT MELANGELL, (viâ OSWESTRY), MONTGOMERYSHIRE.

THIRD EDITION, GREATLY ENLARGED & IMPROVED.

27347
17/6/93

B A L A :

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY R. SAUNDERSON.

TO BE HAD OF ALL BOOKSELLERS.

M,DCCC,LXV.



PREFACE.

THIS Work was undertaken with the view of facilitating the study of the Welsh Language, and of lessening the difficulties that have been wholly passed over in silence by preceding grammarians. It is sometimes asked, whether it is possible to lay down rules that would guide a stranger in acquiring a grammatical and accurate knowledge of the Welsh Language; and some are inclined to answer in the negative. But surely those who have studied the language carefully will feel no hesitation in stating that it is possible to gain as perfect a knowledge of the Welsh as of any other tongue. It is admitted that its idioms and peculiarities are many; but still they are capable of explanation, and are reducible to very plain and definite rules.

This Grammar, or rather this attempt to lay down a foundation of a Grammar of the Welsh Language, was commenced about three years ago; and it has been continued, as other employments afforded opportunities, from that time up to the present. But those who are acquainted with the state and contents of our existing Grammars will, I doubt not, at once confess, that a longer period of uninterrupted study is necessary to bring out a work that could pretend to the accuracy and completeness of the Latin and Greek Grammars.

In its preparation, such Welsh Grammars were consulted as were likely to render the greatest aid, as those of *Dr. Davies* and *Dr. W. O. Pughe*; but in "Syntax," the greatest amount of assistance was obtained from the very learned and accurate Essay of the *Rev. T. J. Hughes*, who, at the *Aberffraw Eisteddfod*, obtained the prize offered by the *Lord Bishop of St. David's*, and the *Rev. Charles Williams, of Holyhead*.

This Essay, independently of its intrinsic worth, merits great praise, as being the first regular attempt to explain the principles of Welsh Syntax. In giving definitions of points belonging to universal Grammar, and in exhibiting correspondence of idiom between the Welsh and the Latin and Greek languages, much help was also derived from *Zumpt*, *Key*, *Arnold*, *Mathiæ*, and *Kühner*.

All will allow that a Welsh Grammar, superior to any of those that have been hitherto published, is very much needed; but whether the present Work surpasses its predecessors, must be determined by the reader. It will be seen, there is no doubt, that many deficiencies exist in this production, and that its shortcomings are numerous. However, should a second edition be called for, it is hoped that these deficiencies may be amended, mistakes rectified, and many observations added which have now been omitted, owing partly to want of *time*, and partly to want of *knowledge*. And with this view it would be deemed a kindness if Welsh critics would, either publicly or privately, favour me with hints, emendations, and remarks, so that I may be enabled to send forth a second edition more systematic, more perfect, and more complete.

It is my duty to state that I am under very great obligations to the *Rev. Thomas Briscoe, B. D., Vice-Principal and Tutor of Jesus College, Oxford*, for the kind assistance he has rendered me, both in looking over the Work before it was sent to the Printer, and in correcting the proof-sheets while passing through the press. Were it not for him, and the *Rev. William Briscoe, M. A., Fellow of Jesus College*, it is doubtful whether the book would ever have been published: and if the reader derives any benefit from the Grammar, he, no doubt, will join me in acknowledging our gratitude to these two Gentlemen.

THOMAS ROWLAND.

BALA, Aug. 8, 1853.

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

IN preparing this new edition for the press, several important corrections have been made; some new rules have been added; many of the Welsh examples have been translated into English; and at the end has been appended an Alphabetical List of Words, with examples to show what sounds they respectively govern. These improvements and additions will, it is hoped, make the work more worthy of the praise that has been bestowed upon it.

In case any persons, in writing on this branch of literature, should be induced to copy from its pages, it is but just to hope they will acknowledge whence they have taken their quotations.

*	*	*	*	*
*	*	*	*	*

PENNANT MELANGELL, *Oct. 5, 1857.*

PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION.

THE Author is much pleased at finding that his humble endeavours to illustrate the Welsh Language have been so well received not only in Great Britain, but in foreign countries; and he trusts that the corrections and additions made in the present Edition will render the Work more worthy of the commendation bestowed upon it.

PENNANT MELANGELL, *Sep. 19, 1865.*

CONTENTS.

PART I.—ORTHOGRAPHY.

	PAGE
The Alphabet and sounds of the letters	1
Classification of the letters	3
Inflection of vowels	4
Diphthongs	5
Mutations of Consonants	6
Syntactical mutations	7
Etymological mutations	8
Accentuation of words	9
Accent on the penult	9
Accent on the ultima	10
Accent on the antepenult	13
Quantity of words	13
Monosyllables	13
Penults	14
Syllables and words	15
Primitive words	15
Compound words	16
Derivative words	16
Spelling	16
Words to be spelt according to their etymology	17
The prefixes <i>an</i> , <i>di</i> ; <i>cy</i> , <i>cym</i> , <i>cyn</i> , <i>cys</i> ; <i>as</i> , <i>es</i> , <i>ys</i> , &c.	18
The use of the aspirate <i>h</i>	20
The use of the preposition <i>yn</i>	21
<i>Nn</i> and <i>nn</i>	21
<i>Nc</i> and <i>ngc</i>	22
<i>Ff</i> and <i>ph</i>	22
<i>Eu</i> and <i>au</i>	22
Words of doubtful origin	23
Words cognate with those of other languages	23

PART II.—ETYMOLOGY.

	PAGE
Classification of words	24
Substantives (or nouns)	24
Number of nouns	24
Formation of the plural	25
Formation of the singular from the plural	32
Gender of nouns	32
Cases of nouns	38
Adjectives	38
Terminations of adjectives	38
Gender of adjectives	39
Formed (<i>a</i>) by inflection of vowels	39
(<i>b</i>) by mutation of consonants	40
Number of adjectives	40
Degrees of comparison	42
Numerals	44
Personal pronouns	46
Reflective pronouns	48
Reciprocal pronouns	48
Demonstrative pronouns	48
Relative pronouns	50
Interrogative pronouns	51
Possessive pronouns	51
Indefinite pronouns	52
Verbs	53
Formation of the moods	53
Infinitive mood	54
Infinitive endings	54
Finite moods	55
Definition of the moods	59
Tenses of verbs	59
Present tense	60
Imperfect	60
Perfect	60
Pluperfect	61
Future	61

	PAGE
Future perfect	61
Progressive state	61
Participles	62
Conjugation of the verb <i>Bod</i>	63
Auxiliary verbs	67
Conjugation of a regular verb	69
Terminations of the inflected form	69
DYSGU	70
Active voice	70
Participles active	74
Passive voice	74
Participles passive	79
Irregular verbs	80
Myned	80
Dyfod and dawed	82
Gwneyd, gwneuthur, or gwnelyd	83
Gwybod	85
Adwaen and adnabod	87
Cael or caffael	88
Compound verbs of <i>Bod</i>	90
Ysgwyd, dwyn, dianc, chwerthin, rhoi, &c.	91
Defective verbs	91
Medd; eb; piau; hwde; moes; byw, and marw	91
Y mae genyf, "I have."	93
The Article	94
Adverbs	94
Adverbs of quality	95
of number	95
of order	95
of place	96
of showing	96
of time	96
of quantity	97
of doubting	97
of negation	97
of affirmation	97
of interrogation	97
of comparison	97
Auxiliary affirmative adverbs	97
Conjunctions	98

	PAGE
Copulative; disjunctive; suppositive; concessive; causal; of motive or purpose; of effect or result; explanatory; temporal; comparative; adversative; illative . . .	98
Prepositions	99
Simple prepositions	100
Prepositions proper	100
Substantive prepositions	101
Compound prepositions	101
Compounds ending with a preposition	102
Compounds ending with a substantive	102
Pronominal prepositions	103
Interjections	105
Prefixes	106
Affixes	111
Noun terminations	111
Abstract	112
Agent	112
Diminutive	113
Promiscuous	114
Adjective terminations	116
Verb terminations (see pp. 54, 69, 74.)	

PART III.—SYNTAX.

The Article	118
Article before proper names	122
Nouns (or Substantives)	122
Apposition	122
‘Yn apposition’	123
Nominative case	124
Genitive case	125
Accusative case	129
Vocative case	130
Proper names	130
Adjectives	131
Agreement in Gender	131
Agreement in Number	132
Position	132
Government	133

	PAGE
Accusative after adjectives	135
Comparison	136
Numerals	137
Cardinal	137
Ordinal	140
Personal pronouns	141
Connected with verbs	141
Auxiliary pronouns	143
The pronoun <i>Hi</i>	143
Connected with nouns	143
Connected with prepositions	144
Apposition and government	144
<i>Fy hun, &c., myself</i>	144
Possessive pronouns	145
<i>Mau and tau</i>	145
<i>Eiddof, eiddot, &c., mine, thine</i>	145
Government	146
Demonstrative pronouns	147
<i>Hyn, hyny, &c.</i>	148
Indefinite pronouns	149
Verbs	152
Agreement	152
Position	154
Government	156
Auxiliary affirmative particles before verbs	158
Possessive pronouns before verbs	158
Before Transitive verbs	159
Before Intransitive and Passive verbs	160
Infinitive Passive	161
Subjunctive mood	162
The verb <i>Bod</i>	164
Difference between <i>sydd, mae, oes, and yw</i>	164
<i>Sydd</i>	164
<i>Mae</i>	166
<i>Oes</i>	167
<i>Yw</i>	168
Synopsis of <i>sydd, mae, oes, and yw</i>	169
Agreement	171
Apposition verbs	172
' <i>Yn apposition</i> '	172

	PAGE
Government and position of <i>yn</i>	173
Omission of <i>yn</i>	174
Infinitive mood	175
Observation on “ <i>i</i> ” before the Infu.	176
Government of the Infinitive	178
Participles	179
The difference between <i>yn</i> , <i>gan</i> , and <i>dan</i>	179
Adverbs	180
Position	180
Adverbs of negation	181
Adverbs of comparison	184
Adverbs of quality	184
Adverbs of doubting	185
Adverbs of showing	185
Auxiliary affirmative adverbs	185
The auxiliary <i>a</i>	185
The auxiliaries <i>y</i> , <i>yr</i> , <i>yd</i> , and <i>ydd</i>	187
Conjunctions	189
Prepositions	191
<i>Mewn</i> and <i>yn</i>	192
Different functions of <i>yn</i>	193
<i>A</i> (<i>ag</i>), <i>gan</i> and <i>gyda</i> (<i>gydag</i>)	193
<i>At</i> and <i>i</i>	193
<i>Erbyn</i> , <i>yn erbyn</i> , <i>i</i> . . . <i>erbyn</i>	193
<i>Cer</i> , <i>ger</i> ; <i>cerfydd</i> , <i>gerfydd</i> , &c.	194
<i>Tan</i> , <i>dan</i> ; <i>traws</i> , <i>draws</i> , &c.	194
Time and distance of place :	194
Compound prepositions	194
<i>O</i> , <i>oddi ar</i> , <i>oddi wrth</i>	195
Compound prepositions ending with a substantive	195
Pronominal prepositions	196
Interjections	197


CLAUSES.

Transitive clause	198
Infinitive mood followed by its subject :	199
Infinitive with subject connected by ‘ <i>o</i> ’	200
Infinitive with subject governed by a preposition	201

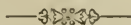
	PAGE
Passive voice	201
<i>Y, yr, mai, and taw</i> with finite moods	203
Cause clause	204
Infin. mood followed by its subject	205
Infin. with subject governed by 'o'	205
Infin. with subject governed by the prep. 'i'	206
Passive voice	206
<i>Y, yr, mai, and taw</i> with finite moods	206
Explanatory cause clause	207
Concessive clause	207
Infin. followed by its subject	208
Infin. with subject connected by 'o'	208
Infin. with subject governed by the prep. 'i'	208
Passive voice	208
<i>Y, yr, mai, and taw</i> with finite moods	209
Time clause	209
Construed with finite verbs	209
Construed with finite or infinitive verbs	210
Motive clause	211
Subjunctive mood	211
Infinitive mood	212
Effect clause	213
Interrogative clause	214
Predicative questions	214
Answers to predicative questions	215
Nominal questions	216
Wish clause	218
Supposition and Inference clauses	218
Fact supposition	219
Contingent supposition	219
Non-fact supposition	220
Relative clause	221
Simple and indefinite	221
Agreement	223
Position	223
Omission of antecedent	224
Omission of relative	224
Possessive case	225
Negative particles	226
Absolute clause	226

	PAGE
Apposition clause	227
SYNOPTICAL VIEW OF THE INITIAL MUTATIONS	227
<i>Radical and middle</i> sounds	229
Nouns, adjectives, pronouns, and verbs	229
Intervient phrase	233
Prepositions	233
Adverbs and conjunctions	234
Interjections	236
Governing words omitted	237
<i>Nasal</i> sound	237
<i>Aspirate</i> sound	239
Vowels aspirated	239
Alphabetical list of words and particles	240
Questions proposed for the "Powis Exhibition"	249

EXPLANATION OF MARKS AND ABBREVIATIONS.

<i>Accus.</i> accensative.	<i>M. mas.</i> masculine.
<i>Aff. affirm.</i> affirmative.	<i>N.</i> neuter.
<i>Asp.</i> aspirate.	<i>N. nas.</i> nasal.
<i>C. contr.</i> contracted.	<i>N. W.</i> North Wales.
<i>Cf.</i> (= confer) compare.	<i>Nom.</i> nominative.
<i>Coll.</i> colloquial.	<i>Pl.</i> plural.
<i>Def.</i> definite.	<i>Pr. pres.</i> present.
<i>E. g.</i> (= exempli gratiâ) for example.	<i>Pron.</i> pronoun.
<i>Fr.</i> from.	<i>Perf.</i> perfect.
<i>F. fem.</i> feminine.	<i>Plup.</i> pluperfect.
<i>Fut.</i> future.	<i>Pers.</i> personal.
<i>Gr.</i> Greek.	<i>Prep.</i> preposition.
<i>I. e.</i> (= id est) that is.	<i>Q. V.</i> (quod vide) see it.
<i>Imper.</i> imperative.	<i>R.</i> root or radical.
<i>Imperf.</i> imperfect.	<i>Rad.</i> radical.
<i>Impers.</i> impersonal.	<i>S. W.</i> South Wales.
<i>Indic.</i> indicative.	<i>S. sing.</i> singular.
<i>Indef.</i> indefinite.	<i>Subj.</i> subjunctive.
<i>Infin.</i> infinitive.	<i>Vb.</i> verb.
<i>Interr.</i> interrogative.	§ section.
<i>L.</i> Latin.	= equal to.
<i>M. mid.</i> middle.	 particular attention.

WELSH GRAMMAR.



PART I.—ORTHOGRAPHY.

1. The Welsh Alphabet consists of thirty-one letters:—
 A a, B b, C c, Ch ch, D d, Dd dd, E e, F f, Ff ff,
 G g, Ng ng, Ngh ngh, H h, I i, L l, Ll ll, M m,
 Mh mh, N n, Nh nh, O o, P p, Ph ph, R r, Rh rh,
 S s, T t, Th th, U u, W w, Y y.

SOUNDS OF THE LETTERS.

2. A is pronounced, when short, like *a* in *man*, *mat*; when long, like *a* in *far*, *psalm*.

B=*be*, as in English.

C=*èk*, like *k* in English. It is never soft like *c* in *city*.

Ch*=*èx* (the *c* aspirated) like *ch* of the Dutch in *nacht*, but more guttural than *ch* in the Scottish *loch*.

D=*de*, like the English *d* in *deed*, *do*.

Dd=*èth* (soft) like *th* in *with*, *thee*: never like *th* in *thought*.

E=*a*, when short, like *e* in *hen*, *met*; when long, like *a* in *cane*, *mare*.

F=*èv*, like the English *v*.

Ff=*èf*, like the English *f* in *fair*, *for*.

G=*èg*, like the English *g* in *get*, *dog*: never soft like *g* in *giant*.

Ng=*èng*, like *ng* of the English in *long*, *length*.

Ngh has the sound of *ng* with a very strong breathing.

H=*haitch* or *he*, has the same sound as *h* of the English in *horrid*, *hand*; but is never silent like *h* in *hour*.

I=*e*, when short, very like *i* in *pin*; when long, like *ee* in *fleet*.

L=*èl*, like the English *l*.

* *Ch*, followed by *w*, is frequently a radical letter: *chwaer*, sister; *chwerthin*, to laugh.

Ll=*èll*, has no sound in any language corresponding to it. The Spanish *ll** and the Italian *gl* are somewhat like it.

M=*èm*, as in English.

Mh has the sound of *m* with a very strong breathing.

N=*èn*, as in English.

Nh has the sound of *n* with a very strong breathing.

O=*o*, when short, like *o* in *not*, *got*; when long, somewhat similar to *o* in *bone*, *note*.

P=*pe*, as in English.

Ph=*èph*, *ùph* or *phe*, like the English *f* in *fair*, or *ph* in *philosopher*.

Rh like the Greek *ῥ*; as in *ῥήτωρ*.

R=*èr*, something like the English *r* in *rough*.

S=*ès*, like *s* in *sin*, *same*: never like *s* in *praise*, *choose*.

T=*te*, like the English *t* in *to*, *fat*.

Th=*èth* (hard) like *th* in *thin*, *thick*; never like *th* in *thou*.

U=*ë*, when short, somewhat similar to *i* in *this*, *live*, or *u* in *busy*; when long, somewhat similar to *e* in *me*.


W=*oo*, when short, like *oo* in *good*; when long, like *oo* in *boon*.

Y has two sounds. Its primary sound is like that of *u* in *fur*, *run*, or *e* in *her*, *stern*; its secondary sound is that of the Welsh *u*. Both sounds are exemplified in *myfyr* and *hyny*.

3. The *secondary* sound of *y* occurs—

a. In monosyllables; as, *llym*, sharp, *ty'n*, tight, *hyn*, this.

(a) But the following words are exceptions, having the *primary* sound: *dy*, thy, *dyd* and *dyt*, hold! *fy* (obs. *my*) my, *myn*, by, in swearing, *y*, the, that, and expletive adv., *yd* and *ydd*, expletive adv., *ym*, my and in, *yn*, in, &c., *yngh*, in, *yr=y*, *ys*, truly, *yth*, thy, and the expletive *y* joined to pronouns, as *y'm*, *y'th*, *y'i*, *y'n*, *y'ch*, *y'u*.

b. In the last syllable of words of more than one syllable; as, *ysgrifenydd*, writer, *erfyn*, to beg.  If a syllable is added, the *primary* sound is resumed; as, *ysgrifenyddion*, *erfyniau*.

c. If *w* and *y* are pronounced separately in monosyllables (as in the words *mwyn*=*mw-yn*, *bwyd*=*bw-yd*, *crwyn*=*cw-yn*, *gwyl*=*gw-yl*), *y* has the *secondary* sound in the derivatives and compounds of such words; as, *mwynhau*, *bwyta*, *crwyno*, *grylnos*.

* Johnes, in his "Philological Proofs," &c., says, "The aspirated *ll* of the Spaniards is very like the Welsh *ll*, and is most probably a relic of Celtic pronunciation."

(a) But if *w* and *y* are pronounced conjointly (as, *chwyn*, *chwyrn*, *chwys*), *y* has its *primary* sound in derivatives and compounds; as, *chwynu*, *chwyrnu*, *chwysu*. To this there are several exceptions; such as *gwynneb*, *gwynfŷl*, *diwygiad*, &c.

d. In the prefix *cyd*, and sometimes in *cyn*; as, *cydeistedd*, *cydfyned*, *cynoesoedd*; and in adjectives and adverbs prefixed to other words; as, *synfyfyr*, *hyll*, *dremio*, *cryfarfog*.

(a) These are by some written with a hyphen, *syn-fyfyr*, *cryf-arfog*, which may be regarded as indicating that *y* in the prefixed word is to have the same sound as when the word stands unconnected.

4. In other circumstances this letter has its *proper* or *primary* sound; as, *cyntaf*, *syndod*, *cyfiawnder*.

Exceptions: *teyrnas* and its derivatives; the derivatives of *rhyw*, *gwyw*, and *byw*, (except *bywyd*, &c.); and some other words.

5. Thus all the letters of the Welsh alphabet, except *y*, have only one sound respectively; and in all their combinations this sound is preserved without any change, or without its becoming quiescent. Such diphthongs as *ae*, *oe*, (e. g. *daeth*, *oen*,) are often pronounced as if written *au* and *ou*; but a correct reader will give them their proper sound. Therefore, as *Dr. Pughe* says, "the sounds of the *letters* must be considered as the perfect standard of the pronunciation of the Welsh language, and the criterion of correct speaking."

6. *J*, *k*, *q*, *v*, *x*, and *z*, occur in foreign names. Many writers, however, will not admit them into our language, but write all foreign words with our own characters. Thus, *Job*=*Iob*; *Ezekiel*=*Eseciel*; *Quintilian*=*Cwinctilian*; *Virgil*=*Fyrgil* (or *Fyrsil*); *Alexander*=*Alecsander*; *Zadoc*=*Sado*.

7. *Ch*, *dd*, *ff*, *ll*, *ng*, *ph*, *th*, &c., though double letters, represent but one simple sound.

8. Several attempts have been made from the time of *Dr. John David Rhys*, who lived some three hundred years ago, to that of *Dr. William Owen Pughe*, to render the established Orthography more simple, and in accordance with the genius and peculiarities of the language; but all their labours have proved in vain.

CLASSIFICATION OF THE LETTERS.

9. Letters are divided into *vowels* and *consonants*.

10. Seven of the letters are vowels: *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, *w*, *y*: *a*, *e*, *o*, *w*, *y*, are mutable: *i*,* *u*, immutable.

(a) *I* and *w* are sometimes consonants.

* *I* in *brith*, speckled, fem. *braith*, is probably an exception. *Sais*, Englishman, is sometimes written *Saeson* in the pl.

11. Consonants are divided into *radical* (or *initial*), and *derivative* (or *non-initial*).

12. The radical consonants are those which begin words in their original state. The derivative consonants are such as are mutations of some of the radical, and which cannot stand at the head of any Welsh words in their original state. They are always influenced by some preceding word; and when this word is taken away, they reassume their radical form. Thus, words must be looked for in the Dictionary either under the *vowels* or the *radical consonants*.*

13. The radical consonants are again divided into *immutable* and *mutable*.

14. The immutables are four in number: *ff, h, n, s*. These never undergo any change whatever, but remain steady and immoveable under all circumstances.

15. The mutables are nine: *c, p, t; g, b, d; ll, m, rh*. These are changed into other letters of the same organ, when preceded by certain governing words. *C, p, t*, undergo *three* changes; *g, b, d*, *two*; and *ll, m, rh*, *one*.

16. The derivative consonants are *b, ch, d, dd, f, g, ng, ngh, l, m, mh, n, nh, ph, r*, and *th*, which are modifications of the *mutable* consonants.

(a) The letters *b, d, g, m, n*, are both *radical*, and the *derivatives* of *p, t, c, b, d*. They are radical in

Bys, finger.

Gwraig, wife.

Nain, grandmother.

Dafad, sheep.

Modryb, aunt.

But they are modifications of *p, t, c, b, d*, in

Dy ben (rad. *pen*.)

Dy gar (rad. *car*.)

Fy nafad (rad. *dafad*.)

Dy dad (rad. *tad*.)

Fy mys (rad. *bys*.)

17. Consonants are also divided according to the organs of speech chiefly employed in uttering them.

α. *B, f, ff, m, mh, p, ph*, are *labials*.

β. *D, dd, n, nh, t, th, s*, *linguals* (or *dentals*.)

γ. *C, ch, g, ng, ngh, h*, *gutturals*.

δ. *Ll, l, rh, r*, *palatals*.

INFLECTIONS OF VOWELS.

18. The vowels, which admit of being changed into other

* But the words *fal, fel, felly, fe, fo, fy*, which are either contractions or mutations of words beginning with vowels or radical consonants, are to be looked for under *f*.

Such words as *lefain, lamp, lwmp, lôn*, which are not originally Welsh, must be looked for under *l*.

vowels, are, *a, e, o, w, y*. They are changed (*a*) to distinguish number; as *dafad*, sheep, pl. *defaid*; (*b*) to distinguish gender; as *llwm*, bare, fem. *llom*; (*c*) to form the 3rd pers. sing. fut. of verbs; as *safaf*, I will stand, 3rd pers. *saif*, he will stand; (*d*) to render words more euphonious; as *dnwfr*, water, *dyfroedd*.

A	{	is	{	<i>ai</i> ; as <i>dafad</i> , <i>a sheep</i> , <i>defaid</i> , <i>sheep</i> .
		changed	{	<i>e</i> ; as <i>glan</i> , <i>clean</i> , <i>glendid</i> , <i>cleanliness</i> .
		into	{	<i>ei</i> ; as <i>bardd</i> , <i>a bard</i> , <i>beirdd</i> , <i>bards</i> .
E	{	into	{	<i>y</i> ; as <i>cadarn</i> , <i>strong</i> , <i>cedyrn</i> , <i>strong</i> (pl.)
			{	<i>i</i> ; as <i>draen</i> , <i>thorn</i> , <i>drain</i> , <i>thorns</i> .
			{	<i>u</i> ; as <i>maes</i> , <i>field</i> , <i>meusydd</i> , <i>fields</i> .
O	{	into	{	<i>y</i> ; as <i>pabell</i> , <i>tent</i> , <i>pebyll</i> , <i>tents</i> .
			{	<i>y</i> ; as <i>porth</i> , <i>porch</i> , <i>pyrth</i> , <i>porches</i> .
W	{	into	{	<i>o</i> ; as <i>trwm</i> , <i>heavy</i> , <i>trom</i> , <i>heavy</i> (fem.)
			{	<i>y</i> ; as <i>pwn</i> , <i>pack</i> , <i>pynau</i> , <i>packs</i> .
Y	{	into	{	<i>e</i> ; as <i>brych</i> , <i>speckled</i> , <i>brech</i> , <i>speckled</i> (fem.)

DIPHTHONGS.

19. *Dr. Davies* divides the diphthongs into *proper* and *improper*.

20. The *proper* diphthongs are the following:

ae	alaeth, <i>grief</i> .	eu	breuddwyd, <i>dream</i> .	oi	troi, <i>to turn</i> .
ai	henaint, <i>old age</i> .	ew	llew, <i>lion</i> .	ow	ffowch, <i>flee</i> .
au	aur, <i>gold</i> .	ey	teyrn, <i>king</i> .	uw	Duw, <i>God</i> .
aw	llaw, <i>hand</i> .	iw	lliw, <i>colour</i> .	wy	pwyl, <i>who?</i>
ei	heneiddio, <i>to grow old</i> .	oe	oed, <i>age</i> .	yw	rhyw, <i>sort</i> .

21. The *improper* diphthongs are the following:

I before a vowel.

ia	iâd, <i>pate</i> .	io	Iôr, <i>Lord</i> .
ie	ierthi, <i>goads</i> .	iy	iyrcell, <i>young roe</i> .

W before a vowel.

wa	gwâg, <i>empty</i> .	wo	gwobr, <i>reward</i> .
we	chwêch, <i>six</i> .	wu	gwall, <i>flowers</i> .
wi	gwin, <i>wine</i> .		

I before a diphthong.

iae	cyffelybiaeth, <i>similitude</i> .	iei	ieithydd, <i>linguist</i> .
iai	anghyfiaith, <i>of a strange tongue</i> .	ieu	ieuaif, <i>youngest</i> .
iau	lliwiau, <i>colours</i> .	iew	iewan, <i>scream</i> .
iaw	cyfiawn, <i>just</i> .	ioe	erioed, <i>ever</i> .

W before a diphthong.

wae	chwaer, <i>sister</i> .	wew	gweunydd, <i>meadows</i> .
wai	gwain, <i>sheath</i> .	wew	gwew, <i>pungency</i> .
wau	gwaudd, <i>daughter-in-law</i> .	wiw	gwiw, <i>worthy</i> .
waw	gwawd, <i>irony</i> .	wyw	gwyw, <i>withered</i> .
wei	gweini, <i>to serve</i> .		

22. **Inflections.** *Ae* is changed into *ei* and *eu*: as,

Maen, *stone*, pl. *meini*. Maes, *field*, pl. *meusydd*.

Ai and *ei* are in a few instances changed into *a*: as,

Gwraig, *woman*, pl. *gwagedd*. Lleidr, *thief*, pl. *lladron*.
Dail, *leaves of a book*, sing. *dalén*. Neidr, *snake*, pl. *nadroedd*.
Chwain, *fleas*, sing. *chwanen*. Deigr, *tear*, pl. *dagrau*.

Aw is very frequently changed into *o*: as,

Mawl, *praise*, vb. *molí*. Caws, *cheese*, sing. *cosyn*.
Prawf, *proof*, vb. *profi*. Brawd, *brother*, pl. *brodyr*.
Tlawd, *poor*, pl. *tlodion*. Llawr, *floor*, pl. *lloriau*.

(a) *Aw* is sometimes changed into *ew* and *ow*. Cawr, *giant*, pl. *cewri*. Cawg, *basin*, pl. *cowgiau*. But the change of *aw* into *ow* is disapproved of by many good critics, who maintain that the diphthong should either be changed into *o*, or remain in its radical form. Thus the derivative of *llid-iawg*, *angry*, should be either *llidiogrwydd* or *llidiauwrwydd*.

Oe is in a few instances changed into *wy* and *ae*: as,
Croen, *skin*, pl. *crwyn*. Oen, *lamb*, pl. *wyn*. Troed, *foot*, pl. *traed*.

MUTATIONS OF CONSONANTS.

23. 'The principle of *literal mutation*, as a regular system, is peculiar to the Celtic dialects; though the effect of such an aptitude in some of the letters to change their sounds, is seen to pervade all languages. But it regulates some of the primary forms of construction in these tongues, as well with respect to syntax as to the composition of words.'

24. The mutable consonants, or the consonants capable of assuming other forms of modifications, are the following: *C, P, T, G, B, D, Ll, M, Rh*. These are divided into three classes, or, as *Dr. Davies* calls them, *declensions*, with three letters in each.

25. The *first class* comprises, *c, p, t*: the *second*, *g, b, d*: the *third*, *ll, m, rh*.

26. When these letters are in their original or unchanged forms, they are said to be in the *radical* sound; but when they are changed into other letters, owing to the influence that the word or syllable, which *immediately precedes*, has over them, they are said to be in the *middle* (or *soft*), the *nasal*, or the *aspirate* sound. Take, for instance, the word *câr*, a friend.

<i>Rad.</i>	<i>Mid.</i>	<i>Nasal.</i>	<i>Asp.</i>
Câr, a friend.	dy gâr.	fy nghâr.	ei châr.

* See *Dr. Pughe's Grammar*, p. 13.

27. These various alterations in the form of the nine mutables take place, (1) *In syntax*, which may be called *syntactical mutation*; (2) *In the composition of words*, which may be called *etymological mutation*.

28. **Syntactical mutation.** To treat of the changes which consonants undergo in Syntax, belongs properly to that division of Grammar; but as this subject is one of peculiar importance, and must frequently be mentioned before we come to treat of Syntax, it is expedient to acquaint the student with its leading principles as early as possible. Persons, who are not acquainted with the Welsh language from their infancy, always complain that they are puzzled with the continual changes of the consonants. This may appear to them a greater difficulty, inasmuch as the languages with which they may be conversant have nothing analogous. This constitutes the most peculiar characteristic of the British tongue; and it is said that very few languages, except its sister dialects, have anything in common with it. "In the changes and variations of these mutables lies a great part of the art and mystery of this very peculiar tongue, the most curious, perhaps, and the most delicate for its structure of any language in the world."* It must not be supposed, however, that this difficulty is insurmountable; the mutations are made systematically, and they are all reducible to definite rules, which will be found interspersed throughout the present work, with a synopsis of the whole at the end.

29. The changes are made for two purposes; *first*, "to distinguish words, to show their various relations and connections, and to fix and ascertain their proper meaning;"† *secondly*, "to distinguish the sound, to ease the pronounciation, and to render it smooth and harmonious."‡

30. This principle is not confined to those parts of speech denominated "declinable," as the term "declension," used by *Dr. Davies*, would lead the classical scholar to suppose; but it extends also to some of those which, by grammarians, are termed "indeclinable." Thus the conjunction *pan*, when preceded by *a*, takes the aspirate sound. "*A phan ddaeth efe,*" and *when he came*.


31. The following table exhibits the changes of which each letter is susceptible:—

* *Dr. T. Llewelyn's Remarks, &c.*, p. 58. † *Ib.*, p. 67. ‡ *Ib.*, p. 66.

Observation.—The pronouns, which stand at the head of the table, govern the sounds over which they are respectively placed. They will aid a person well acquainted with the language to find out the names of the different sounds, but are of no assistance to a stranger, whose ear does not immediately direct him to ascertain the vocal mutations.

		<i>Radical.*</i> <i>Eu, their.</i>	<i>Middle.</i> <i>Dy, thy.</i>	<i>Nasal.</i> <i>Fy, my.</i>	<i>Aspirate.</i> <i>Ei, her.</i>
1 Class.	{ C	Câr, a friend	Gâr	Nghâr	Châr
	{ P	Pen, a head	Ben	Mhen	Phen
	{ T	Tâd, a father	Dâd	Nhâd	Thâd
2 Class.	{ G	Gŵr, a man	—ŵr †	Ngŵr	
	{ B	Bara, bread	Fara	Mara	
	{ D	Duw, God	Dduw	Nuw	
3 Class.	{ Ll	Llaw, a hand	Law		
	{ M	Mam, a mother	Fam		‡
	{ Rh	Rhaw, a spade	Raw		

32. Thus the *first class* is susceptible of the three changes; the *middle*, *nasal*, and *aspirate*. The *second class* of two; the *middle* and *nasal*. The *third class* of one only; the *middle*.

33.  The radical sound supplies the aspirate of the *second class*, and the nasal and aspirate of the *third*. (Ei gwr; fy llaw; ei llaw.)

(a) The words *ni*, *na*, and *oni* form an exception. These are followed by the *asp.* of the 1st class, and the *mid.* of the 2nd. and 3rd. (See *Synoptical View*, at the end.)

34. **Etymological mutation.** The mutable consonants are susceptible of changes in composition of words. With few exceptions, their mutations are the same as those in syntax, and the principle by which they are changed into other letters is the same. Thus, in the word *anfuddiol*, compounded of *an* and *buddiol*, *b* is changed into *f*, because it is governed by the preceding particle *an*.

* Radicalis, mollis, liquida, aspirata. Dr. Davies. Radical, soft, aspirate, light. Dr. Pughe. Radical, vocal, nasal, aspirate. Spurrell.

† Omission of the initial letter is the sign of the middle sound of *G*.

‡ Some few writers, following the corrupt pronunciation of certain parts of S. W., change *m* into *mh* and *n* into *nh* after the fem. pron. *ei*, her. Ei mham, her mother. Ei nhain, her grandmother.

(a) Sometimes the last letter of the preceding syllable is influenced by the following syllable.

The letters *g, b, d*, are sometimes changed into *c, p, t*, if a syllable follows; as,

Tebyg, tebycach. Gwlyb, gwlypaeh. Tlawd, tlotach.

P and *t* are sometimes respectively changed into *m* and *n*; as,

Pump, pummed. Tymp, tymmor.

Dant, dannedd. Meddiant, meddiannau.

(b) The letter *ff* occurs in some words where we should expect *f*; as,

Coffau (cof-hau), to call to mind.

Cyffyllog (cy-byl), a woodcock.

Cyffwrdd (cyf-hwrdd), to touch.

Cyffelyb (cy-mal), like.

35. Letters are changed in the composition of words merely for the sake of euphony: *annysgedig* for *andysgedig*; *diben* for *dipen*. [The same principle extends to a certain degree in Greek and Latin: *συλλαμβάνω* for *συνλαμβάνω*; *συμπάσχω* for *συνπάσχω*; *colligo* for *conligo*; *accipio* for *adcipio*.]

36. In forming compound words, the preceding component part, whether a mere prefix or a more substantial word, requires that the following syllable should be in the *middle* sound.

Amgylchu (fr. *am-cylchu*), *to surround*.

Gorseddfainc (fr. *gorsedd-maine*), *a throne*.

Argraff (fr. *ar-craff*), *inscription*.

Brenindy (fr. *brenin-ty*), *a king's palace*.

37. The above is the rule; but when the preceding syllable is nothing more than a common prefix, the rule is very frequently violated. The most irregular prefixes are *a, an, cy, cyn* (first) *e, en, gor, tra*, and *as, es, ys*, with their compounds, *cys, dis, dys, &c.*

The government of these, as well as the other prefixes, is explained under § 386.

ACCENTUATION OF WORDS.

38. Accent on the penult. *Words of two syllables and upwards are accentuated on the penult; that is, on the last syllable but one.*

39. Accordingly, when the word is lengthened by a syllable or syllables suffixed, the accent moves towards the end. Thus,

Perch'en, a possessor

Accent on the first syllable.

Perchen'og, a possessor

„ second syllable.

Perchenog'aeth, possession

„ third syllable.

Perchenogaeth'au, possessions

„ fourth syllable.

This rule may be applied to all words except a very few words as, e.g., - 57. - In many other words the penult is accented in some languages, though the rule is not followed in others.

40. **Accent on the ultima.** Infinitive verbs ending with the suffix *hau* or *âu*, and such of the finite tenses of the same verbs as have a monosyllable for their termination, are accented on the last syllable.

Inf.	Glanhau'.	Bywhau'.	Cryfhaui'.
	Nacâu'.	Caniatân'.	Iachâu'.
Fin.	Glanhaf'.	Glanhei'.	Glanhawn'.

(a) Some few prefer the open form *glanhüau*, placing a diæresis over the first syllable of the suffix: others make two syllables of *hau*, *au*, &c., and thus accent the word on the penult.

Glanhäu. Glanhëi. Glanhäwn.

(b) *The circumflex accent and h.* The circumflex over the verbal suffix *hau* or *au* is intended to show the *accent*, not the *quantity*: hence some maintain that, as *h* performs the same office, the circumflex is unnecessary when the *h* is introduced: others make use of both, writing *glanhâu*, *bywhâu*, &c. As the accent naturally falls on the syllable beginning with *h*, it would be better to omit the circumflex except in those cases where *h* is inadmissible before *au*. See § 96 (a).

41. Nouns ending with the suffix *hâd* (or *âd*) are accented on the last syllable; as,

Coffâd; glanhâd; bywhâd; cryfhâd.

(a) This exception is accounted for by the circumstance of two syllables being contracted into one. For instance, *glanhâd* would be written in full, *glanhâad*, and it would thus have the accent placed on the proper syllable; that is, on '*ha*.' Hence some writers, desirous of lessening the number of exceptions, prefer the more open *glanhüad*, to the contracted forms *glanhâd*, &c.

42. Infinitive verbs ending with *oi*, and some with *eu*, have the accent on the last syllable.

Oi.	Ymdroi'.	Gordoi'.	Parotoi'.	Crynoi'.
	Osgoi'.	Amdoi'.	Cyffroi'.	Deffroi'.
Eu.	Cyfleu'.	Dileu'.	Dyneu'.	Dyheu'.

43. And if the termination of the finite tenses of such verbs be monosyllabic, the accent is generally on it; but if it be of more than one syllable, the accent assumes its proper place.

One syll. Parotoi'; parotown'; parotowch'.

Two syll. Paroto'af; paroto'ais; paroto'aist.

(a) This exception is accounted for on the same ground as the preceding; for, etymologically speaking, the terminations *oi*, *eu*, *own*, &c. are not one, but two syllables. For instance, *ymdroi*, *cyfleu*, *parotown*, are divisible into *ymdro-i*, *cyfle-u*, *paroto-wn*. Hence some writers always place a diæresis over the former syllable, thus indicating that the accent should

fall on it: *ymdröi*, *cyflëu*, *parotöwn*. Usually, however, the two syllables are considered as one.

44. The observations made under § 43, (a) are applicable to the finite tenses of *bwyta*, to eat, *addaw*, to promise, *gadaw*, to leave, *gwrandaw*, to listen, *taraw*, to strike, and their derivatives, *ymadaw*, *ymwrandaw*, *ymdaraw*, &c.

One syll.	Gwrandaw'n'.	Gwrandewch'.
Two syll.	Gwrandaw'af.	Gwrandew'i.

45. Some adjectives in *us*, formed from verbs in *hau* or *âu*, *oi*, and *eu*, and from other words, are accented on the ultima.

Bywhaus', <i>enlivening</i> .	Ymarous', <i>dilatory</i> .
Parhaus', <i>lasting</i> .	Cyfleus', <i>convenient</i> .
Crynous', <i>tidy</i> .	Chwareus', <i>playful</i> .
Cyffrous', <i>exciting</i> .	Ammheus', <i>doubtful</i> .
Deffrous', <i>wakeful</i> .	Trofaus', <i>perverse</i> .

(a) Or *bywhäus*, *cyffröus*, *cyflëus*, &c., the same as above, § 43 (a).

46. Dissyllables beginning with the negative prefix *di* are frequently pronounced as two separate words. Thus,

Diben; dios; diblant; diawch; didraul,

are pronounced as if written

Di ben; di os; di blant; di awch; di draul.

(a) The word *dibris*, when it signifies *priceless*, is accented on the ultima—*dibris'*; when=*reckless*, on the penult—*di'bris*.

47. Disyllabic adjectives beginning with the particle *go* are frequently pronounced as two separate words. Thus,

Gobrudd; godaer; godrwm; goddig; gogloff,

are pronounced as if written

Go brudd; go daer; go drwm; go ddig; go gloff.

(a) In fact, although these words, and many others, are recorded in Dr. Pughe's Dictionary as compound words, and occur sometimes as such; for example,

"O Dduw gwyn! i bryfyn brych
Ond oedd *odrwm* dy edrych?"

yet, for the most part, they are very properly written as distinct words.

48. Some verbs, beginning with the prefix *ym*, have the accent placed on the last syllable of the 3rd pers. sing. of future indic. and 2nd pers. sing. imperative; as

Ymweled: ymwel'.	Ymguddio: ymgudd'.
Ymolchi: ymolch'.	Ymadaw: ymad'.

49. Some dissyllables beginning with *ys* are accented on the last syllable; as,

Ysbawd, <i>shoulder</i> .	Ystâd, <i>state</i> .	Ystên, <i>jug</i> .
Ysgrêch, <i>scream</i> .	Ystanc, <i>stank</i> .	Ystorm, <i>storm</i> .
Yslac, <i>slack</i> .	Ystôr, <i>store</i> .	Ystŵr, <i>stir</i> .

(a) Some maintain that these words should be considered as monosyllables, and written *sbawd*, *sgrêch*, *slac*, *stâd*, *stanc*, &c.

(b) When the last syllable is long, it has often, very properly, the circumflex over it: *ysgrêch*, *ystâd*, &c.

50. Substantives ending in *awdr* are generally accented on the ultima.

Creawdr, <i>Creator</i> .	Iachawdr, <i>Saviour</i> .
Barniawdr, <i>Judge</i> .	Llywiawdr, <i>governor</i> .
Bywiawdr, <i>Giver of life</i> .	Pryniawdr, <i>redeemer</i> .
Dysgawdr, <i>teacher</i> .	Amherawdr, <i>emperor</i> .

(a) Instead of *awdr*, the open form *awdwr* is now preferred. *Creawdwr*, *dysgawdwr*, &c.

51. The personal pronouns *myfi*, *tydi*, *efe*, *efo*, *hyhi*, *nyni*, *chwy-chwi*, *hwynt-hwy*, are accented on the last syllable.

Myfi'; *tydi'*; *efe'*; *efo'*; *hyhi'*, &c.

(a) *Myfi*, *tydi*, *nyni*, *chwy-chwi*, have, in some districts of North Wales, the accent laid on the proper syllable; that is on the penult. ('Tyred *efo my'fi*')

52. Such compound prepositions as *goruwch*, above, *goris*, below, *uwchlaw*, above, *gerllaw*, near, *gerbron*, before, *heblaw*, beside, *islaw*, below, are accented on the last syllable; as,

Goruwch'; *goris'*; *uwchlaw'*; *gerllaw'*; *heblaw'*.

(a) But these, except such as are compounded with *gor*, which is an inseparable preposition, are very properly considered by many as separate words, requiring to be written *uwch law*, *ger llaw*, *heb law*, &c.

53. "Names of towns, villages, farms, and other descriptive proper names, present frequent exceptions, which are accented as if the words comprising them were written separately."*

Caergrawnt=Caer Grawnt, *Cambridge*.

Abergwaun=Aber Gwaun, *Fishguard*.

Penybont=Pen y bont, *Bridgend*.

54. Several other words, which do not admit of a classification, are accented on the ultima; such as

* Spurrrell's Grammar, p. 22.

Achlân, <i>altogether.</i>	Onide (=onid e) <i>is it not so?</i>
Aflêr, <i>untidy.</i>	Prydnawn, <i>afternoon.</i>
Amgau, <i>to encompass.</i>	Trachefn, <i>again.</i>
Argau, <i>to shut in.</i>	Ychwaith (or chwaith) <i>either.</i>
Anghytûn, <i>discordant.</i>	[<i>with.</i> Ymdrin (also ym'drin) <i>to meddle.</i>
Cyd-ddwyn (=cyd ddwyn) <i>to bear</i>	Ymddwyn, <i>to conciere.</i> (Ym'ddwyn,
Cyd-fyw (=cyd fyw) <i>to live with.</i>	<i>to behave.)</i>
Cyhŷd (also cy'hyd) <i>as long.</i>	Ymgau, <i>to shut one's self.</i>
Cytûn, <i>unanimous.</i>	Ymgom, <i>chat.</i>
Diwahân, <i>undivided.</i>	Ymwneyd, <i>to deal with.</i>
Eriôed, <i>ever.</i>	Ynnhêdd, <i>to entreat.</i>
Gwahân, <i>separation.</i>	Ysgolaig, <i>scholar.</i>

55. **Accent on the antepenult.** Some trisyllables having *w* as the second syllable, have the accent on the first; as,

Medd'wdod, gwel'wlas; gwedd'wdod; gwedd'wdai.
Mar'wnad; hoe'wder; chwer'wder; gwae'wffon.

56. The words *Seisoneg*, *Seisones*, and *Seisonig* are accented on the first syllable: *Seis'oneg*, *Seis'ones*, *Seis'onig*. Hence many writers, in order to have the accent placed on the penult, write *Seisneg*, *Seisnes*, *Seisnig*.

QUANTITY OF WORDS.*

57. All syllables are *long*, *short*, or *half long*, (or *middle*); and, in general, their quantity may be known by their final consonants.

58. **Monosyllables.** All monosyllables are either *long* or *short*.

(a) As in gender and pl. number of substantives, so in the quantity of words, the dialects of North and South Wales are often at variance. Some words are long in N. W., and short in S. W.; and *vice versa*. For example, *llesg* and *hesp* are long in N. W. (llêsg, hêsp), and short in S. W. (llêsg, hêsp.) *Heb* and *nid* are short in N. W. (hêb, nid) and long in S. W. (hêb, nid.)

59. Monosyllables ending in *ch*, *d*, *dd*, *f*, *g*, *s*, *th*, are generally *long*.

ch. Cwch, *boat.* *dd.* Bodd, *pleasure.* *g.* Ceg, *mouth.* *th.* Llath, *yard.*
d. Bad, *boat.* *f.* Llef, *voice.* *s.* Pys, *peas.* *Syth*, *straight.*

60. Monosyllables ending in *c*, *ng*, *m*, *p*, *t*, are generally *short*.

* A considerable portion of this chapter is taken from 'Ieithyddiaeth' by *Cymro llwyr*, in the 'Gwladgarwr,' and from the Rev. D. S. Evans' 'Llythyraeth.' Both these writers have treated the Quantity of words very minutely.

<i>c.</i> Llac, <i>loose.</i>	<i>m.</i> Llam, <i>leap.</i>	<i>t.</i> Ffrwt, <i>sudden.</i>
<i>ng.</i> Ing, <i>strait.</i>	<i>p.</i> Gwep, <i>visage.</i>	Twt, <i>neat.</i>

61. Monosyllables ending in *b*, *ff*, (*ph*) *ll*, *l*, *n*, *r*, are **uncertain**; i. e. some are *short*, and some are *long*.

<i>Short.</i>	<i>Long.</i>	<i>Short.</i>	<i>Long.</i>
Cob, <i>embankment.</i>	Mab, <i>son.</i>	Tal, <i>tall.</i>	Tal, <i>payment.</i>
Chwaff, <i>instantly.</i>	Rhaff, <i>rope.</i>	Bryn, <i>hill.</i>	Bran, <i>crow.</i>
Mwll, <i>sultry.</i>	Oll, <i>all.</i>	Ar, <i>on.</i>	Ar, <i>arable land.</i>

62. A vowel before two or more consonants is **short**.

Nant, *brook.* Perth, *bush.* Camp, *game.* Llestr, *vessel.*

(a) But when two vowels of the same name are contracted into one (e. g. *aa=a*, *oo=o*,) the quantity of the vowel is **long**, even when two or more consonants follow.

Cânt= <i>caant, they shall have.</i>	Ffânt= <i>ffoont, they will flee.</i>
Gwnânt= <i>gwnaant, they will do.</i>	Trânt= <i>troont, they will turn.</i>

(b) In N.W. vowels are **long** in monosyllables before *llt*, *sg* (*sc*), *sp*, *st*;

Hállt, *salt.* Llêsg, *feeble.* Hesp, *barren.* Clúst, *ear.*

63. **Diphthongs.** *A*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, *y*, in *ai*, *aw* (see below) *au*, *ei*, *ew* (see below) *eu*, *ey*, *iw*, *oi*, *ow*, *uw*, *yw*, are generally **short**. *A* and *o* in *ae* and *oe* are generally **long**. *Wy* is **long** and **short**.

<i>Short.</i>	Màith.	Càwr.	Hàul.	Llèill.	Mèwn.	Nèu.
	Gwnèyd.	Lliw.	Ffôi.	Ffòweh.	Dùw.	Byw.
<i>Long.</i>	Sâeth.	Bâedd.	Dâeth.	Trôed.	Pôen.	Côed.
<i>Wy.</i>	Gwŷr.	Mŷyn.	Gwŷn.	Mŷynder.		

(a) *A* and *e* before *w* final are **long** in N. W. Llâw, *hand.* Bâw, *dirt.* Llêw, *lion.*

64. **Penults** are either **short** or **half long** (or *middle*.)

65. When the penult is *short*, it must in pronunciation end in a consonant. Thus, *àteb*, to answer, must be pronounced *at-eb*, not *a-teb*: *cànu*, to bleach, *can-u*, not *ca-nu*.

66. When the penult is *half long*, it must in pronunciation end in a vowel, and the vowel must be pronounced short. Thus, *canu*, to sing, must be pronounced *cà-nu*, not *can-u*: *caru*, to love, *cà-ru*, not *car-u*: *glanach*, cleaner, *glà-nach*, not *glan-ach*.

67. Penults are **short**, if they are short in their simple, monosyllabic forms.

Cànu, *to bleach*, fr. càn. Brônau, *breasts*, fr. brôn.

(a) *Ll* and *s* are always **short** in penults, although *ll* is **uncertain**, and *s* is **long**, in monosyllables. Hôll: hòllo!, *entire.* Bŷs: bŷsedd, *fingers.*

68. Long monosyllables become **half long** in penults, when a syllable beginning with a *vowel* is added.

Câr: caru=cà-ru, *to love*.

Tôn: tonau=tò-nau, *tunes*.

(a) *B, ff (ph) and l*, are *half long* in penults, if the next syllable begins with a vowel, although they are *uncertain* in monosyllables. Hêl: hela=hè-la.

69. Long monosyllables are made **short** in penults, when a syllable beginning with a *consonant* is added.

Mâb: mabsant, *patron saint*.

Tâd: tâdmaeth, *foster-father*.

Glân: glânwaith, *clean*.

Tân: tânio, *to fire*.

(a) *I and w* at the beginning of syllables, as above, are consonants.

SYLLABLES AND WORDS.

70. A **syllable** is a simple sound represented by one or more letters. A-chas, *odious*. Ffrwyth-lawn, *fruitful*.

71. "Dividing words into syllables is a very different operation, according to the different ends proposed by it." Words are divided (a) to show their etymology; and (b) to exhibit their exact pronunciation in reading.

72. For *etymological* purposes, words are divided into syllables according to the etymology assigned to them. Therefore hynod, *noted*, rhagenw, *pronoun*, cablair, *calumny*, must be divided into *hy-nod*, *rhag-ennw*, *cabl-air* (not *hyn-od*, *rhagenw*, *cab-lair*,) because they are compounded of *hy* and *nod*, *rhag* and *ennw*, *cabl* and *gair*.

73. But in *reading*, words must be divided according to their pronunciation, without any regard to etymology. Thus, tadau, *fathers*, canu, *to sing*, glanach, *cleaner*, must in reading be divided into *ta-dau*, *ca-nu*, *gla-nach*, although etymologically they should be written *tad-au*, *can-u*, *glan-ach*.

74. Words are divided into *primitive*, *compound*, and *derivative*.

75. The **primitive words** are the most elementary parts of the language, and contain but one syllable. (Bach, pen, ci, cor, llaw, cae, da.)

(a) If we confine the term "primitive" to those small root-words which are not reducible to simpler elements, the primitives are not very numerous; but if under this term we comprehend those monosyllables which can be deduced from still more elementary words, either British or foreign, it may be said that the Welsh language abounds with primitive words. We give a few instances of such words, accompanied by their etymologies.

Brâd, *treachery*; L. prodo, fr. pro-do. Doeth, *wise*; L. doctus, fr. doceo.
Caeth, *bound*; L. captus, fr. capio. Clais, *a bruise*; Gr. κλάσις, fr. κλάω.

Câd, <i>a battle</i>	} from ca, <i>a hold, a shutting on.</i>
Cae, <i>an enclosure</i>	
Caw, <i>a band</i>	

76. **Compound words** are formed of two or more of the primitives, or of prefixes and primitives.

Cadfarch (cad-march), <i>a war-horse.</i>	Geirwir (gair-gwir), <i>truth-telling.</i>
Modrwy (bawd-rhwy), <i>a ring.</i>	Ceinfalch (cain-balch), <i>showy.</i>
Geirlyfr (gair-llyfr), <i>a dictionary.</i>	Sychdir (sych-tir), <i>dry ground.</i>
Annheg (an-teg), <i>unfair.</i>	Anghyfiawn (an-cyf-iawn), <i>unjust.</i>
Cyfundrefn (cyf-un-trefn), <i>a system.</i>	Dychryn (dy-cryn), <i>terror.</i>

77. When two or more substantives, or substantives and adjectives, are joined together to form a compound, the adjective or the substantive that expresses the notion of an adjective, takes the precedence.

<i>Iawnfarn, right judgment.</i>	<i>Dwfrbeiriant, water-engine.</i>
<i>Drygfyd, adversity.</i>	<i>Awyrgylch, atmosphere.</i>

(a) The latter noun is put in the middle sound: cadfarch. (See § 36.)

(b) But we have several compounds formed contrary to the above rule. In *drychfeddwl*, *pwyslais*, *mammaeth*, the noun in the possessive case is made to *follow* the other, whereas, according to the genius of the language, it should either *precede* the governing noun, or the compound should no longer be such. Thus *mammaeth* should have been written either *maeth-fam*, or as two distinct words, *mam maeth*. Names of churches in Wales, and some names of cities, are joined together in the same way; as, *Llan-dingad*, *Llanfair*, *Llanfor*, *Caerfyrddin*, *Caerlleon*, &c., which ought to have been written as separate words: *Llan Mair*, *Llan Mor*, *Caer Myrddin*, &c.

78. **Derivative words** are formed of primitives, or of compounds, by the addition of suffixes.

Barnol (barn-ol), <i>judicial.</i>
Colledigaeth (coll-ed-ig-aeth), <i>perdition.</i>
Tragwyddoldeb (tra-gwydd-ol-deb), <i>eternity.</i>
Swyddog (swydd-og), <i>an officer.</i>
Cyfiawnhâd (cyf-iawn-hâd), <i>justification.</i>
Teyrnas (teyrn-as), <i>a kingdom.</i>

(a) Some of the derivative words contain six or even seven syllables: in general, however, they do not exceed four or five, and as Dr. Pughe remarks, "words having more than five are seldom used except from a sort of affectation."

SPELLING.

79. The mode of spelling Welsh words has been, and still is, very irregular and inconsistent. Without referring to

individuals, who have ingeniously constructed new systems, among whom *Dr. W. O. Pughe* may be considered as the leader, it may be said that all the various schools may be regarded under two generic heads; one the *New school*, and the other the *Old school*.

80. The members of the New school are those who follow *Dr. Pughe's* general principles; those of the Old are such as have perfected into a system what appeared to have been the general tendency of the writers of the oldest manuscripts.

81. The principal points in which these schools differ are (1) the use of double consonants to indicate the quantity of words; (2) the use of certain prefixes, *di, dy, cy, cym, &c.*; (3) the use of the aspirate *h*; (4) the use of the preposition *yn* before *m* and *ng*.

82. Since the time that *Dr. Pughe* introduced his system, Welsh orthography has been a subject of great controversy; but we regret to say, that scarcely any of the proposed changes and emendations have received a universal acceptance. It has been suggested that a considerable number of the most learned scholars in the principality should be elected to deliberate on this subject, to lay down rules, and to impress on the Welsh literati at large the expediency and the necessity of adopting one universal mode of orthography. Until this be effected, the following rules are proposed, which have been framed as moderately as possible, in order to meet the views of both parties.

83. Words should be spelt according to their etymology. The following is *Dr. Pughe's* canon—"It is proper to write every word after the form of its substance, without either more or fewer letters than are to be found in its component parts, taken severally, that its origin or derivation may not be obscured."* Therefore consonants should not be doubled unless the etymology of the words demands, nor be omitted if their etymology require their insertion. For instance, the words *penau, tori*, are compounded of *pen* and *au, tor* and *i*, and should not therefore be spelt *pennau, torri*, with double consonants. Again, *mammaeth, annoeth*, are compounded of *mam* and *maeth, an* and *doeth*, and ought not, according to *Pughe's* canon, to be written *mamaeth, anoeth*, with single

* "Cadwedigaeth yr Iaith Gymraeg," p. 12.

consonants. Their insertion in *penau* and *tori*, and their omission in *mammaeth* and *annoeth*, would tend to obscure the origin or derivation of the words.

(a) This should be regarded only as a general principle, and must not be applied strictly to every word in the language; for in very many instances words are, and always have been, written with fewer letters than there are in their component parts, taken severally.

The letter *g* is very often omitted when the word of which it is the initial is preceded by another word or prefix. *Cywir*=*cy-gwir*; *anweledig*=*an-gweledig*; *diorfod*=*di-gorfod*. Again, in the following words, with others which might be mentioned, one consonant is omitted: *meithrin*=*maeth-trin*; *sobrwydd*=*sobr-rwydd*; *sicrwydd*=*sier-rwydd*; *amyd*=*aml-yd*; *canwriad*=*cant-gwr-iad*; *eneinio*=*enaint-io*; *toster*=*tost-der*; *amryw*=*aml-rhyw*.

(b) When a short vowel occurs in a syllable, the Old school double the consonant next to it, maintaining that it is necessary in order to show the quantity of the vowel.

Cyfrannu, to contribute; *calonnau*, hearts.

Hwnnw, that; *tonnau*, waves.

84. When long and short vowels are to be distinguished in monosyllabic words, let the long be marked with a circumflex, and the short be left without any indication of its quantity.*

Tân, fire; *tan*, under.

Tôn, tune; *ton*, wave.

Glân, clean; *glan*, river bank.

Hÿn, older; *hyn*, this.

(a) Some writers mark the long and short—*tân*, fire, *tàn*, under; others mark the short only—*tan*, fire, *tàn*, under.

85. On the contrary, when the quantity of penults is to be distinguished, the short syllable must be marked, because all penults are either *short* or *half long*.

Tônau, waves; *tonau*, tunes. *Glânau*, river banks; *glanach*, cleaner.

(a) *O* in *tonau*, tunes, and *a* in *glanach*, cleaner, have not the same quantity as *o* and *a* in *tôn* and *glân*, but are *half long*, and therefore cannot have the circumflex placed over them.

The prefixes *an*; *di*, *dy*; *cy*, *cym*, *cyn*, *cys*; *as*, *es*, *ys*, and their compounds, *cys*, *dis*, *dys*, *dos*, *gos*, *hys*.

86. *An*. When *an* (=un) is prefixed to the nasal sound of *g* or *c*, let *n* be cut off.

* In the present Work *long* and *short* vowels are often marked for the assistance of such as are strangers to the language.

Angreddi (an-greddf), *without principle.*

Anghysson (an-cysson), *inconsistent.*

Angradd (an-gradd), *without a degree.*

Anglywir (an-cywir) *inaccurate.*

Observ. *Ng* is the nasal of *g*; *ngh* of *c*.

87. When *an* is prefixed to the nasal sound of *b* or *p*, let it be changed into *am*, for the sake of euphony.

Ammraint (an-braint) *without privilege.*

Ammhrydlawn (an-prydlawn), *untimely.*

Observ. *M* is the nasal of *b*; *mh* of *p*.

88. *Di* and *dy*. Let *di* (=less) and its compound *dis* (*di-ys*) be used when *negation* is implied; *dy* and its compound *dys* (*dy-ys*) when *intensity* is implied.

Negation.

Diog (di-og), *idle.*

Diorfod (di-gorfod), *unconstrained.*

Disliw (dis-lliw), *colourless.*

Intensity.

Dyben (dy-pen), *purpose.*

Dynothi (dy-noethi) *to make bare.*

Dystaw (dys-taw), *silent.*

(a) The Old school employ *di* both as a negative and an intensive prefix; as *diben*, headless, *diben*, purpose.

Cy, cym, cyn, cys. = Lat. *con*.

89. **Cym.** When words begin with *m*, whether *m* be radical or the nasal sound of *b* or *p*, let *cym* precede them.

Cymmaint (cym-maint), *as much.*

Cymmhorth (cym-porth), *help.*

Cymmrwd (cym-brawd), *a fellow.*

Cymmhwys (cym-pwys), *fit.*

Observe. *M* is the nasal of *b*; *mh* of *p*.

90. **Cyn.** When words begin with *n*, whether *n* be radical or the nasal sound of *d* or *t*, let *cyn* precede them.

Cynnifer (cyn-nifer), *as many.*

Cynnhwrf (cyn-twrf), *noise.*

Cynnal (cyn-dal), *to support.*

Cynnadl (cyn-dadl), *a discourse.*

Observe. *N* is the nasal of *d*; *nh* of *t*.

91. **Cys.** When words begin with *s*, let *cys* precede them.

Cysson (cys-son), *consistent.* Cyssefin (cys-saf), *primary.*

(a) A branch of the New school adopts *cy* in preference to *cym*, *cyn*, and *cys*. It is, however, very doubtful whether it may be correctly used for *cym* and *cyn*, as *cy* has a tendency to govern the labials in the *middle*, and the dentals in the *asp.* sound. Cyfrad (cy-brad); cyfoli (cy-moli); cythrwfl (cy-trwfl, fr. *trouble*.)

92. **Cy.** When words begin with *ng* and *ngh*, the nasal sounds of *g* and *c*, let *cy* precede them.

Cyngwystl (cy-gwystl), *a wager*. Cyngwerth (cy-gwerth) *an equivalent*.
Cynghor (cy-côr), *an advice*. Cynghrair (cy-crair), *a treaty*.

As, es, ys, and their compounds **cys, dis, dys, dos, gos, hys.**

93. These prefixes, when followed by words beginning radically with *d* or *t*, prefer the *t* sound.

Astell (as-dell), *a board*. Dystaw (dys-taw), *silent*.
Astrus (=L. *abstrusus*), *perplexed*. Ystafell* (=L. *stabulum*) *chamber*.
Crystal (cys-tal), *of equal value*. Ystwyll (=L. *stella*), *Epiphany*.
Estyn (=L. *extendo*), *to extend*. Gosteg (gos-teg = L. *taceo*), *silence*.
Estron (=L. *extraneus*) *a stranger*.

94. When followed by words beginning radically with *g* or *c*, they prefer the *g* sound.

Asgafaeth (as-cafaeth), *a prey*. Gosgel (gos-cel), *a gloom*.
Esgyn (=L. *ascendo*), *to ascend*. Gosgordd (gos-cordd = L. *cohorte*), *a retinue*.
Esgar (es-car), *to separate*. Cysgod (cy-ysgod = Gr. *σκόρος*), *a shadow*.
Ysgafn (ys-cawn), *light*. Dysgweini (dys-gweini) *to administer*.
Ysgarm (ys-garm), *a scream*.
Disgyn (=L. *descendo*), *to descend*.

95. When followed by words beginning radically with *b* or *p*, they prefer the *b* sound.

Asborth (as-porth), *support*. Disbrofi (dis-profi), *to disprove*.
Ysbryd (=L. *spiritus*), *a spirit*. Dosbarth (dos-parth), *a class*.
Ysbwrial (ys-bwrw), *refuse*. Gosben (gos-pen), *a particular*.
Cysbod (cys-bod), *to co-exist*. Hysbysu (hys-bys ?), *to inform*.
Cysbwyll (cys-pwyll), *consideration*.

96. **The use of the aspirate h.** Let *h* be used as an auxiliary before the substantive termination *âd*; before the verbal termination *au*, and the finite terminations formed therefrom.

Cyfiawnhâd; cyfiawnhau; cyfiawnhâf; cyfiawnhei.

(a) Nouns and verbs, whose penults end with *c*, *ch*, *p*, *t*, or *th*, cannot admit of the insertion of the aspirate; and it is most frequently omitted after *ff*, (*ph*), *ll*, and *s*.

Nacâd; iachâd; gwlypâu; caniatâu; esmwythâu.

Coffâd; gwellân; nesâu.

(b) A branch of the New school objects to the use of *h* in the above-mentioned circumstances, maintaining that it should not be inserted except

* *Ys* in *ystafell*, *ystwyll*, &c., is not strictly a prefix, but it is convenient to consider it here as such.

when it forms an essential part of a word; as in *anhawdd*, from *an* and *hawdd*. We should, however, consider the difference between a predominant part of a compound word, and a mere termination; and that greater liberty may be taken with the latter than with the former.

(c) The Old school spell *breninoedd*, *cenedloedd*, *dammegion*, *arosiad*, *dangosiad*, and other words, with the aspirate, *brenhinoedd*, *cenhedloedd*, &c. This spelling is based on pronunciation; but as their roots *brenin*, *cenedl*, *dammeg*, &c., are scarcely ever pronounced, and seldom written *brenhin*, *cenhedl*, *dammheg*, &c., and as the *h* forms no part of any of these words, it would certainly be less perplexing and more uniform not to insert it.*

97. The use of the preposition *yn*, *in*. Let *yn* be changed into *ym*, when it is followed by *m* and *mh*.

Ym mynydd yr Olewydd, *in the mount of Olives*.

Ym mhlwyf Llandingad, *in the parish of Llandingad*.

Ym medydd Ioan, *in the baptism of John*.

Ym mhen y mynydd, *on the top of the mountain*.

98. Let *yn* be changed into *yng*, when followed by *ng* and *ngh*.

Yng ngwraidd y pren, *at the root of the tree*.

Yng Nghrist, *in Christ*.

Yng ngwyneb haul, *in the face of the sun*.

Yng ngharchar y swydd, *in the prison of the county*.

(a) The New school write *yn* in all cases: *yn mynydd*, *yn mhen*, *yn ngwyneb*, *yn ngharchar*.

(b) Some join the prep. to the following word: thus,

Ymmhen, *y'mhen* or *ymhen*.

Y'ngwreiddyn or *yngwreiddyn*.

But this mode is liable to an objection, for when *yn* is prefixed to a monosyllable (thus forming a dissyllable) the accent falls on the ultimate, *y'mhen'*, *y'mhawb'*, *y'ngwraidd'*, *y'nghil'*; and thus another exception to the rule of accentuation is added, although it can easily be avoided.

99. The use of *nn*† and *mm*, when mutations of *nt* and *mp*.

* For further remarks, see Tegid's "Reply to the Rev. W. B. Knight's Remarks on Welsh Orthography," p. 31.

† The old Italian dialects change *d* into *n* after a preceding *n*. The Umbrian substitutes regularly *nn* for *nd* in the middle of words. The Oscan has *upsannam* for *operandam*; and Plautus, by birth an Umbrian, says, in the well-known line of the *Miles Gloriosus*,

"Dispennite hominem divorsum et distennite,"

using *dispennite* and *distennite* for *dispendite* and *distendite*. For "to grunt," one finds *grunnire* as frequently as *grundire*. Dr. Aufrecht.

When a suffix with a vowel initial is added to a word ending with *nt* or *mp*, let *t* be changed into *n*, and *p* into *m*.

Meddiannu, <i>to possess</i> ,	from meddiant.
Dannedd, <i>teeth</i>	„ dant.
Tymmor, <i>season</i>	„ tymp = tempore.
Punnoedd, <i>pounds</i>	„ punt.
Tannau, <i>harpstrings</i>	„ tant.
Pummed, <i>fifth</i>	„ pump.

100. **Nc** and **ngc**. Let *nc*, rather than *ngc*, be used in such words as the following:

Llane, <i>young man</i> .	Ieuanc, <i>young</i> .	Caine, <i>branch</i> .	Pwnc, <i>subject</i> .
Sionc, <i>nimble</i> .	Mainc, <i>bench</i> .	Gwanc, <i>voracity</i> .	Llwnnc, <i>gullet</i> .

(a) The Old school write *llange*, *ieuangc*, &c., maintaining that this is the proper orthography, because in pronunciation the sound of *ng*, not *n*, is always heard before *c*. But etymology is in favour of *nc*; and “this is an older form than *ngc*, as well as more consistent with the practice and analogy of languages generally.”

101. **Ff** and **ph**. Let *ff*, rather than *ph*, be used in the following words, and words derived from them.

Corff, <i>body</i> .	Sarff, <i>serpent</i> .	Argraff, <i>impression</i> .
Orgraff, <i>orthography</i> .	Arddygraff, <i>orthography</i> .	Enghraifft, <i>example</i> .

(a) The Old school write *corph*, *sarph*, &c.; and it must be confessed that the arguments adduced in favour of this orthography are very strong.

(b) The word *philosophydd*, philosopher, and its derivatives, and such proper names as *Ephesaid*, *Pharaoh*, *Philemon*, &c., are written with *ph* by both schools. *Aipht*, *Egypt*, and *prophwyd*, *prophet*, are by some few written *Aifft*, *proffwyd*.

102. **Eu** and **au**. The following words, and perhaps some others, are made to end sometimes in *au*, and sometimes in *eu*. But as *au* is a termination of plural substantives, and as etymology and pronunciation are as favourable to the one termination as to the other, it would be better, for the sake of uniformity and distinction, to make them end in *eu*.

Angeu, <i>death</i> .	Dadieu, <i>to argue</i> .	Goleu, <i>light</i> .
Ammheu, <i>doubt</i> .	Dechreu, <i>to begin</i> .	Goreu, <i>best</i> .
Aseu, <i>left</i> .	Deheu, <i>right</i> .	Gynneu, <i>little while ago</i> .
Boreu, <i>morning</i> .	Edeu, <i>thread</i> .	Maddeu, <i>to pardon</i> .
Ceneu, <i>cub</i> .	Eisieu, <i>want</i> .	Peleu, <i>greenfinch</i> .
Cleddeu, <i>sword</i> .	Geleu, <i>leach</i> .	Tencu, <i>lean</i> .
Cynneu, <i>to kindle</i> .	Geneu, <i>mouth</i> .	
Chwareu, <i>to play</i> .	Goddeu, <i>purpose</i> .	

103. **Words of doubtful origin.** When the etymology of a word is not generally agreed upon, it is more proper to spell that word according to the usual mode. "Diosg," *to undress*, is generally written with *di*; but some scholars write it *dyosg*, with *dy*, because, as they think, the word is compounded of *dy* and *osg*.^{*} But as this etymology is not quite clear, (it being as likely that the word comes from *di* and *gnvisgo*, quasi *dirvisg*,) we should write it "diosg" according to usual practice.

104. **Words cognate with those of other languages.** When words are derived from, or cognate with, words of other languages, their orthography, as touching the number of consonants, should in general be the same. Thus, as there are $\mu\mu$ in the Greek word *γραμματική*, from which the Welsh term is derived, '*grammadeg*' should be spelt with *mm*, and not '*gramadeg*,' with a single *m*. Again, as there is only one *t* in *ἐτι*, and *etiam*, with which the Welsh word is cognate, we should write '*eto*' with one *t*, and not '*etto*' with *tt*.

(a) This is only a general rule. Should, however, an adherence to the orthography of another language violate a principle of the Welsh, or disturb a custom of long standing in the mode of spelling some words, the former should in this case submit to the latter; that is, the peculiarity exhibited in the Welsh should be observed and carried out, even though it should differ from that of another language.

* "*Osg*, what tends from or out." Pughe's Dictionary.

PART II.—ETYMOLOGY.



CLASSIFICATION OF WORDS.

105. The parts of speech are: *substantive* (or *noun*) *adjective*, *pronoun*, *verb*, *participle*, *article*, *adverb*, *conjunction*, *preposition*, *interjection*.

SUBSTANTIVES (or NOUNS.)

106. A substantive or noun* is the name of an object, that has or is conceived to have an independent existence.

107. *Proper nouns* are such as denote the names of individual men or other objects. (Arthur, Bala.)

108. *Common nouns* are such as denote any of the individuals that are contained in a class of things. (Dyn, *man*; tref, *town*.)

109. *Abstract nouns* are the names of qualities or properties conceived by the mind as having independent existence. (Cyfiawnder, *justice*; gwynder, *whiteness*.)

110. A *collective noun*, or a *noun of multitude*, is a singular noun, that expresses a collection of many individuals. (Llu, *multitude*; tyrfa, *a crowd*.)

NUMBER OF NOUNS.

111. Nouns have two numbers; the *singular* and the *plural*.

(a) "In a few words we have a *dual number*, formed by prefixing *dau* for the masculine, and *dwy* for the feminine, to such words as are required to be of that number."

Deurudd }
Dwyrudd } *the two cheeks.*
Deudroed, *the two feet.*

Dwyglust, *the two ears.*
Deulin, *the two knees.*
Dwyfron, *the breasts.*

Dwylaw (*the two hands*), though strictly dual, is now used for the plural.

* Although perhaps open to objection, the term *noun* has been employed throughout the present Work as synonymous with *substantive*.

112. **Formation of the plural.** Nouns singular are rendered plural in three ways: some by changing a vowel or vowels (*bardd*, *bard*, *beirdd*): some by adding a syllable (*dyn*, *man*, *dynion*): and some by changing a vowel or vowels and adding a syllable (*mab*, *son*, *meibion*.)

113. *a. By changing a vowel or vowels.* The nouns, which become plural by inflection of vowels, are for the most part monosyllables and dissyllables, with their compounds.

a = ai: *sant*, *saint*, pl. *saint*. So *brân*, *crow*, *gofant*, *smith*.

a = ei: *march*, *horse*, pl. *meirch*. So *sarff*, *serpent*, *arf*, *weapon*, *iarll*, *earl*, *tarw*, *bull*, *carw*, *stag*, *câr*, *car*, *arth*, *bear*, *gast*, *bitch*, *iâr*, *hen*, *gafr*, *goat*, *tywarch*, *clod*.

a = y: *bustach*, *bullock*, pl. *bustych*.

e = i: *draen*, *thorn*, pl. *drain*.* So *maen*, *stone*.

e = y: *cylllell*, *knife*, pl. *cyllyll*. So *Gwyddel*, *Irishman*, *gwden*, *withc*.

o = y: *ffôn*, *staff*, pl. *ffyn*. So *fforch*, *fork*, *ffordd*, *road*, *porth*, *porch*, *torch*, *wreath*, *mollt*, *mutton*, *post*, *post*, *cort*, *cord*, *corff*, *body*, *pont*, *bridge*, *gordd*, *mallet*, *corn*, *horn*.

a, e = e, y: *careg*, *stone*, pl. *ceryg*.† So *aber*, *confluence*, *castell*, *castle*, *gwaell*, *knitting needle*, *asgell*, *wing*, *astell*, *board*, *padell*, *pan*, *angel*, *angel*, *gradell*, *griddle*, *mantell*, *mantle*, *maneg*, *glove*, *llawes*, *sleeve*, *bachgen*, *boy*, *llanerch*, *glade*, *caseg*, *mare*.

a, a = e, i: *dafad*, *sheep*, pl. *defaid*.

a, a = e, y: *aradr*, *plough*, pl. *erydr*. So *afall*, *apple-tree*, *paladr*, *ray*, *alarch*, *swan*, *taradr*, *auger*, *myharan*, *wether*.

a, w = e, y: *asgwrn*, *bone*, pl. *esgryn*.

114. The plural number of the following nouns and their compounds is formed irregularly.

Ci, *dog*, pl. *cwn*. *Ty*, *house*, pl. *tai*. *Troed*, *foot*, pl. *traed*.

Croen, *skin*, p. *crwyn*. *Oen*, *lamb*, pl. *wyn*. *Gŵr*, *man*, pl. *gwŷr*.

Milgi, *greyhound*, pl. *milgwn*. *Arfdy*, *armoury*, pl. *arfdai*.

115. Very many derivative and compound nouns are made plural by changing *a* of the ultimate into *ai*: as,

Offeiriad, *priest*, pl. *offeiriad*. *Canwriad*, *centurion*, pl. *canwriaid*.

Llygad, *eye*, pl. *llygaid*. *Llyffant*, *frog*, pl. *llyffaint*.

* It makes no difference whether we say that (*e.g.*) in the word *draen*, *ae* is changed into *ai*, or that *e* is changed into *i*, in the formation of the pl.

† Some write *cerig*, *gweill*, *llewis*; but it is more uniform to write *ceryg*, *gweyll*, *llewys*.

116. *β. By adding a syllable.* The following is a list of the plural terminations of substantives: *ain* (or *en*), *aint*, *au* and *iau*, *awr*, *ed* (or *aid*), *edd*, *i*, *iaid*, *on* and *ion*, *od*, *oedd*, *ydd*, *yr*.

Pèn, *head*, pl. *penau*.

Llw, *oath*, pl. *llwon*.

Esgid, *shoe*, pl. *esgidiau*.

Dŷn, *man*, pl. *dynion*.

Bŷs, *finger*, pl. *bysedd*.

Mynydd, *mountain*, *mynyddoedd*.

(a) *Au* and *iau*, *on* and *ion*, are the terminations most frequently in use. For *iau* and *ion* Southwallians say *au* and *on*.

(b) The terminations *awr* and *yr* are but seldom met with. *Gwaew*, *spear*, pl. *gwaewawr*. *Brawd*, *brother*, pl. *brodyr*.

(c) *Od* is most frequently applied to irrational animals: *as*, *llygod*, *mice*, *ysgyfarnogod*, *hares*, *cwningod*, *rabbits*, *ednod*, *birds*, *llwynogod*, *foxes*, *bychod*, *bucks*, *buwehod*, *cows*, *pysgod*, *fish*, *draenogod*, *hedgehogs*, *hyrddod*, *rams*.

(d) Some writers use *aid* for *ed* (*pryfaid*, worms); and *en* for *ain*, (*ychen*, oxen, *Rhydychen*, Oxford.) With *ain* or *en* cf. Eng. *en* in oxen, cowen = kine.

117. *Ach* and *os* are added to plurals, *ach* denoting *contempt* or *wretchedness*, and *os*, *affection* or *tenderness*.

“Dowch, y pydron *ddynionach*,
Yng nghŷd, feirw byd, fawr a bach.” *Gor. Owen*.

118. *γ. By changing a vowel or vowels, and adding a syllable.*

a = *e*: *nant*, *brook*, pl. *nentydd*.

a = *ei*: *mâb*, *son*, pl. *meibion*.

ae = *ei* and *eu*: *saer*, *carpenter*, pl. *soiri*; *maes*, *field*, pl. *meusydd*.

ai = *ei*: *gair*, *word*, pl. *geiriau*; *nai*, *nephew*, pl. *neiaint*.

au = *eu*: *paun*, *peacock*, pl. *peunod*; *ffau*, *cave*, pl. *ffeau*.

aw = *o*: *awr*, *hour*, pl. *oriau*; *brawd*, *brother*, pl. *brodyr*.

w = *y*: *bwrdd*, *table*, pl. *byrddau*; *llwdn*, *young of an animal*, *llydnod*.

w, *w* = *y*, *y*: *cwmmlwl*, *cloud*, pl. *cymmylau*.

(a) *Ai* and *ei* are in the following words changed into *a*.

Gwraig, *woman*, pl. *gwragedd*.

Deigr, *tear*, pl. *dagrau*.

Lleidr, *thief*, pl. *lladron*.

Neidr, *snake*, pl. *nadroedd* and *nadredd*.

(b) *Aw* is sometimes changed into *ow* and *ew*. See § 22, (α).

Cawg, *basin*, pl. *cowgiau*.

Cawr, *giant*, pl. *cewri*.

(c) *E* in a very few instances becomes *y*: as,

Angel, *angel*, pl. *angylion*.

Blynedd, *year*, pl. *blynnyddau*.

119. Many nouns have two plural forms, and some few even three.

a) One formed by vowel-inflections, and another by simply adding a termination.

Pont, <i>bridge</i> ,	pl. pynt <i>or</i> pontydd.
Aber, <i>confluence</i> ,	pl. ebyr <i>or</i> aberoedd.
Alarch, <i>swan</i> ,	pl. elych <i>or</i> alarchod.
Astell, <i>board</i> ,	pl. estyll <i>or</i> astellod.
Castell, <i>castle</i> ,	pl. cestyll <i>or</i> castelli.
Padell, <i>pan</i> ,	pl. pedyll <i>or</i> padelli.

b) One formed by vowel-inflections, and another by vowel-inflections and adding a termination.

Sant, <i>saint</i> ,	pl. saint <i>or</i> seintiau.
Bardd, <i>bard</i> ,	pl. beirdd <i>or</i> beirddion.
Ty, <i>house</i> ,	pl. tai <i>or</i> teiau.
Cloch, <i>bell</i> ,	pl. clych <i>or</i> clychau.
Maen, <i>stone</i> ,	pl. main <i>or</i> meini.
Gafr, <i>goat</i> , makes in	pl. geifr, gafrod, <i>or</i> geifrod.

c) By taking different terminations. The terminations, mentioned under § 116, were formerly indifferently applied to almost all nouns; but popular custom has confined this liberty, admitting of but one termination to the majority of Welsh words. Yet there are many nouns which still have two, and some even three different plural terminations.

Mynydd, <i>mountain</i> ,	pl. mynyddoedd <i>or</i> mynyddau.
Gordderch, <i>concubine</i> ,	pl. gordderchion <i>or</i> gordderchadon.
Tref, <i>town</i> ,	pl. trefi, <i>or</i> trefydd.
Eglwys, <i>church</i> ,	pl. eglwysi <i>or</i> eglwysydd.
Plwyf, <i>parish</i> ,	pl. plwyfi <i>or</i> plwyfydd.
Blynedd, <i>year</i> ,	pl. blynyddoedd <i>or</i> blynyddau.
Llythyr, <i>letter</i> ,	pl. llythyrau (N.W.) llythyron (S.W.)
Meistr, <i>master</i> ,	pl. meistri, meistriaid, <i>or</i> meistradoedd.

d) By adding one pl. termination to another. The instances in which this occurs are very few.

Llo, <i>calf</i> ,	pl. lloi <i>or</i> lloiau.
Neges, <i>message</i> ,	pl. negesau <i>or</i> negeseuau.

120. In limiting the use of the terminations, care should have been taken to restrict each to a particular class of substantives; but we find that this was very much neglected. Hence the impossibility of laying down any definite rules for their formation. The following are laid down as *general rules*.

121. Derivatives ending in *der*, *did*, *dod*, *edd*, *yd*, *aeth*, *as*, *es*, are rendered plural by adding *au*.

Cyfiawnder, <i>justice</i> , cyfiawnderau.	Bywyd, <i>life</i> , bywydau.
Gwendid, <i>weakness</i> , gwendidau.	Marwolaeth, <i>death</i> , marwolaethau.
Awdurdod, <i>authority</i> , awdurdodau.	Priodas, <i>marriage</i> , priodasau.
Gwaeledd, <i>lowliness</i> , gwaeleddau.	Brenines, <i>queen</i> , breninesau.

(a) Substantives ending in *ant* and *iant* often change *t* into *n*, and add *au*: *meddiant*, *possession*, pl. *meddiannau*.

122. Derivatives ending with the following suffixes are too promiscuous to be classified.

ach (*reproach*) pl. -od.

Bwbach, *bugbear*, bwbachod. Gwrâch, *hag*, gwrachod.

ad and **iad**, pl. -au, -on, **aid** and **iaid**. When this suffix denotes a *verbal noun*, it is made plural by adding *au*: when signifying a *person*, it becomes pl. by changing *a* into *ai*, or sometimes by the addition of *on*.

Toriad, *cutting*, toriadau. Ceidwad, *keeper*, ceidwaid.
Offeiriad, *priest*, offeiriad, or offeiriadon.

adur and **ur**, pl. -iaid, -on, -iau. When the word denotes a *person*, the pl. termination is -*iaid*: when it denotes a *thing* or *instrument*, the termination is -*on*, if the noun is mas.; -*iau*, if feminine.*

Pechadur, *sinner*, pechaduriaid.
Geiriadur, *m., dictionary*, geiriaduron.
Pladur, *f., scythe*, pladuriau.
Gwniadur, *thimble*, pl. gwniaduriau, is fem. in s.w., but mas. in n.w.

ai, pl. **eion**.

Gwestai, *guest*, gwesteion. Cardotai, *beggar*, cardoteion.

aid, pl. **eidiau**.

Cwpanaid, *cupful*, cwpaneidiau. Dyrnaid, *handful*, dyrneidiau.

an, (*person*) pl. -od: (*instrument*) pl. -au.

Lleban, *clown*, llebanod. Cryman, *sickle*, crymanau.

awd, pl. **odau**, **odiau**, **odion**.

Traethawd, *treatise*, traethodau. Esgusawd, *excuse*, esgusodion.

awdr, pl. **odron**.

Pryniawdr, *redeemer*, pryniodron.

* Evans' "Llythraeth," § 166.

awg, pl. *ogion*.

Marchawg, horseman, marchogion. Swyddawg, officer, swyddogion.

awr, pl. *orion*.

Cantawr, singer, cantorion. Drysawr, doorkeeper, drysorion.

ed, pl. *-au, -ion*.

Adduned, vow, addunedau. Colled, loss, colledion.

ell, pl. *yll, -au, -i*.

Cyllell, knife, cyllyll.

Troell, wheel, troellau.

Padell, pan, pedyll.

Pothell, blister, pothelli.

fa, pl. *feydd, -oedd*, (sometimes *-au* and *-on*.)

Porfa, pasture, porfeydd. Llogfa, burning, llogfeydd.

Gwasgfa, fainting fit, gwasgfeydd or gwasgfäon, (coll. gwasgfeuon.)

Cynnulleidfa, congregation, cynnulleidfäoedd.

in, (*instrument, &c.*) pl. *-au, -iau*. **in**, *person*, is irregular.

Melin, mill, melinau.

Brenin, king, breninoedd.

Cribin, rake, cribiniau.

Dewin, wizard, dewiniaid.

od (=awd) pl. *-au, -iau, -ion*.

Ffonod, stroke with a stick, ffonodiau.

odr (=awdr) pl. *-on*.

Pwysodr, rammer, pwysodron.

og (=awg) pl. *-ion*.

Marchog, horseman, marchogion. Swyddog, officer, swyddogion.

or (=awr) pl. *-ion*.

Cantor, singer, cantorion. Drysor, doorkeeper, drysorion.

ur (=adur, q. v.)

ydd, pl. *-ion*.

Ysgrifenydd, writer, ysgrifenyddion.

yr, pl. *-au, -iau, -on*.

Ysgrhythyr, scripture, ysgrhythyrau. Gwerchyr, cover, gwerchyriau.

Cwlltyr, coulter, cwlltyrau.

Canwyllyr, chandelier, canwyllyron.

(a) *Awd* and *od*; *awdr* and *odr*; *awg* and *og*; *awr* and *or*, are respectively different forms of the same terminations.

123. Nouns ending in *nc* are made pl. by adding *iau*.

Llanc, youth, llanciau.

Cainc, branch, ceinciau.

Ystanc, stank, ystanciau.

Pwnc, subject, pynciau.

Mainc, bench, meinciau.

Pranc, prank, pranciau.

(a) But *crafanc*, claw, is made pl. by changing *nc* into *ng*, and adding *au*. *Crafanc*, pl. *crafangau*.

124. Many nouns are made pl. by adding the dissyllabic termination *adau* or *iadau*; i. e. they borrow the form of the verbal nouns derived from them, and add the pl. suffix *au*. Thus *coll*, failing, makes in the pl. *colliadau*, borrowing the verbal noun *colliad*.

Serch, <i>affection</i> , serchiadau.	Dinystr, <i>destruction</i> , dinystriadau.
Cân, <i>song</i> , canladau.	Crwydr, <i>wandering</i> , crwydradau.
Addurn, <i>ornament</i> , addurniadau.	

125. Some few nouns are made pl. by adding the pl. suffix to the *adjectives* of the singular noun.

Credadyn, <i>believer</i> , pl. credinwyr,	fr. credin, <i>believing</i> .
Cristion, <i>christian</i> , pl. cristionogion,	fr. cristionog, <i>christian</i> .
Grâs, <i>grace</i> , pl. grasusau,	fr. grasus, <i>gracious</i> .
Gwlaw, <i>rain</i> , pl. gwlawogydd,	fr. gwlawog, <i>rainy</i> .
Llif, <i>flood</i> , pl. llifogydd,	fr. llifog, <i>streaming</i> .

126. Some nouns borrow the pl. of *another form of the same nouns*.

Cam, <i>step</i> , pl. camrau,	fr. camre.
Cydymaith,* <i>companion</i> , pl. cymdeithion,	fr. cymdaith.
Chwaer, <i>sister</i> , pl. chwiorydd,	fr. chwior.
Daiargryn, <i>earthquake</i> , pl. daiargrynfâau,	fr. daiargrynfâ.
Dychryn, <i>terror</i> , pl. dychrynfeydd,	fr. dychrynfâ.
Nos, <i>night</i> , pl. nosweithiau,	fr. noswaith.
Pared, <i>partition</i> , pl. parwydydd,	fr. parwyd.
Rheg, <i>curse</i> , pl. rhegfeydd,	fr. rhegfâ.

(a) The pl. of *dynes*, woman, is *gwragedd*, from *gwraig*, woman.

127. Some nouns, ending in *yn* and *en*, throw off these terminations when the pl. termination is added.

Merlyn, <i>pony</i> , pl. merlod.	Merlen, <i>pony</i> , pl. merlod.	[usion.
Planigyn, <i>plant</i> , pl. planigion.	Anwybodusyn, <i>ignoramus</i> , pl. anwybod-	
Meddwyn, <i>drunkard</i> , pl. meddwon.		

128. Some nouns have different pl. terminations to indicate their different acceptations.

* Cydymaith = *cydymdaith*. "Yr wyf yn *cydymddaith* â'r rhai a garant ddysgeidiaeth." Marchog Crwydrad.

Brôn,	<i>breast, pap,</i>	pl. bronau.
„	<i>slope of a hill,</i>	pl. bronydd.
Canon,	<i>canon, dignitary,</i>	pl. canonïaid.
„	<i>rule, law,</i>	pl. canonau.
Cynghor,	<i>counsel, advice,</i>	pl. cynghorion.
„	<i>council,</i>	pl. cynghorau.
Person,	<i>person,</i>	pl. personau.
„	<i>parson, clergyman,</i>	pl. personïaid.
Ysbryd,	<i>spirit,</i>	pl. ysbrydoedd or ysbrydion.
„	<i>ghost, apparition,</i>	pl. ysbrydion.
„	<i>disposition of the mind,</i>	pl. ysbrydoedd or ysbrydau.
Llwyth,	<i>tribe,</i>	pl. llwythau.
„	<i>load,</i>	pl. llwythi.

129. Some nouns are used in the plural number only.

Ymysgaroedd, *bowels.* Gwartheg, *cattle.*

(a) The pl. *nefoedd*, heavens, is continually used for the sing. *nef*, heaven.
 “Y *nefoedd wen*,” *the blessed heaven.*

130. The pl. of **compound nouns**, formed regularly (see § 77), is the same as the plural of the *last* of their component parts. Thus

Swynwr,	<i>magician,</i>	pl. swynwyr,	like gwr, pl. gwyr.
Amherawdwr,	<i>emperor,</i>	pl. amherawdwyr,	„ „ „
Gweithiwr,	<i>workman,</i>	pl. gweithwyr, note (a)	„ „ „
Llaethwraig,	<i>dairymaid,</i>	pl. llaethwragedd,	like gwraig, pl. gwragedd.
Cyrchfan,	<i>resort,</i>	pl. cyrchfanau,	„ mân, pl. manau.
Trigle,	<i>dwelling place,</i>	pl. trigleoedd,	„ lle, pl. lleoedd.
Tafarndy,	<i>public-house,</i>	pl. tafarndai,	„ ty, pl. tai.

(a) Observe that *i* in the suffix *iwr* is dropped when the word is made plural,—*gweithiwr*, pl. *gweithwyr*, not *gweithiowyrr*. But if *i* in *iwr* is a part of the preceding word, and not of the termination, the plural is *iwyr*. *Gweddiwr* (fr. *gweddi*) *one who prays*, pl. *gweddiwyr*. *Ysbiwr* (fr. *ysbïo*) *a spy*, pl. *ysbiwyr*.

131. **Plural number wanted.** Many substantives want the pl. number: such as,

α. *Abstract nouns* ending in *âd* and *hâd*, *deb*, *did* (*tid*, *tyd*) *dra* (*tra*) *i*, *ioni*, *ineb*, *ni*, *rwydd*, *wch*, *wg*, *yd*, *ydd*.

Ffyddlondeb,	<i>faithfulness.</i>	Atgasrwydd,	<i>hatefulness.</i>
Tyndra,	<i>tightness.</i>	Tristwch,	<i>sadness.</i>

β. Most of the *diminutive nouns*.

Dynyn,	<i>little man.</i>	Oenig,	<i>little ewe-lamb.</i>
--------	--------------------	--------	-------------------------

γ. Nouns denoting *substance, mass*, &c.

Aur, <i>gold</i> .	Arian, <i>silver</i> .	Prês, <i>brass</i> .	Efydd, <i>copper</i> .
Baw, <i>dirt</i> .	Gwaed, <i>blood</i> .	Bara, <i>bread</i> .	Ymenyn, <i>butter</i> .
Llaeth, <i>milk</i> .	Mêl, <i>honey</i> .	Caws, <i>cheese</i> .	Pridd, <i>soil</i> .

(a) But such words as *yd*, corn; *haidd*, barley, &c., which may be termed nouns aggregate, take a plural termination when various collections of the same are designed to be expressed. *Yd*, corn; *ydau*, various sorts of corn.

132. Formation of the singular from the plural. Some nouns of the singular number are formed from the plural by suffixing *yn* for the *mas.*, and *en* for the *fem.* gender.

Caws, cosyn, <i>a cheese</i> .	Yd, yden, <i>a grain of corn</i> .
Adar, aderyn, <i>a bird</i> .	Mes, mesen, <i>an acorn</i> .
Plant, plentyn, <i>a child</i> .	Derw, derwen, <i>an oak</i> .
Gwybed, gwybedyn, <i>a fly</i> .	Gwenyn, gwenynen, <i>a bee</i> .
Gwair, gweiryn, <i>a blade of hay</i> .	Plu, pluen, <i>a feather</i> .

Moron, moronyn or moryn, *a carrot*.

Eirin, eirinen or eiren, *a plum*.

Rhwynn, rhwynnen or rhwnen, *a pear*.

(a) *Cyll* makes *collen*, hazel-tree, and *yn* makes *onen*, ash-tree.

GENDER OF NOUNS.

133. Nouns are either of the *masculine* or *feminine* gender. The Welsh language does not recognise what is called the "*neuter gender*;" hence all inanimate things, which are classed as neuter in English, are considered either as masculine or feminine in our language; and 'this is done by conceiving their properties to bear some resemblance to the qualities that are characteristic of sex in animated beings.'

(a) "Thus the *masculine* gender is given to substantives, which are conspicuous for the attributes of energy, and of acting upon and communicating to others. To such substantives as seem to denote the passive attributes of bearing, containing or bringing forth, we give the *feminine* gender."—Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 30.

134. Some nouns are of *common gender*; that is, masculine and feminine. Cyfylder, *second cousin*; dyn, *person, male or female*; dynan, *little person, male or female*. Dyn mwy. Dyn fwy. Dynan fechan fach. [Cf. ὁ ἡ θεός; hic et hæc parens.] Some are *epicene*. Plentyn, *child*, baban, *babe*, rhiant, *parent*, are *mas.*, whether the male or female is spoken of: colomen, *dove*, cwningen, *rabbit*, ysgyfarnog, *hare*, are

fem., whether the male or female is intended. (See § 137, δ.) [Cf. ὁ ἀετός, το βρεφός; hic passer, hæc aquila.]

135. The Welsh language, by not recognising a *neuter* gender, expressive of inanimate objects, presents to the student a difficulty not to be surmounted in many cases but by observation and memory.

136. **Animate objects.** "With respect to those which are the names of males and females no difficulty exists; they are either male or female, in accordance with their signification."*

Dyn, *man*, tarw, *bull*, mas. Dynes, *woman*, buwch, *cow*, fem.

137. The gender of such nouns is distinguished,

α. *By different words.*

<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Adiad, <i>drake</i> .	Hwyaden, <i>duck</i> .
Bachgen, <i>boy</i> .	Geneth, <i>girl</i> .
Baedd, <i>boar</i> .	Hwch, <i>sow</i> .
Brawd, <i>brother</i> .	Chwaer, <i>sister</i> .
Bustach, or eidion, <i>bullock</i> .	Anner, <i>heifer</i> .
Carw, hydd, <i>stag</i> .	Ewig, <i>hind</i> .
Cefnder, <i>cousin</i> .	Cyfnither, <i>cousin</i> .
Ceffyl, <i>horse</i> .	Caseg, <i>mare</i> .
Celliog, <i>cock</i> .	Iar, <i>hen</i> .
Ci, <i>dog</i> .	Gast (for cies), <i>bitch</i> .
Chwegrwn, <i>father-in-law</i> .	Chwegr, <i>mother-in-law</i> .
Daw, <i>son-in-law</i> .	Gwaudd, <i>daughter-in-law</i> .
Ewythr, <i>uncle</i> .	Modryb, <i>aunt</i> .
Gwas, <i>man-servant</i> .	Morwyn, <i>maid-servant</i> .
Gwr, <i>husband</i> .	Gwraig, <i>wife</i> .
Hesbwrn, <i>hoggerel</i> .	Hesbin, <i>a young ewe</i> .
Hwrdd, <i>ram</i> .	Dafad, <i>sheep</i> .
Mab, <i>son</i> .	Merch, <i>daughter</i> .
Nai, <i>nephew</i> .	Nith, <i>niece</i> .
Tad, <i>father</i> .	Mam, <i>mother</i> .
Taid, N. W. }	Nain, }
Tad cu, S. W. } <i>grandfather</i> .	Mam gu, } <i>grandmother</i> .
Tad da, P. }	Mam dda, }
Tarw, <i>bull</i> .	Buwch, <i>cow</i> .

(a) The compounds of the above are distinguished in the same manner.

Priodfab, <i>bridgroom</i> .	Priodferch, <i>bride</i> .
Golchwr, <i>washer</i> .	Golchwraig, <i>washerwoman</i> .
Milgi, <i>a greyhound</i> .	Miliast and Milgast, <i>a greyhound bitch</i> .

β. *By adding the termination es to the masculine gender.*

* Spurrell's Grammar, p. 41.

Mas.
 Arglwydd, *lord*.
 Mynach, *monk*.
 Dyn, *man*.
 Brenin, *king*.
 Tywysog, *prince*.

Fem.
 Arglwyddes, *lady*.
 Mynaches, *nun*.
 Dynes, *woman*.
 Brenines, *queen*.
 Tywysoges, *princess*.

(a) In a few instances the fem. is formed by adding *es* to the plural number of the masculine.

Mas.
 Lleidr, *thief*, pl. lladron.
 Sais, *Englishman*, pl. Seison.

Fem.
 Lladrones, *female thief*.
 Seisones, *Englishwoman*.

γ. *By changing the termination yn into en.*

Asyn, *he-ass*.
 Hogyn, *young lad*.
 Coegyn, *saucy fellow*.
 Merlyn, *pony*.

Asen, *she-ass*.
 Hogen, *young girl*.
 Coegen, *saucy girl*.
 Merlen, *pony*.

(a) Some few are made feminine by changing *w* of the root into *o*, as well as *yn* into *en*.

Cwrtyn, *little boy*. Croten, *little girl*.

Cyn, fem. *cen*; *ryn*, fem. *ren*, occur in a few words.

Ffwlcyn, *silly fellow*.
 Llipryn, *fribble*.

Ffolcen, *silly woman*.
 Llipren, *fribble*.

δ. *By placing the word gwrryw or benyw after the object spoken of.* But the *mas.* gender is sometimes formed from the *fem.* by prefixing the word *ceiliog*, a cock, or *bwch*, a buck.

Eryr gwrryw, *a he-eagle*.
 Colomen wrryw, *a he-dove*.
 Ceiliogwydd, *a gander*, from gwydd, *a goose*.
 Bwch gafr, *a he-goat*, from gafr, *a goat*.

Eryr benyw, *a she-eagle*.
 Colomen fenyw, *a she-dove*.

(a) The nouns, to which *gwrryw* and *benyw* are added, are, some masculine, and some feminine; and we must know the gender before we can correctly apply these words. If the noun is *mas.*, *gwrryw* and *benyw* will take the *radical*; if *fem.*, they will be changed into the *middle* sound.

Eryr gwrryw } *mas.*
 Eryr benyw }

Colomen wrryw } *fem.*
 Colomen fenyw }

138. With regard to the names of **inanimate objects**, the following rules may be laid down; but they extend to certain classes only, and must be regarded merely as *general rules*.

139. α. **Primitive nouns** have their gender often denoted by their **vowels**.

a) Nouns having **w** or **y** as their final vowel are *masculine*.

Pŵn, <i>a pack.</i>	Twrch, <i>a hog.</i>	IIŷd, <i>length.</i>	Prŷd, <i>appearance.</i>
Dwrn, <i>a fist.</i>	Dwfr, <i>water.</i>	Bŷd, <i>world.</i>	Bryn, <i>a bank.</i>
Cŵr, <i>a corner.</i>	Cŵd, <i>a bag.</i>	Clwyf, <i>disease.</i>	Bŵyd, <i>food.</i>

b) Nouns having **o** or **e** for their final vowel are of the *feminine* gender.

Tòn, <i>a wave.</i>	Torch, <i>a chain.</i>	Gwên, <i>a smile.</i>	Sêdd, <i>a seat.</i>
Bròn, <i>a breast.</i>	Fforch, <i>a fork.</i>	Gên, <i>a chin.</i>	Gwlêdd, <i>a banquet.</i>
Ffôn, <i>a staff.</i>	Côd, <i>a bag.</i>	Llêf, <i>a cry.</i>	Nêf, <i>heaven.</i>

(a) The remaining vowels are not susceptible of any kind of classification, being used indifferently in masculines or feminines.

140. β . **Compound nouns**, formed regularly, have their gender assigned to them in accordance with the gender of the **last** of their component parts.

Elusendy (elusen-ty) <i>almshouse</i> , mas.	} like <i>ty</i> , <i>house</i> , mas.
Arfŷly (arf-ty) <i>armoury</i> , mas.	
Ceuffordd (cau-ffordd) <i>tunnel</i> , fem.	} like <i>ffordd</i> , <i>road</i> , fem.
Croesffordd (croes-ffordd) <i>cross-road</i> , fem.	

(a) But when compounds are formed contrary to the rule (§ 77, b), that is, when the adjective or the genitive is placed last, the gender of the compound word depends on that of the *first* of its component parts. Thus, *mammaeth*, *nurse*, *treftad*, *patrimony*, *Llanfor* (name of a village), *Caerfyrddin*, *Cardmarthen*, are *feminine*, because *mam*, *tref*, *llan*, *caer*, are *feminine*.

141. γ . **Derivative nouns** have their gender indicated by their respective terminations.

142. Derivative nouns with the following suffixes are generally of the **masculine** gender.

a) The following occur most frequently: **âd**, **lâd**; **âd**, **hâd**; **ant**, **aint**, **lant**; **deb**; **der** (**ter**); **did**, (**tid**); **dyd** (**tyd**); **dod** (**dawd**); **dra** (**tra**); **edd**; **i**; **ineb**; **ioni**; **ni**; **rwydd**; **ur**, **adur**; **wch**; **ydd**; **yn**. (*Toriad*, *cyfiawnhâd*, *maddeuant*, *purdeb*, *cyfiawnder*, *gwendid*, *dyndod*, *cyfleusdra*, *puredd*, *brynti*, *doethineb*, *daioni*, *oerni*, *perffeithrwydd*, *henadur*, *tristwch*, *darllenydd*, *bachgenyn*.)

(b) These are less common: *awdr*, (*odr*); *cyn*; *eu* (or *au*); *el*; *id*, (*yd*); *ing*; *ol*; *on*; (or *awr*); *w*; *wg*; *wy*; *yf*; *yll*; *yr*. (*Iachawdr*, *brynceu*, *angeu*, *cantel*, *rhyddid*, *gwyning*, *trosol*, *gwyddou*, *cantor*, *tarw*, *tywylwg*, *cynnorthwy*, *peryf*, *brithyll*, *canwyllyr*.)

143. Derivative nouns ending with the following terminations are generally **feminine**.

a) The following occur most frequently: **aeth, laeth; aeg, eg; as; ed; ell; en; es; fa; ig** (diminutive.) (Gwardigaeth, Cymraeg, cymdeithas, colled, bwyell, mesen, dynes, porfa, ynysig.)

b) The following are less common: **ain; cen; eb; iar; red.** (Celain, ffolcen, deiseb, toniar, gweithred.)

144. Ach, in, and og. *Ach*, when it denotes a *person* is *masculine*; in other circumstances it is *feminine*.

Mas. Corach, <i>pigmy</i> .	Bwbach, <i>bugbear</i> .
Celach, <i>fribble</i> .	Buach, <i>clown</i> .

(a) Gwrâch, a *hag*, is *feminine*.

Fem. Cyfeillach, <i>friendship</i> .	Ceintach, <i>brawl</i> .
Cyfrinach, <i>secret</i> .	Cyfeddach, <i>carousal</i> .

In, when it denotes a *person*, is *masculine*; when it denotes an *instrument*, &c., it is *feminine*.

Mas. Brenin, <i>king</i> .	Dewin, <i>wizard</i> .
Fem. Melin, <i>mill</i> .	Cribin, <i>rake</i> .

Og (or *avg*) is sometimes *masculine*, and sometimes *feminine*. When it is a *diminutive* suffix, it is always *feminine*.

Mas. Marchog, <i>horseman</i> .	Swyddog, <i>officer</i> .
Fem. Ffolog, <i>silly woman</i> .	Clustog, <i>pillow</i> .
Dimin. Pwtog, a <i>short little woman</i> .	

145. Aid, an, and od. The gender of derivative nouns ending with *aid*, *an*, and *od* (or *awd*) is *masculine* or *feminine*, according to the gender of the word to which the termination is suffixed.

Aid.

Mas. Dyrnaid, <i>handful</i> ,	fr. dwrn, <i>m., fist</i> .
Celyrnaid, <i>tubful</i> ,	fr. celwrn, <i>m., tub</i> .
Fem. Llwyaid, <i>spoonful</i> ,	fr. llwy, <i>f., spoon</i> .
Ffedogaid, <i>apronful</i> ,	fr. ffedog, <i>f., apron</i> .

An.

Mas. Maban, <i>babe</i> ,	fr. mab, <i>m., son</i> .
Llyfran, <i>little book</i> ,	fr. llyfr, <i>m., book</i> .
Fem. Trefan, <i>a small town</i> ,	fr. tref, <i>f. a town</i> .

(a) *An* is of *common* gender, if the word to which it is suffixed is *common*. *Dynan*, a little person, male or female; fr. *dyn*, a man or a woman.

Od (or **awd**), a thing done.

Mas. Cleddyfod, <i>the stroke of a sword</i> ,	fr. cleddyf, <i>m., sword</i> .
Dyrnod, <i>a blow given with the fist</i> ,	fr. dwrn, <i>m., fist</i> .
Fem. Cernod, <i>a blow on the cheek</i> ,	fr. cern, <i>f. side of the head</i> .
Palfod, <i>a blow with the palm of the hand</i> ,	fr. palf, <i>f., palm</i> .

(a) When it implies a *verbal noun* (=ad or iad) it is *mas.* Darllen-awd, a *reading.* Gyrawd, a *driving.*

146. **Ai**, denoting animate objects, is generally of *common gender.*

Telynai, *n. c.*, *harpist.* Magai, *n. c.*, *one who rears.*

(a) When implying a *thing* or *instrument*, it is *mas.* Awyrbwysai, *barometer.* Exc. buddai, *f.*, *churn.*

147. **Proper names** of objects are of the same gender as the common nouns which denote the same objects. Thus the common nouns *gwlad*, country, *dinas*, city, *tref*, town, *llan*, village, *afon*, river, *llythyren*, letter, *coeden*, tree, are *feminine*: hence the proper names of *countries*, *cities*, *towns*, *villages*, *rivers*, *letters*, and *trees*, are of the *feminine gender.*

The common nouns *mis*, month, *dydd*, day, are *masculine*: hence the proper names of *months* and *days* are *masculine.*

148. The infinitive mood of verbs, employed substantively, is *masculine.*

Gweithio da, *good working.* Dyrnu buan, *quick thrashing.*

149. Many words, which are masculine in one district are used as feminine in another. For instance, the word *troed*, a foot, is masculine in the dialect of North Wales, as *y troed hwn*; but in South Wales it is of the feminine gender, as *y droed hon*. The words *hanes*, *cyfloy*, *clôd*, *clorian*, *gâr*, *gwniadur*, *ciniau*, *mynydd*, are *mas.* in N. W., but *fem.* in S. W. *Cwpan*, *pennill*, *pontbren*, *canwyllbren*, *canrif*, *clust*, are *fem.* in N. W., and *mas.* in S. W.

150. The same words are often *mas.* or *fem.*, as in English, in accordance with the idea they convey. For example, the word *doethineb*, *wisdom*, has the construction of a masculine noun in ordinary discourse; but when it is, by a figure of speech, considered as a person or agent, it takes the construction of a noun of the feminine gender.

"*Doethineb* a adeiladodd *ei thy*, *hi* a naddodd *ei saith golofn.* *Hi* a laddodd *ei hanifeiliaid*; *hi* a gymmysgodd *ei gwin*, ac a huliodd *ei bwrdd.*" (Prov. ix. 1, 2.)

151. **Gambold's rule.** The following rule, intended for discovering the gender of nouns beginning with the mutable consonants, may prove useful to such as are well acquainted

with the language, but who may be uncertain as to the gender of many nouns, except when they are in construction with other words. "Any word [of the singular number] beginning with any of the mutable consonants, except *ll* and *rh*,* if upon putting *y* in apposition before it, its initial consonant does naturally change into its *light* [or *middle*] sound; as, *melin*, *y felin*; *caseg*, *y gaseg*; such words are infallibly of the *feminine* gender. But if the initial consonant change not thereupon, we may justly conclude such words to be of the *masculine* gender; as, *brethyn*, *y brethyn*; *march*, *y march*."†

CASES OF NOUNS.

152. In Welsh, nouns have no endings to denote their various relations to other notions, as they have in Greek and Latin; but, as in English, their relation is shown by means of prepositions. (Aethym *o dŷ Ioan i dŷ Arthur*.) It is, however, convenient to adopt the terms *nominative case*, *possessive* (or *genitive*), *objective* (or *accusative*), and *vocative*.

ADJECTIVES.

153. **Primitive adjectives.** "The adjectives of the primitive form consist of elementary words, without the additions of the common terminations, which characterise the derivatives."‡ (Iawn, da, crwn.)

154. **Compound adjectives** are such as are formed by the union of two or more of the primitives, or of a prefix and a primitive. (Glewdaer, gorwyp.)

155. "The **derivative adjectives** are other words becoming such, by the addition of certain characteristic terminations."§ (Goludog, duwiol, gwaedlyd.)

TERMINATIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

156. The following terminations, which will be exemplified hereafter, are those which occur most frequently in the composition of derivative adjectives. *Adwy*, *aid*, *aidd*, *ain*, *awr*, *ed* (*fed*), *edig*, *farwr*, *gar*, *ig*, *llawn* (*lawn*), *in*, *llyd* (*lyd*), *og* (*awg*), *ol* (*awl*), and *us*.

* Feminine nouns sing. retain the radical sound after *ll* and *rh*; as, *y llong*; *y rhan*. † Gambold's Grammar, p. 24.

‡ Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 54. § Ibid, p. 54.

GENDER OF ADJECTIVES.

157. Adjectives are of the *masculine*, *feminine*, or *common gender*.

158. In Welsh, 'the discrimination of gender is partial with respect to primitive adjectives, and the derivatives (except two or three) are exempt from it.'

(a) This is said with respect to gender formed by inflection of *vowels*, not to gender indicated by a change of the *initial consonant*.

159. **Inflection of vowels.** The *fem.* gender is formed from the masculine, a) by changing **w** into **o**; b) by changing **y** into **e**.

a) By changing **w** into **o**.

<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Blwng,	blong, <i>frowning</i> .	Hwnw,	hono, <i>that</i> .
Brwnt,	bront, <i>nasty</i> .	Llwm,	llom, <i>bare</i> .
Clws,	clôs, <i>trim</i> .	Llwr,	llor, <i>timid</i> .
Crwm,	crom, <i>bent</i> .	Mwll,	moll, <i>sultry</i> .
Crwn,	cron, <i>round</i> .	Pwdr,	podr, <i>rotten</i> .
Cwta,	cota, <i>short</i> .	Pwl,	pol, <i>blunt</i> .
Dwfn,	dofn, <i>deep</i> .	Rhwth,	rhoth, <i>open</i> .
Dwl,	dol, <i>stupid</i> .	Swrth,	sorth, <i>drowsy</i> .
Fflwch,	ffloch, <i>abrupt</i> .	Tlws,	tlos, <i>pretty</i> .
Hwn,	hon, <i>this</i> .	Trwsgl,	trosgl, <i>clumsy</i> .
Hwua,	hona, <i>that</i> .	Twn,	ton, <i>broken</i> .

b) By changing **y** into **e**.

<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Brych,	brech, <i>freckled</i> .	Gwydn,	gwedn, <i>tough</i> .
Byr,	ber, <i>short</i> .	Gwyrdd,	gwerdd, <i>green</i> .
Clyd,	cled, <i>comfortable</i> ,	Gwyrf,	gwerf, <i>fresh</i> .
Cryf,	cref, <i>strong</i> .	Hysp,	hesp, <i>barren</i> .
Cryg,	creg, <i>hoarse</i> .	Hyll,	hell, <i>ugly</i> .
Chwyrn,	chwern, <i>rapid</i> .	Llyfn,	llefn, <i>smooth</i> .
Ffyrf,	fferf, <i>thick</i> .	Llym,	llem, <i>sharp</i> .
Gwych,	gwech, <i>gay</i> .	Syth,	seth, <i>straight</i> .
Gwlyb,	gwleib, <i>wet</i> .	Sych,	sech, <i>dry</i> .
Gwyp,	gwemp, <i>splendid</i> .	Tyn,	ten, <i>tight</i> .
Gwyn,	gwen, <i>white</i> .	Brith makes	braith, <i>speckled</i> .

160. Many *compound*, and some few *derivative*, adjectives have their genders distinguished in the same way.

<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Hirgrwn,	hirgron.	Pengrych,	pengrech.	Bychan,	bechan.
Pendwrwm,	pendrom.	Talgrych,	talgrech.	Melyn,	melen.
Pengrwn,	pengron.	Talgryf,	talgref.	Tywyll,	tywell.

“ Nos da i'r ynys *dywell*,
Ni wn a oes un ynys well.” *Lewis Glyn Cothi*.

(a) A few of the cardinal and ordinal numbers have their vowels inflected to form the feminine gender. [See § 177 (a), 178 (a).]

(b) In modern Welsh the *masculine* form of most of the adjectives, above enumerated, is oftener met with than the feminine, even when the substantive is of the *fem.* gender. Geneth *glws*, pretty girl; dynes *hyll*, ugly woman, occur more frequently than geneth *glos*, dynes *hell*. But in the use of the following words the rule is still adhered to: *bechan*, *ber*, *bront*, *braith*, *cron*, *cref*, *dofn*, *gwen*, *hesp*, *hon*, *hona*, *hono*, *llom*, *mlen*, *trom*, and their compounds *pengron*, *pengref*, &c.

161. ‘The adjectives with gender, [i. e. formed by vowel inflections,] lose that characteristic when they take the plural form, or have any of the terminations by which they become derivative, or are in a state of comparison; and by losing such a characteristic they retain the form under which they denote the masculine gender.’*

Careg wen, *white stone*, pl. ceryg *gwynion*, not *gwenion*.

Careg drom, *heavy stone*, comp. careg *drymach*, not *dromach*.

162. **Mutation of consonants.** If an adjective, beginning with any of the mutable consonants, follows a feminine noun singular, its gender is also indicated by changing the initial consonant into the middle sound.

Careg drom, *a heavy stone*, (rad. *trwm*).

Dynes dda, *a good woman* (rad. *da*).

(a) If an adjective precede the noun, or if the noun be plural, no indication of gender is made by consonant mutations.

Trom gareg.

Ceryg trymion.

163. An adjective is said to be of *common gender*, when it can undergo no change whatever; i. e. when it does not contain a mutable *w* or *y*, or begin with one of the nine *mutable consonants*.

Gwr hael, *a liberal man*.

Gwraig hael, *a liberal woman*.

Bachgen segur, *an idle boy*.

Geneth segur, *an idle girl*.

NUMBER OF ADJECTIVES.

164. Some adjectives are susceptible of a plural number to agree with a plural noun or pronoun; others are used

* Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 52.

in the singular, even when the noun is plural. (Dynion *duon*. Dynion *da*).

165. The adjectives, which admit of being made plural, are mostly *primitives*; but sometimes *compounds* and *derivatives*.

166. The plural number is formed

α. By adding the syllable on or ion.

Du, *black*, pl. duon.

Gwyn *white*, pl. gwynion.

(a) The termination *ion* is the more usual. "But after *w*, *u*, *br*, *dr*, *ddf*, *gr*, and *thr*, *on* is employed."*

Chwerw, *bitter*, pl. chwerwon.

Lleddf, *flat*, pl. lleddfon.

Du, *black*, pl. duon.

Hagr, *ugly*, pl. hagrion.

Cyfebr, *with foal*, pl. cyfebron.

Llathr, *smooth*, pl. lleithron.

Budr, *dirty*, pl. budron.

But *tew*, *fat*, and *glew*, *bold*, make *tewion* and *glewion* in *x. w.*

β. By changing a vowel or vowels.

Buan, *swift*, pl. buain.

Cadarn, *strong*, pl. cedyrn.

γ. By changing a vowel or vowels, and adding on or ion.

Garw, *rough*, pl. geirwon.

Tlawd, *poor*, pl. tlodion.

(a) Gwân, *weak*, makes gweiniaid (seldom gweinion) in the plural.

(b) The plural number is formed from the *masculine* gender, never from the *feminine*. Ceryg gwynion, not ceryg gwenion.

167. The vowels undergo the following changes in the formation of the plural number of adjectives.

A is changed into *ai* without the addition of a syllable; as,

Bychan, bychain, *little*.

Buan, buain, *quick*.

Llydan, llydain, *wide*.

Byddar, byddair, *deaf*.

Ieuanc, ieuaine, *young*.

Truan, truain, *miserable*.

A is changed into *ei*, sometimes with and sometimes without the addition of a syllable; as,

Hardd, heirdd, *beautiful*.

Llall, lleill, *the other*.

Marw, meirw, *dead*.

Gwag, gweigion, *empty*.

Arall, ereill, (or eraill), *another*.

Garw, geirwon, *rough*.

A and *a* are respectively changed into *e* and *y*; as, cadarn, cedyrn, *strong*.

A and *e* are respectively changed into *e* and *y*; as, caled, celyd, *hard*.

Ae and *ai* are respectively changed into *ei* with the addition of a syllable; as,

Llaes, lleision, *trailing*.

Main, meinion, *thin*.

* D. S. Evans' "Llythraeth."

W is changed into *y* with the addition of a syllable; as, *trwm*, trymion, *heavy*.

Aw is changed into *o* with the addition of a syllable; as, *tlawd*, tlodion, *poor*.

168. Some adjectives have two plural forms; as, *caled*, *hard*, pl. *celyd* or *caledion*; *hardd*, *beautiful*, pl. *heirdd* or *heirddion*.

169. Most adjectives, however, have no plural forms, the singular number, as in English, being put in construction with nouns and pronouns of the plural number; as,

Primitives: *da*, *teg*, *glan*, *hen*, *iawn*, &c. (*Dynion da*; *rhesymau teg*; *rhianod glan*.)

Compounds: *hyglod*, *mawrbarch*, *hynaws*, &c. (*Gwyr hyglod*.)

Derivatives: such as end with the suffixes *aid*, *aidd*, *gar*, *ig* (not *edig*), *in*, *llyd* (or *lyd*), *adwy*, *fawr*, *llawn* (or *lawn*.) (*Llanciau mynyddig*; *dynion clodfawr*.)

(a) But derivatives ending in *edig*, *og*, *ol*, and *us*, admit of a plural form when they are used substantively; as, *dysgedigion*, *learned men*; *goludogion*, *wealthy persons*; *duwiolion*, *pious persons*; *anwybodusion*, *ignorant ones*. They sometimes take a pl. form, when in construction with nouns; as, *nefolion leoedd*, *heavenly places*.

(b) Many primitive, compound, and derivative adjectives, when used substantively, are made pl. by adding *iaid*. *Ffyddloniaid*, *faithful ones*. *Gweiniaid*, *weak ones*.

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

170. There are in Welsh four degrees of comparison; the *positive*, the *equal*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative*.

171. The *positive* is expressed by the adjective in its simple and absolute state; as *glan*, *fair*; *rhyfelgar*, *warlike*.

172. The *equal* denotes equality or admiration, and is expressed in English by *as*, *so*, or *how*, with the positive. It is formed

a) By suffixing *ed** to the positive (and to the comparative

* Dr. Theodore Aufrecht compares the suffix *ed* (formerly written *et*) with the Sanskrit *vat*. "I believe the Welsh *et* corresponds to the Sanskrit *vat* with the loss of the initial *v*, in the same manner as in *oen*, plural *wyn*, (lamb), compared with Lat. *ovis*, Sanskrit *avi*; *ci*, pl. *cwn* (dog), *κυν*, Sanskrit *cvan*; *hŷn* (sleep), Sanskrit *svapna*. The Sanskrit *vat* very commonly forms adverbs, expressing a similarity or likeness, as well from adjectives as substantives. The two affixes *et* and *vat*, though not entirely agreeing in their application, still bear a certain likeness which proves them to be of the same origin." (See Dr. Aufrecht's paper, read May 9th, 1856, before the Philological Society.)

of some irregular adjectives,) with or without *cyn* or *can* going before; as, *cyn laned*, *as fair*; *can gynted*, *as swift*.

(a) Admiration is most frequently, and equality sometimes, expressed without *cyn* or *can*; as, *wyned yw'r eira*, *how white the snow is!*

b) By placing *mor* before the positive; as, *mor lan*, *as fair*.

(a) *Mor* is frequently found with *ed*; as, *mor laned*; but most grammarians condemn this construction.

c) It is sometimes expressed by the inseparable prefixes *cy*, *cyf*, *cym*, *cyn*, *cys*; as, *cyhyd*, *cyfuwch*, *cymmaint*, *cyn-ddrwg*, *cystal*.

(a) *Cyn* (or *can*) is often found before *cymmaint* and *cystal*, and sometimes before *cyfuwch*. "Y mae hwn *cyn* gystal a'r llall," *this is as good as the other*.

173. The *comparative* expresses a greater degree of the quality expressed by the positive. It is formed by suffixing *ach* to the positive; as, *glanach*, *fairer*; or by placing *mw* or *llai* (more or less) before it; as, *mw* *rhyfelgar*, *more warlike*; *llai* *rhyfelgar*, *less warlike*.

174. The *superlative* denotes the greatest degree of the quality expressed by the positive. It is formed by suffixing *af** to the positive; as, *glanaf*, *fairest*; or by putting *mwya*f or *lleia*f (most or least) before it; as, *mwya*f *rhyfelgar*, *most warlike*, *lleia*f *rhyfelgar*, *least warlike*.

Pos.	Equal.	Comp.	Super.
Byr, <i>short</i> .	byred.†	byrach.	byraf.
Rhyfelgar, <i>warlike</i> .	mor rhyfelgar.	mwya rhyfelgar.	mwya f rhyfelgar.
Cyffredin, <i>common</i> .	mor gyffredin.	llai cyffredin.	lleia f cyffredin.

(a) When *g*, *b*, *d*, are the final letters of the positive, they are respectively changed into *c*, *p*, *t*, in the *equal*, *comp.*, and *super.* degrees; as,

Teg, <i>fine</i> .	teced.	tecach.	tecaf.
Gwlyb, <i>wet</i> .	gwlyped.	gwlypach.	gwlypaf.
Rhad, <i>cheap</i> .	rhated.	rhatach.	rhataf.

(b) When *ai*, *aw*, *w*, occur in the last syllable of the positive, they are respectively changed into *ei*, *o*, *y*, in the other degrees; as, *main*, *meined*; *tlawd*, *tloted*; *llwm*, *llymed*.

(c) "The vowel *i* is often prefixed to the terminations for the sake of euphony; as, *peraidd*, *delicious*; *pereiddied*, *pereiddiach*, *pereiddiaf*."‡

* With *af* (formerly *am*) compare the Latin suffix *imus*; as, *minimus*, *infimus*, *optimus*.

† Or *cyn* (*can*) *fyred*, and *mor fyr*.

‡ Spurrrell's Grammar, p. 44.

175. Some adjectives are compared irregularly.

Those that are printed in *Italics* may also be compared regularly (e. g. *hawdd*, *hawdded*, *hawddach*, *hawddaf*); but the irregular forms are usually preferred by good writers.

Pos.	Equal.	Comp.	Super.
Da, <i>good</i> .	cystal, (däed.)	gwell.	goreu.
Buan, <i>x.w</i> }	<i>quick</i> . cynted.	cynt.	cyntaf.
Clau, <i>s.w</i> }			
Agos, <i>near</i> .	nesed.	nes.	nesaf.
Bach or }	<i>little</i> . lleied.	llai.	lleiaf.
Bychan }			
Drwg, <i>bad</i> .	cynddrwg, gwaeth- ed, dryced.	gwaeth.	gwaethaf.
Hawdd, <i>easy</i> .	hawsed.		
Hen, <i>old</i> .	hyned.	hÿn, hynach.	hynaf.
Hir, <i>long</i> .	cyhyd.	hwy.	hwyaf.
Ieuanc, <i>young</i> .	ieuenged.	iau.	ieuaf.
Isel, <i>low</i> .	ised.	is.	isaf.
Llawer, <i>much</i> , }	cymmaint, cynnifer.	mwy.	mwyaf.
many.			
Llydan, <i>wide</i> .	lleted.	lletach, (lled.)	lletaf.
Mawr, <i>great</i> .	cymmaint.	mwy.	mwyaf.
Uchel, <i>high</i> .	uched, uwched, } cyfuwch.	uwch, (uch.)	uchaf, uwchaf.
Diwedd, <i>an end</i> .			
Blaeu, <i>fore</i> .			diweddaf, <i>last</i> .
Ol, <i>behind</i> .			blaenaf, <i>foremost</i> .
Pen, <i>the head</i> .			olaf, <i>last</i> .
			penaf, <i>chief</i> .
		Trech, <i>superior</i> .	trechaf.
			Eithaf, <i>furthest</i> .

NUMERALS.

176. Numerals are partly adjectives, partly adverbs.

177. The **cardinal numbers** are *un*, *dau*, *tri*, &c. The first ten and the numbers twenty, hundred, thousand, and a few others, are expressed respectively by radical words: the others are formed either by simply uniting two or more numerals, as, *trigain* = *tri ugain*, three score; or by the aid of the prep. *ar*, upon, over, or the conj. *a*, and. The numbers between 10 and 20, and between 20 and 40, are expressed by the aid of *ar*: as, *un ar ddeg* = one over ten, 11; *un ar hugain* = one over twenty, 21. Numbers above 40 are formed by the aid of *a*: as, *un a deugain* = one and forty, 41.

(a) The cardinals have no plural number, except when (as in English) they are used substantively. Degau, *tens*; ugeiniau, *scores*; cannoedd, *hundreds*.

'*Dau, tri, pedwar*, have *dwy, tair, pedair* for the feminine gender, which form they assume in all their combinations, when used with feminine nouns.' *Tair dynes, tair dynes ar ddeg.*

178. The ordinals are *cyntaf, ail, trydydd, pedverydd, pummed, &c.*, which, with the exception of the first four, are formed by suffixing *ed* or *fed* to the cardinals; as, *chweched, seithfed.*

(a) The ordinals have no plural number, and no distinction of gender, except *deufed, trydydd* and *pedverydd*, which make *dwysed, trydedd*, and *pedwaredd* in the feminine.

179. The adverbial numerals, answering to the question *how many times?* are made by affixing to any proposed numeral the word *gwaith*, time (softened *waith*), or *tro*, a turn (softened *dro*). *Pumwaith, five times; pumtro, five turns or times.* [*Gwaith* is the more usual.]

180. Cardinals. (one, &c.)	Ordinals. (first, &c.)	Numeral adverbs. (once, &c.)
1. Un.	Cyntaf, unfed.*	Unwaith, untro,† &c.
2. Dau, f. dwy.	Ail, eilfed; deufed, f. dwysed.	} Dwywaith.
3. Tri, f. tair.	Trydydd, f. trydedd.	
4. Pedwar, f. pedair.	Pedverydd, f. ped- waredd.	} Pedeirgwaith.
5. Pump, pum.	Pummed.	
6. Chwech, chwe.	Chweched, chwechfed.	Chwegwaith.
7. Saith.	Seithfed.	Seithwaith.
8. Wyth.	Wythfed.	Wythwaith.
9. Naw.	Nawfed.	Nawgwaith.
10. Deg, deng.	Degfed.	Dengwaith.
11. Un ar ddeg.	Unted ar ddeg.	Unwaith ar ddeg.
12. Deuddeg (for dau ar ddeg).	} Deuddegfed.	} Deuddengwaith.
13. Tri (f. tair) ar ddeg.		
14. Pedwar (f. pedair) ar ddeg.	} Trydydd (f. trydedd) ar ddeg.	} Teirgwaith ar ddeg.
15. Pymtheg (for pum ar ddeg).		
16. Un ar bymtheg.	} Pedverydd (f. ped- waredd) ar ddeg.	} Pedeirgwaith ar ddeg.
17. Dau (f. dwy) ar bymtheg.		
	} Pymthegfed.	} Pymthengwaith.
	} Unfed ar bymtheg. Ail or eilfed ar bym- theg.	} Unwaith ar bymtheg.
	} Deufed (f. dwysed) ar bymtheg.	} Dwywaith ar bymtheg, &c.

* Unfed is used in conjunction with another numeral: *unfed ar ddeg, 11th; unfed ar bymtheg, 16th.*

† Or, *un waith, un tro; dwy waith, dau dro, &c.*

18. Tri (f. tair) ar bym- theg, deunaw.	{ Trydydd (f. trydedd) ar bymtheg, deunawfed.	{ Teirgwaith ar bymtheg.
19. Pedwar (f. pedair) ar bymtheg.	{ Pedwerydd (f. pedwar- edd) ar bymtheg.	{ Pedeirgwaith ar bymtheg.
20. Ugain.	Ugeinfed.	Ugeinwaith.
30. Deg ar hugain.	Degfed ar hugain.	{ Dengwaith ar hugain.
40. Deugain.	Deugeinfed.	Deugeinwaith.
50. Deg a deugain.	Degfed a deugain.	{ Dengwaith a deu- gain.
60. Trigain (or tri) ugain.	{ Trigeinfed, tri ugeinfed.	Trigeinwaith.
80. Pedwar ugain.	Pedwar ugeinfed.	{ Pedwar ugein- waith.
100. Cant, can.	Canfed.	Canwaith.
200. Deugant.	Deuganfed.	Deuganwaith.
1000. Mil.	Milfed.	Milwaith.
2000. Dwyfil.	Dwyfilfed.	Dwyfilwaith.
10,000. Myrdd.	Myrddfed.	Myrddwaith. &c.

181. The ordinals have often, like the cardinal numbers, *gwaith*, time, or *tro*, turn, put after them, *gwaith* (fem.) taking the middle, and *tro* (mas.) the radical sound: as, *y seithfed waith*; *y seithfed tro*.

Position of substantives joined to periphrastic numerals. See § 502.

PRONOUNS.

182. Pronouns are divided into *Personal*, *Demonstrative*, *Relative*, *Interrogative*, *Possessive*, and *Indefinite*.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

183. The Welsh language has personal pronouns in great variety of forms, which were designed in order to speak of a person or thing with a less or greater degree of emphasis. Thus when no great emphasis was to be laid on the pronoun, the simple form *mi*, &c., would be employed; as, '*mi a ddeuaf*,' I will come. When the pronoun required to be marked with emphasis, the emphasis would be expressed by doubling the simple form: thus, *myfi* = *mi mi*; as, '*myfi a ddeuaf*,' I will come. When the pron. was to be conjoined, or set in opposition to a word in the preceding clause, this was done by suffixing the word *tau* (= *tuus*) *too*, *also*, to the

simple form: thus we have *minnau*, *tithau*, fr. *mi-tau*, *ti-tau*; as, '*minnau a ddeuaf*,' *I* also will come. When emphasis and conjunction were to be expressed in the same pronoun, the simple form would be prefixed to that which expressed conjunction or opposition; thus, *myfinnau*, *tydithau*, *efyntau*, are compounded of *mi-minnau*, *ti-tithau*, *ef-yntau*.

Observe. At present, however, the distinction is not strictly observed between '*the simple*,' and '*the emphatic*,' and between '*the conjunctive*,' and '*the emphatic and conjunctive*.'

184. (a) *Simple.* (*I, thou, he, &c.*)

- | | |
|------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. Mi, i. | 1. Ni. |
| 2. Ti. | 2. Chwi. |
| 3. { E, ef, fe, o, fo, <i>mas.</i> | 3. Hwy, hwynt (<i>coll. nhw,</i> |
| { Hi, <i>fem.</i> | nhwy.) |

185. (b) *Emphatic.* (*I, thou, he, &c.*)

- | | |
|----------------------------|---------------|
| 1. Myfi.* | 1. Nyni. |
| 2. Tydi. | 2. Chwychwi. |
| 3. { Efe, efo, <i>mas.</i> | 3. Hwynt-hwy. |
| { Hyhi, <i>fem.</i> | |

186. (c) *Conjunctive.* (*I also, but I, I on the other hand, &c.*)

- | | |
|-------------------------|------------------------------------|
| 1. Minnau, innau. | 1. Ninnau. |
| 2. Tithau. | 2. Chwithau. |
| 3. { Yntau, <i>mas.</i> | 3. Hwythau, hwyntau (<i>coll.</i> |
| { Hithau, <i>fem.</i> | nhwthau, nhwythau). |

187. (d) *Emphatic and conjunctive,* (*I also indeed, &c.*)

- | | |
|---------------------------|-------------------|
| 1. Myfinnau. | 1. Nyninnau. |
| 2. Tydithau. | 2. Chwychwithau. |
| 3. { Efyntau, <i>mas.</i> | 3. Hwynt-hwythau. |
| { Hyhithau, <i>fem.</i> | |

* In colloquial, and sometimes in written language, this form is corrupted into *y fi*, *y ti*, *y fe*, *y fo*, *y hi*, &c.

"*Y hi oedd yn barnu Israel.*" Judges iv. 4.

"*Dymunais ef, eb y hi.*" 1 Sam. i. 20.

(a) Some of these pronouns suffer an elision when preceded by the prep. *i*; as, *im'* for *i mi*; *it'* for *i ti*; *in'* for *i ni*; and *iwch* is found for *i chwi*.

(b) *Of me, of thee, of him, &c.*, will not be expressed in Welsh by *o fi, o di, o ef, &c.*, but by the following form, which Dr. J. D. Rhys considers the genitive of the personal pronouns. (Grammar, p. 74.)

- | | |
|---|------------------------|
| 1. O honof = of me. | 1. O honom = of us. |
| 2. O honot = of thee. | 2. O honoch = of you. |
| 3. { O hono = of him.
O honi = of her. | 3. O honynt = of them. |

Or, *o hanof, o hanot, &c.*, where the root is more clearly seen. *Hanu* is to proceed from: hence *hanof* = proceeding from me.

188. **Reflective pronouns** are formed by adding, to the poss. pron., *hun* or *hunan*, self; *hun* or *hunain*, selves.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. Fy hun or hunan, <i>myself</i> . | 1. Ein hun or hunain, <i>ourselves</i> . |
| 2. Dy hun or hunan, <i>thyself</i> . | 2. Eich hun or hunain, <i>yourselves</i> . |
| 3. Ei hun or hunan, <i>himself, &c.</i> | 3. Eu hun or hunain, <i>themselves</i> . |

189. **Reciprocal pronouns** are formed by adding *gilydd*, one another, to the plural of the possessive.

First person, ein gilydd; *second person*, eich gilydd; *third person*, eu gilydd.

190. "*One another* is expressed also by *y naill y llall* = the one, the other: in this case two distinct persons or parties are spoken of. *Hwy a laddant y naill y llall, they will kill one another.*"*

191. **Inseparable pronouns** are so called because they are united to verbs and prepositions to indicate the person and number intended to be expressed: thus, *caraf* is compounded of *car* and *fi*; *ataf* of *at* and *fi*.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

192. The demonstrative pronouns of the Welsh language are divided into six classes, and "make a discrimination of persons and situation, for which the English *this* and *that* are not equivalent."

* T. J. Hughes on Syntax. † Dr. Pughe.

193. The demonstrative pronouns are used in two ways, as in English: (a) *by themselves*; and (b) *in construction with substantives*.

194. When they stand by themselves, they are thus declined:

195.

1 Class.	{ Hwn, <i>m. this.</i>	Y rhai hyn or yma, <i>m. these.</i>
	{ Hon, <i>f. this.</i>	Y rhai hyn or yma, <i>f. these.</i>
	{ Hyn,* <i>m. this.</i>	Hyn, <i>m. these.</i>

196.

2 Class.	{ Hwn yma, <i>m.=this here.</i>	Y rhai hyn or yma, <i>m.=these here.</i>
	{ Hon yma, <i>f.=this here.</i>	Y rhai hyn or yma, <i>f.=these here.</i>
	{ Hyn yma, <i>m.=this here.</i>	Hyn yma, <i>m.=these here.</i>

This form is stronger and more emphatic than the preceding.

197.

3 Class.	{ Hwna, <i>m.=that there.</i>	Y rhai yna or hyna, <i>m.=those there.</i>
	{ Hona, <i>f.=that there.</i>	Y rhai yna or hyna, <i>f.=those there.</i>
	{ Hyna, <i>m.=that there.</i>	Hyna, <i>m.=those there.</i>

Speaking of an object under cognizance, and near.

198.

4 Class.	{ Hwn yna, <i>m.=that there.</i>	Y rhai hyn yna, <i>m.=those there.</i>
	{ Hon yna, <i>f.=that there.</i>	Y rhai hyn yna, <i>f.=those there.</i>
	{ Hyn yna, <i>m.=that there.</i>	Hyn yna, <i>m.=those there.</i>

This form is stronger and more emphatic than the preceding.

199.

5 Class.	{ Hwn acw, <i>m.=that yonder.</i>	Y rhai acw or hyn acw, <i>m.=those yonder.</i>
	{ Hon acw, <i>f.=that yonder.</i>	Y rhai acw or hyn acw, <i>f.=those yonder.</i>
	{ Hyn acw, <i>m.=that yonder.</i>	Hyn acw, <i>m.=those yonder.</i>

Speaking of an object under cognizance, but distant.

200.

6 Class.	{ Hwnw, <i>m. that (out of sight.)</i>	Y rhai hyny, <i>m. those (out of sight.)</i>
	{ Hono, <i>f. that (out of sight.)</i>	Y rhai hyny, <i>f. those (out of sight.)</i>
	{ Hyny, <i>m. that.</i>	Hyny, <i>m. those.</i>

Speaking of an object not under cognizance.

(a) *Y rhai hyn*, and *y rhai hyny*, are frequently contracted into *y rhai'n*, and *y rhei'ny*. The contracted forms are sometimes, but erroneously, coupled with substantives; as, "*y dynion rhai'n*, *y dynion rhei'ny*." The correct construction is, "*y dynion hyn*, *y dynion hyny*."

(b) The words *yma*, *yna*, *acw* (here, there, yonder) are strictly adverbs of place, but they are regularly used as demonstrative pronouns.

* *Hyn* and its compounds refer to a fact or circumstance. (See Syntax.)

201. The adverbs of showing, *dyma* and *dyna*, are very frequently used as demonstrative pronouns.

Dyma, <i>m.</i> = hwn	} <i>this.</i>	Dyma, <i>m.</i> = y rhai hyn	} <i>these.</i>
Dyma, <i>f.</i> = hon		Dyma, <i>f.</i> = y rhai hyn	
Dyma, <i>m.</i> = hyn		Dyma, <i>m.</i> = hyn	
Dyna, <i>m.</i> = hwna	} <i>that.</i>	Dyna, <i>m.</i> = y rhai yna	} <i>those.</i>
Dyna, <i>f.</i> = hona		Dyna, <i>f.</i> = y rhai yna	
Dyna, <i>m.</i> = hyna		Dyna, <i>m.</i> = hyna	

(a) *Dyma* and *dyna* most generally include the copula. Dyma'r dyn = hwn yw'r dyn, *this is the man.*

202. When demonstrative pronouns (or adverbs used pronominally) are put in construction with substantives, they are thus declined:

Hwn or yma, <i>m.</i>	} <i>this.</i>	Hyn or yma, <i>m.</i>	} <i>these.</i>
Hon or yma, <i>f.</i>		Hyn or yma, <i>f.</i>	
Yna (or hwna) <i>m.</i>	} <i>that.</i>	Yna, <i>m.</i>	} <i>those.</i>
Yna (or hona) <i>f.</i>		Yna, <i>f.</i>	
Aew, <i>m.</i>	} <i>that.</i>	Aew, <i>m.</i>	} <i>those.</i>
Aew, <i>f.</i>		Aew, <i>f.</i>	
Hwnw, <i>m.</i>	} <i>that.</i>	Hyny, <i>m.</i>	} <i>those.</i>
Hono, <i>f.</i>		Hyny, <i>f.</i>	

203. Demonstrative pronouns, when put in construction with substantives, follow them, an article or its equivalent always preceding. [Order: **art. subs. pron.**]

Y dyn hwn = *the man this; this man.*

Y dynion hyny = *the men those; those men.*

Dy fab hwn = *thy son this; this thy son.*

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

204. The form *yr hwn*, *yr hon*, &c., is varied to denote gender and number: some are varied to denote number only: and others have no variation at all.

205. a) S. Yr hwn, <i>m. who, which, he that.</i>	Pl. Y rhai.
Yr hon, <i>f. who, which, she that.</i>	Y rhai.
Yr hyn,* <i>m. what, that which, which.</i>	Yr hyu.
b) S. Pa un, <i>who, which.</i>	Pl. Pa rai.

* *Yr hyn* usually refers to a whole or part of a sentence, as its antecedent. (See Syntax.)

c) S. Y neb, yr un, *whosoever*. Pl. Y sawl.*

d) Ag and a'r, *who, which, that, as*, are indeclinable.

e) Pwy bynag, *whosoever*, is mas. and fem., sing. and pl.

f) Pa . . bynag, *what or which . . soever*, may be of any gender and number, according to the word inserted between *pa* and *bynag*: as,

S. Pa *ddyn* bynag, *m*.

Pl. Pa *ddynion* bynag, *m*.

Pa *ferch* bynag, *f*.

Pa *ferched* bynag, *f*.

(a) Some grammarians consider *a* as a relative pronoun; as in the sentence "ti yw y ferch *a* garaf," thou art the maid I love. But as the writer is convinced that *a* in such sentences is nothing else than the auxiliary adverb, which in affirmative clauses is placed before the verb when the nom. or the objective precedes, it has been thought proper to deny it a place among relative pronouns.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

206. The interrogative pronouns are *pwy* and *pa* (and formerly *py*) for both numbers. [Cf. *pwy* = quis; *pa*, *py* = πῶς, quā.]

207. *Pwy* (*what man or woman, who*), is both mas. and fem., and being itself a substantive pronoun, it should not be joined to a noun.

208. *Pa* (*what*) is an adjective pronoun, and is followed by a noun or a substantive word. *Pa ddyn?* *Pa un?* *Pa rai?*

(a) When *pwy* and *pa* are accompanied by *bynag* = *cunque*, they form indefinite relatives. [See above, § 205.]

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

209. 1. Fy,† ym, *my*.

Ein, *our*.

2. Dy, yth, *thy*.

Eich, *your*.

3. Ei, *his, hers, its*.

Eu, *their*.

(a) When *ym*, *yth*, *ei*, *ein*, *eich*, *eu*, come after *a*, *o*, *i*, *y*, *fe*, *ni*, *na*, *pe*, *mo*, *tua*, *gyda*, and sometimes after other words ending with a vowel, they are abbreviated:

'm = ym; 'th = yth; 'i = ei; 'n = ein; 'ch = eich; 'u = eu.

Mi *a'm* tad; ti *a'th* dad; efe *a'i* dad.

Nyni *a'n* tad; chwyhwi *a'ch* tad; hwynt-hwy *a'u* tad.

* *Y sawl* is sometimes considered as singular: "*Y sawl ni rodia, dedwydd yw*." Edm. Pry. "*Fod yn rhaid i'r sawl a chwenychai wrthladd awdurdod, gymeryd y baich arno ei hun*." Ed. Samuel.

† The radical form *my* is obsolete.

(b) "I'w." When *ei* singular and *eu* plural are preceded by *i*, they are changed into *w*: *i'w* = *i ei*, to his; *i'w* = *i eu*, to their. Aethl *i'w* dy; aethant *i'w* tai.

- | | | |
|---------|---------------------------------|--------------------------|
| 210. 1. | Eiddof, <i>mine</i> . | Eiddom, <i>ours</i> . |
| 2. | Eiddot, <i>thine</i> . | Eiddoch, <i>yours</i> . |
| 3. | { Eiddo, <i>his</i> . | Eiddynt, <i>theirs</i> . |
| | { Eiddi or eiddo, <i>hers</i> . | |

211. *Mau* (= *meus*) my, and *tau* (= *tuus*) thy, are obsolete, except in poetry.

212. *Ill* (probably = *illi*), *their*, is joined to numerals of the third person, and most commonly to no more than two or three persons. 'Aethant yno *ill* dau,' they both went there. So *ill tri* or *trioedd*, they three.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS (OR NUMERALS.)

213. The following are termed *indefinite pronouns*, or *numerals*:*—

Ambell, <i>some few</i> .	Ychydig, <i>few, little</i> .	Rhai, <i>some (number.)</i>
Amryw } <i>several</i> .	Peth, <i>some</i> .	Sawl, <i>many</i> . (Pa sawl gwaith? <i>how many times?</i> Y sawl, <i>such</i> .)
Amrai }		
Arall (pl. ereill), <i>another</i> .	Y naill, <i>the one</i> .	Un, <i>any</i> ; yr un, <i>the same</i> .
Cyfryw } <i>such</i> .	Y llall (pl. lleill), <i>the other</i> .	Unrhyw, <i>any; the same</i> .
Y fath }		
Dim, <i>no; any</i> .	Pob, <i>every</i> .	Neb, <i>nobody; any body</i> .
Holl, <i>oll, all</i> .	Pawb, <i>all</i> .	
Llawer, <i>many, much</i> .	Rhyw, <i>some (sort.)</i>	

214. *Arall* and *oll* follow the substantives which they qualify; the others precede.

(a) So also all the cardinal and ordinal numbers precede, except *cyntaf*, first, which follows its substantive.

215. The following are accompanied by a substantive or substantive word: *pob*, *ambell*, *rhyw*, *unrhyw* (any) *holl*, *sawl*.

216. These admit of being employed with or without a substantive: *amryw*, *amrai*, *cyfryw*, *y fath*, *llawer*, *oll*, *rhai*, *un*, *yr un*, *unrhyw* (the same), *ychydig*, *y naill*, *arall*, *dim*, *peth*, *neb*.

* They are called by some *adjective pronouns*.

217. *Parb* and *y llall* (pl. *y lleill*) are never accompanied by a substantive or substantive word.

218. *Dim*, *pob*, *llawer*, *un*, and *yr un* (mas.), *rhai*, *sawl*, and *peth*, govern the radical sound; the others govern the middle.

(a) *Y sawl*, such, governs the middle. "Canlyn y sawl bethau." *Com. Pr.*

* * For further observations, see Syntax.

VERBS.

219. Verbs are divided into *Active* and *Passive*. Active verbs are again divided into *Transitive* and *Intransitive*.

220. "A *transitive* verb expresses an action exerted upon some object;" as, 'caraf y dyn,' *I love the man*.

221. "An *intransitive* verb expresses an action or a state, which is not communicated from the agent to any other object;" as, 'rhedaf,' *I run*.

222. "A *passive transitive* verb denotes that its nominative is suffering or acted upon." It is formed from the active transitive by suffixing the passive terminations to the root of the verb: thus, 'car-af,' *I love*; passive, 'cer-ir fi,' *I am loved*.

223. A *passive impersonal* verb is formed by adding the passive suffixes to the root of the intransitive: thus, 'rhed-af,' *I run*; impers. 'rhed-ir,' *it is run*; *men run*. It has not, strictly speaking, a nom. case, but *fe*, *fo*, *e*, frequently precede it in affirmative main clauses; as, '*fe* redir yn gyflym.'

224. A *reflective* (or *middle*) verb denotes that an action is exerted by the agent upon himself. It is formed from transitive verbs by prefixing *ym** to them; as, *golchi*, *to wash*, *ym-olchi*, *to wash one's self*. [Cf. Gr. *λούω*, I wash; *λούομαι*, I wash myself.]

FORMATION OF THE MOODS.

225. The root of a verb is a word in its radical, unchanged form, without any termination added thereto, and it is most

* *Ym* is probably either another form of the pron. *mi*, or cognate with the Greek *ομ-αι*.

usually traced in the *Infinitive mood*; the *third pers. sing. fut.* of the *Indic.*; or the *second pers. sing. of the Imperative*.

(a) *Valpy* remarks respecting the 2nd Aorist Imperative of the Greek: "This tense appears to be the simplest form of the root of the verb. The first use of language is to express a want; hence the Imperative was naturally one of the first objects of speech."*

226. **The infinitive mood.** Many verbs are used in the infinitive without any addition of suffixes designative of that mood.

Dangos, *to show.* Ateb, *to answer.* Sôn, *to mention.*

227. But, in general, certain endings, characteristic of the Infinitive, are appended to the root-words; and if the root-words contain any of the mutable vowels, *a, ai, au, aw, w*, these mutables generally undergo a change, according to the system of vowel mutations. *Ai, au, aw, w*, are respectively changed into *ei, eu, o, y*; and *a* is changed into *e* before the suffixes *i, yll, ych*, and sometimes *u*.

<i>Infin.</i>	<i>Root.</i>	<i>Infin.</i>	<i>Root.</i>
Dysg-u, <i>to learn.</i>	Dysg.	Cysg-u, <i>to sleep.</i>	Cwsg.
Peid-io, <i>to cease.</i>	Paid.	Per-i, <i>to cause.</i>	Par.
Blodeu-o, <i>to blossom.</i>	Blodau.	Sef-yll, <i>to stand.</i>	Saf.
Por-i, <i>to graze.</i>	Pawr.	Chwennych, <i>to desire.</i>	Chwant.

228. Verbs are formed from *nouns* sing. or pl.; from *adjectives*; and occasionally from some other parts of speech.

Caru, *to love*, fr. *câr, friend.* Blodeuo, *to blossom*, fr. *blodau, blossoms.*
Cyfiawnhau, *to justify*, fr. *cyfiawn, just.*

229. **The Infinitive endings** most frequently in vogue are the following: *a, hau* (or *âu*) *i, o* (or *aw*) *io* (or *ian*) and *u*.

Bwyta, <i>to eat.</i>	Bywhau, <i>to quicken.</i>	Tori, <i>to break.</i>
Curo (curaw), <i>to beat.</i>	Ceisio (ceisiaw), <i>to seek.</i>	Rhanu, <i>to divide.</i>

230. The following *Infinitive endings* do not occur so frequently: *ael* (or *el*) *aeth, ain, ian, al, ial, ed, ied, eg, fan, ur, w, y, ych, yd, yll.*

Gallael (gallel) <i>to be able.</i>	Nychial, <i>to be in pain.</i>	Bwrw, <i>to throw.</i>
Marchogaeth, <i>to ride.</i>	Ystyried, <i>to consider.</i>	Hely, <i>to gather.</i>
Llefain, <i>to cry.</i>	Rhedeg, <i>to run.</i>	Chwennych, <i>to wish.</i>
Ichian, <i>to scream.</i>	Hedfan, <i>to hover.</i>	Cymmeryd, <i>to take.</i>
Arthal, <i>to bark.</i>	Gwneuthur, <i>to do.</i>	Sefyll, <i>to stand.</i>
Cerdded, <i>to walk.</i>		

* *Valpy's Greek Grammar.*

231. *Observations.* a) *O* and *io* are used in simple or historical language: *aw* and *iaw* in poetry and in nervous prose. But some prefer *aw* and *iaw*, even in simple prose, when the following word begins with *o*. *Syrthiaw o'r awyr, to fall from the sky.*

b) *Hau* (or *âu*) is generally attached to adjectives. *Llawenhau*, from *llawen, cheerful*; *iachâu*, fr. *iach, healthy*. The open form *hâau*, or *üau* is also occasionally met with.

c) *The difference between i and u.* (a) If the preceding syllable contains *oe* or *o* (whether radical or a mutation of *aw*); or if it ends in *w*, the suffix *i* is employed: as, *poeni, poeri, oeri*; *tori, ofui, lloni*; *profi* (fr. *prawf*), *noddi* (fr. *nawdd*); *sylwi, meddwi*. (b) If *a* of the penult has been changed into *e*, *i* is generally used: as, *peri* (fr. *par*), *geni* (fr. *gan*), *erchi* (fr. *arch*.) (c) In other cases *u* is the common termination; as, *malu, pechu, baeddu, cysgu*. But there are several exceptions; such as *medi, gwaeddi, &c.* Some words are written both ways: *gweini* or *gweinu*, *crawni* or *crawnu*, *cyflawni* or *cyflawnu*, &c.

d) The affix *a* generally signifies *to gather* or *collect*; as, *afaleua, to gather apples*; *gwлана, to gather wool*; *ceinioca, to gather pence*.

e) *Ain, ian, al, ial, fan*, imply *frequency*, or *a gradual and continued action*. *Ochain, ichian, arthal, naddial, hedfan*. *F* is sometimes prefixed to *ain*; as, *wylo-fain, cwyno-fain*.

232. **Finite moods.** The finite moods are formed from the infinitive.

233. When verbs have no infinitive endings, nor any of the mutables *a, ai, au, aw*, and *w* in the last syllable, the finite moods* are formed simply by adding to the infinitive the various terminations characterising them: as,

Ateb: ateb-af, ateb-wn, ateb-ais, ateb-aswn, ateb-wyff.

234. But if the last syllable of the infinitive contains any of the above mutable vowels, these vowels are often changed into others, when finite suffixes are added. *Ai* and *w* are changed respectively into *ei* and *y*; *a, au, aw*, are in some tenses changed respectively into *e, eu, ew*.

Arwain, arweiniais.

Hebriwng, hebryngais.

Attal, atteliais.

Hau, heuais.

Addaw, addewais.

Gadaw, gadewais.

235. When verbs have infinitive endings, most of these are struck off at the accession of finite suffixes: as,

Rhed-eg: rhed-af, rhed-wn, rhed-ais.

* Except 3rd pers. sing. of first future.

(a) When *a* occurs in the root-word, and has been changed into *e* in consequence of the infinitive endings *i* and *yll*, the root-word will re-assume its radical form (i. e., *e* will be changed into *a*), when a finite ending is substituted.

Root.	Infinitive.	Finite.
Taw.	Tew-i.	Taw-af.
Saf.	Sef-yll.	Saf-af.

Additional examples. Peri, paraf; llenwi, llanwaf; erchi, archaf; perchi, parchaf.

236. **Infinitive endings struck off.** The following endings of the infinitive are cut off in the formation of the finite moods: *a*, *ael*, (*el*) *aeth*, *ain*, *ed*, *eg*, *i*, *o*, (*aw*) *u*, *ur*, *yd*, *yll*.

Ceinioc- <i>a</i> .	Llef- <i>ain</i> .	Tor- <i>i</i> .	Gwneuth- <i>ur</i> .
Gad- <i>ael</i> .	Clyw- <i>ed</i> .	Cur- <i>o</i> .	Gochel- <i>yd</i> .
Marchog- <i>aeth</i> .	Rhed- <i>eg</i> .	Tal- <i>u</i> .	Sef- <i>yll</i> .

(a) Such verbs as *troi*, *gordoi*, *ymdroi*, *dileu*, *cyflew*, &c., belong to this class. *Troi*, *troaf*; *dileu*, *dileaf*.

(b) *Taraw*, *gadaw*, *addaw*, *gwrandaw*,* and their compounds *ymdaraw*, *ymadaw*, &c., retain *aw* in the finite moods: as, *tarawaf*, *tarawodd*, &c.

(c) *A* is generally retained in the finite tenses of *bwyta*, *to eat*, and *lladrata*, *to steal*: as, *bwytiödd*, *lladratiödd*.

237. Such as have *io* and *ied* in the infinitive, strike off *o* and *ed*, and retain *i*; and such as have *hau* (or *äu*) strike off *u*, and retain *ha* (or *ä*.)

Ceis- <i>io</i> , <i>to seek</i> , ceis- <i>iwn</i> .	Tew- <i>hau</i> , <i>to fatten</i> , tew- <i>hawn</i> .
Ystyr- <i>ied</i> , <i>to consider</i> , ystyr- <i>iwn</i> .	Coff- <i>äu</i> , <i>to remind</i> , coff- <i>awn</i> .

(a) *Ymddiried*, *to trust*, suffers no elision: *ymddiriedaf*.

238. Some other verbs, although their infinitives do not end in *io*, yet borrow *i*, in the finite moods; namely, infinitives ending in *l*, and some which end in *n*, *id*, *yg*, *air*, *iw*: as,

Dal, <i>to hold</i> , dali- <i>af</i> .	Cynnyg, <i>to offer</i> , cynnygi- <i>af</i> .
Arwain, <i>to lead</i> , arweini- <i>af</i> .	Cynniwair, <i>to frequent</i> , cynniweiri- <i>af</i> .
Ymlid, <i>to pursue</i> , ymlidi- <i>af</i> .	Edliw, <i>to upbraid</i> , edliwi- <i>af</i> .

So also *erfyn*, *to beg*; *benthyg*, *to borrow*; *cellwair*, *to jest*; *erlid*, *to pursue*; *ymliw*, *to reproach*; *newid*, *to change*.

(a) But in the dialect of s. w. the *i* is scarcely ever borrowed.

* These verbs are frequently written *taro*, *gado*, *addo*, *gwrando*, in the infinitive.

239. **Infinitive endings retained.** Verbs ending in *eu*, *w*, *fan*, and *ych*, suffer no elision: as,

Dechreu, *to begin*, dechreuaf. Hedfan, *to hover*, hedfanaf.
Cadw, *to keep*, cadwaf. Chwennych, *to desire*, chwennychaf.

(a) Bwrw, *to cast*, rejects *w*, and borrows *i*: as, bwrw, bwriaf. Creu, *to create*, rejects *u*; creu, creaf.

(b) In verbs ending in *eu* (= *ëu*), *u* is cut off: dileu (= *dilëu*), dileaf. See § 236, (a).

240. **Vowel inflections.** Such as have *ai* and *w*, followed by a consonant, in the last syllable of the infinitive, respectively change these vowels into *ei* and *y*, when a finite suffix is added: as,

Arwain, *to lead*, arweiniaf. Hebrwng, *to accompany*, hebryngaf.
Cellwair, *to joke*, cellweiriaf. Gostwng, *to lower*, gostyngaf.

(a) *Ae* in *aeth*, he went, *daeth*, he came, and *gwnaeth*, he did, are sometimes changed into *eu*, in the perf. and pluperfect. *Aethym* or *euthym*; *aethost* or *euthost*, &c.

241. Such verbs as have *a* in the penult of the infinitive (as *caru*, *to love*); and those which retain *aw*, *ha* (or *û*); and *a* in the finite moods (as *taraw*, *to strike*, *cyfiawnhau*, *to justify*, *bwyta*, *to eat*); and infinitives ending in *au* (as *cau*, *to shut*, *argau*, *to enclose*, *gwarchau*, *to besiege*), generally, but not necessarily, change *a* into *e* before the finite endings *i*, *it*, *ais*, *aist*, *wch*, *ych*, *ir*, and *id*; i. e., in the 2nd. pers. sing. and pl. of pres. and first future (*i*, *wch*); 2nd pers. sing. of imperfect (*id*); 1st and 2nd pers. sing. of perfect (*ais*, *aist*); and 2nd pers. pl. of Imperative (*wch*); and in present, imperfect, and 1st future of Passive voice (*ir*, *id*.)

Caru. (Active.)

Pr. and fut., sing.	2. Ceri = cari.	Pl. 2. Cerwch = carwch.
Imperf., sing.	2. Cerit = carit.	
Perf., sing.	1. Cerais = carais.	
	2. Ceraist = carait.	

Imperative. Pl. 2. Cerwch = carwch.

(Passive.)

Pres. and fut. Cerir = carir. Imperf. Cerid = carid.

242. **Omission of vowels.** *A* is cut off before *s* (i. e., in the pl. number of the perfect, and the sing. and pl. of the pluperfect) when *w*, preceded by a *vowel*, ends the root-word; and it is sometimes cut off in the same tenses, when the root-word ends with *l*.

Clyw-ed, *to hear*: *clywsom* = *clywasom*.

Gwel-ed, *to see*: *gwelsom* = *gwelasom*.

(a) If *w* is preceded by a *consonant*, the conjugation is regular; as, *berwi*, *to boil*, *berwasom*.

(b) In *colloquial* language most verbs omit *a* in the above-mentioned tenses. *Darllensom*, *cymmernsom*, *edrychsom*, &c.

243. Verbs ending in *oi* (as, *ffoi*, *ymdroi*) retain *i* of the infinitive, and cut off *a* of the finite endings before *s* (i. e., in the pl. number of the perfect, and sing. and pl. of the pluperfect.)

Ffoi, *to flee*: *ffoisom* = *ffoasom*.

But some write *ffoasom*, *ffoasoch*, *ffoasant*, &c., regularly.

244. In the finite tenses of some verbs, two of the same vowels meet; and in most cases, as will be seen below, one of them is omitted.

a) In verbs ending in *hau* (or *âu*) and such as retain *a* in the finite moods (as *bwyta*, *to eat*) two *a*'s meet in finite tenses ending in *af*, *a*, *ant*, *ai*: one *a* is dropped, its omission being indicated by a circumflex over the retained vowel. [Some few writers retain both vowels.]

Cyfiawnhâf = *cyfiawnhâaf*.

Cyfiawnhânt = *cyfiawnhânt*.

Cyfiawnhâ = *cyfiawnhâa*.

Cyfiawnhâi = *cyfiawnhâai*.

In the perf. pl. active, and plup. act. and passive of the same verbs, two *a*'s meet, one in the penult and the other in the antepenult: one is always dropped, and no mark is used to indicate its omission.

Cyfiawnhasom = *cyfiawnhaasom*, &c.

b) In verbs whose infinitives end in *io* and *ied* (as *ceisio*, *ystyried*) two *i*'s meet where the finite tenses *i*, *it*, *ir*, *id*, occur: one is always omitted, and nothing indicates its omission.

Ceisi = *ceisii*.

Ceisir = *ceisiir*.

Ceisit = *ceisiit*.

Ceisid = *ceisiid*.

(a) But if the verb ends in *io*, with a diæresis, (as *gweddio*, *to pray*) the two vowels are retained.

Gweddii. *Gweddiiit*. *Gweddiiir*. *Gweddiiid*.

So also in verbs ending in *eu* = *ëu*, (as, *dileu*, *to abolish*) the two *e*'s are retained. These vowels meet in the finite tenses which end in *em*, *ech*, *ent*, *ed*, *er*.

Dilecem. *Dilecech*. *Dilecent*. *Dileced*. *Dilecer*.

c) In verbs whose root-words end in *w* (as *galw*, to call, *enw-i*, to name, *gwrndaw*, to listen, *ciniaw-a*, to dine, *clywed*, to hear) two *w*'s meet in finite tenses ending in *wn*, *wch*, *wyf*, *wyd*; and one of them is omitted. [Some writers, however, retain both vowels in such verbs as *gwrndaw*, *ciniawa*, *clywed*.]

Galwn = galwnn.

Galwyf = galwwyf.

Gelweh = gelwweh.

Galwyd = galwwyd.

d) In verbs whose infinitives end in *oi* (as *ffoi*, to flee,) two *o*'s meet where the finite tenses end in *odd*, *of*, *o*, *om*, *och*, *ont*: one vowel is dropped, and its omission is indicated by a circumflex. [But some good writers retain both vowels.]

• Ffödd, or fföodd.

Fföm, or fföom.

Fföf, or fföof.

Fföch, or fföoch.

Ffö, or fföö.

Ffönt, or ffönt.

DEFINITION OF THE MOODS.

245. A *mood* expresses the mode or manner in which the verbal action or state is described.

246. "The *indicative* mood declares the action or state to exist simply, and as a fact."

247. The *imperative* mood commands, requests, or directs an action to be done, or a state to exist.

248. The *subjunctive* (or *conjunctive*) mood declares an action or state conceived as possible under certain conditions.

249. That which is called the "*potential* mood," (i. e., implying *liberty*, *power*, *obligation*, &c.) is expressed in Welsh, as in English, by the aid of auxiliary verbs; as *gallaf* fynyed, I may go; *medraf* ddysgu, I can learn; *dylech* fynyed, you ought to go.

250. "The *infinitive* mood is the notion of the verb standing in its simplest form, without reference to any particular subject."

TENSES OF VERBS.

251. A *tense* expresses the time of the action or state of the verb.

252. Tenses are divided into *past*, *present*, and *future*; or more minutely, into *present*, *imperfect*, *perfect*, *pluperfect*, *future*, and *future perfect*.

253. **Present.** *Present tense Indicative* describes an action or state conceived as doing or existing at the present time. The Welsh language has no inflected form to describe present tense for any of its verbs, except *bod*, to be, and the irregular *gwn*, I know, and its compound *adnâen*, I know: hence this tense either borrows the form of the future, as *dysgaf*, *dysgir fi*; or is expressed periphrastically by the inflections of *bod* and the present participle of the other verb; as *wyf yn dysgu*, I am learning; *ydys yn fy nysgu*, I am being taught. [One of the passive forms borrows *bod*, to be, and *cael*, to have; as *wyf yn cael fy nysgu*=I am having my teaching.]

(a) There is the same difference between *dysgaf* and *wyf yn dysgu*, as there is between *I learn* and *I am learning*; but this difference of meaning is not strictly attended to. The periphrastic form is the more frequent, and is always used when the time of an action is to be marked with exactness.

(b) Habit or custom is sometimes expressed by the future of *bod* with a participle: as, *byddaf yn myned yno*, I am in the habit of going there.

254. *The present Subjunctive* borrows the inflected form of the future perfect; as *dysgwylf*, *dysger fi*.

255. **Imperfect.** The *Imperfect Indicative* describes (α) "An action or state continuing and not completed, at some given point of past time." This is expressed in Welsh by the imperfect *oeddyn*, &c., with the present participle of the other verb; as *oeddyn yn dysgu*: *oeddid yn fy nysgu*.

(a) The same idea is expressed by the *inflected form* of a certain class of verbs: such as *gweled*, *cysgu*, *eistedd*.

256. (β) It describes *habits, customs, actions frequently repeated*, &c., and is expressed by the inflected form of the verb; as *dysgwn*, *dysgid fi*; or by the imperfect *byddwn*, &c., with the present participle of the other verb; as *byddwn yn dysgu*, *byddid yn fy nysgu*.

257. The *imperfect Subjunctive* borrows the inflected form of the Indicative, or the periphrastic made by "*byddwn*;" as, *dysgwn*, or *byddwn yn dysgu*, &c.

258. **Perfect.** The *perfect definite* (or *perfect present*) brings a past action into close connection with present time. (α) It is expressed by the present Indicative of *bod* with a past participle; as *wyf wedi dysgu*, I have learnt; *wyf wedi fy nysgu*, I have been taught. (β) It is expressed frequently, but not so properly, by the inflected form; as, *dysgais*, *dysgwyd fi*.

259. The *perfect indefinite* (or *aorist*) describes past time indefinitely, and is represented by the inflected form of the verb; as *dysgais*, I learnt; *dysgrwyd fi*, I was taught.

260. **Pluperfect.** The pluperfect Indic. describes an action as completed before the occurrence of another past action. It is expressed (α) by the imperf. of *bod* with a past participle; as *oeddwn wedi dysgu*, I had learnt; *oeddwn wedi* (or *wedi cael*) *fy nysgu*; I had been taught: (β) by the inflections of the verb; as *dysgaswn*, *dysgasid fi*. [The periphrastic occurs oftener than the inflected form.]

261. The *pluperfect Subjunctive* is expressed either by the inflected form of the plup. indic.; as, *dysgaswn*, *dysgasid fi*; or by *buaswn*, &c., with a participle; as, *buaswn wedi dysgu*, *buasid wedi fy nysgu*.

262. **Future.** The *future* speaks of an action or state in future time. It is expressed by inflection of the verbs; as, *dysgaf*, I will learn; *dysgir fi*, I shall be taught; and often by the future of the auxiliary *gwneyd*, to do, with the infinitive verb; as, *gwnaaf ddysgu*; *gwneir fy nysgu*.

263. *Duty, compulsion, &c.*, will be expressed by the future of *cael*, to have, with the other verb in the infinitive mood; as, *caf ddysgu*, I shall have to learn.

264. **Future perfect.** This tense expresses that an action shall have been completed before the occurrence of another action. It is expressed (α) by the first future of *bod* and the past participle of the other verb; as, *byddaf wedi dysgu*, I shall have learnt; *byddaf wedi fy nysgu*, I shall have been taught: (β) by an inflected form, in subjoined clauses; as, *pan ddysgwyf*, when I shall have learnt; *pan ddysger fi*, when I shall have been taught. [This latter form, however, occurs oftener in present Subjunctive.]

265. **A progressive state** is expressed by the inflections of *bod* with the present participle, or a compound of the present participle, of the other verb; as,

Present. *Wyf yn dysgu*, *I am learning.*

Imperf. *Oeddwn yn dysgu*, *I was learning.*

Perfect { *Bum yn dysgu,*
 { *Wyf wedi bod yn dysgu,* } *I have been learning.*

Plup. { *Buaswn yn dysgu,*
 { *Oeddwn wedi bod yn dysgu,* } *I had been learning.*

Future. *Byddaf yn dysgu*, *I shall be learning.*

PARTICIPLES.

266. Participles are expressed in Welsh by the Infinitive mood of any proposed verb, preceded by certain particles embracing the notion of present, past, and future time.

267. **Present.** Present active is formed by placing *yn*,* *gan*, (*can*), or *dan* (*tan*), before the verb; as, *yn dysgu*, *gan ddysgu*, *dan ddysgu*.

(a) *Yn* is followed by the *radical*; *gan* and *dan* by the *middle*.

(b) *Gan* and *dan* are employed to form apposition-participles; *yn* is employed to form both apposition-participles, and participles used in periphrastic verbs.

268. **Past.** Past active is formed by putting *wedi* (or *gwedi*) *ar ol*, or *yn ol*, before the verb; as, *wedi dysgu*, *ar ol dysgu*, *yn ol dysgu*.

(a) *Wedi* (or *gwedi*) *ar ol*, and *yn ol*, govern the *radical* sound.

(b) *Ar ol*, and *yn ol*, form apposition-participles; *wedi* (or *gwedi*) forms both apposition-participles, and participles used in periphrastic verbs.

269. **Future.** Future active is made by putting *ar*, or *ar fedr* (cf. L. *futurus*), before the verb; as, *ar ddysgu*, *ar fedr dysgu*.

(a) *Ar* governs the *middle*; *ar fedr*, the *radical* sound.

270. The **passive participle** of all tenses is distinguished from the active by having the *possessive pronoun* inserted between the time-defining particle and the verb; as, present, *yn fy nysgu*; past, *wedi fy nysgu*; future, *ar fy nysgu*.

Another form for the passive of all tenses is made by inserting the auxiliary *cael* (to have) between the particle of time and the pronoun; as, *yn cael fy nysgu*; *wedi cael fy nysgu*; *ar gael fy nysgu*. This form occurs oftener than the preceding.

271. **Negation** is expressed by *heb*, without. In present and future *heb fod* (without being) is followed by the positive forms: in perfect past *heb* is substituted for *wedi*, *ar ol*, or *yn ol*.

* Probably the particle *yn* is cognate with the Greek *ων*, the Latin *ens*, and the English *ing*. (*Διδάσκων*, *docens*, *teaching*, *yn dysgu*.) Others are of opinion that it signifies *in*, or *in the act of*; so that '*yn dysgu*' would be literally translated *in the act of learn*.

- Present. Heb fod yn dysgu. (*Active.*)
 Heb fod yn eael fy nysgu. (*Passive.*)
 Perf. past. Heb ddysgu. (*Active.*)
 Heb gael fy nysgu. (*Passive.*)
 Future. Heb fod ar ddysgu. (*Active.*)
 Heb fod ar gael fy nysgu. (*Passive.*)

272. **Edig** and **adwy**. *Edig* has in some words the force of a past passive participle; as, *cyfieithedig gan Arthur*, translated by Arthur: in other words it is looked upon as an adjective termination; as, *dyn dysgedig*, a learned man. *Adwy* implies power in future time, corresponding to 'able,' as *cuff-aeladwy*, obtainable.

CONJUGATION OF VERBS.

The verb **BOD**, *to be*.

273. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. *I am*.

Sing. 1. Wyf or ydwyf.*	Pl. 1. Ym, or ydym.
2. Wyt or ydwyt.	2. Ych, or ydych.
3. Yw,† or ydyw, mae, sydd (sy), oes.‡	3. Ynt, or ydynt. maent, sydd (sy), oes.

* There is no difference of meaning between *wyf* and *ydwyf*, &c. In South Wales the simple form of the verb is preferred: *wyf, wyt, yw; ym, ych, ynt*. In North Wales the compound form is preferred: *ydwyf, ydwyt, ydyw; ydym, ydych, ydynt*.

Yd is probably cognate with the Latin *id*, and might have been formerly employed as a nom. before all persons, like *it* in English. (*It is I, it is they*.)

Wyf, wyt, &c., are compounded of *yw* with a pronoun: thus, *wyf* = *yw-mi*; *wyt* = *yw-ti*; *ym* = *yw-ymēis*; *ych* = *yw-chwi*; *ynt* = *yw-hwynt*.

Sydd is compounded of *sy* and *ydd* = *id*, and signifies *it is*.

Oes comes, perhaps, from *o* = he or it, and *es* = *ys* and Eng. *is*: *oes* = he, or it is.

Mae is, perhaps, made up either of *ma*, a place, or of *μáω*, I move, and the pron. *e*, he or it. If from *μáω*, *mae* will signify *he is moving*, and hence *is existing*. With this compare the two Greek words *εἶμι*, I go, and *εἰμι*, I am.

† The difference of meaning between *yw* (or *ydyw*) *mae, sydd*, and *oes*, is explained under the Syntax of "Bod." § § 614, &c.

‡ The form *ydoes*, contracted 'does, still exists in colloquial language. "Os 'does dim teimlad ynddo" = os *ydoes*.

Imperfect. *a) I was.*

Sing. 1. Oeddw.	Pl. 1. Oeddem, <i>or</i> oeddym.
2. Oeddit.	2. Oeddech, <i>or</i> oeddych.
3. Oedd, <i>or</i> ydoedd.	3. Oeddent, <i>or</i> oeddynt.

Contracted form.

Sing. 1. Own.	Pl. 1. Oem.
2. Oit.	2. Oech.
	3. Oent.

b) I was wont, I used, &c. (of habit or custom).

Sing. 1. Byddwn.	Pl. 1. Byddem, <i>or</i> byddym.
2. Byddit.	2. Byddech, <i>or</i> byddydh.
3. Byddai.	3. Byddent, <i>or</i> byddynt.

Perfect indefinite. *I have been.*

Sing. 1. Bum.*	Pl. 1. Buom, <i>or</i> buasom.
2. Buost.	2. Buoch, <i>or</i> buasoch.
3. Bu.	3. Buont, buant, <i>or</i> buasant.

Colloquial form.

Sing. 1. Buo, buais.	2. Buaist.	3. Buodd, bues.
----------------------	------------	-----------------

Perfect definite. *I have been.*

Sing. 1. Wyf wedi bod.	Pl. 1. Ym wedi bod.
2. Wyt wedi bod.	2. Ych wedi bod.
3. Mae, &c., wedi bod.	3. Maent, &c., wedi bod.

Pluperfect. *a) I had been.*

Sing. 1. Buaswn.	Pl. 1. Buasem, <i>or</i> buesym.
2. Buasit.	2. Buasech, <i>or</i> buesych.
3. Buasai.	3. Buasent, <i>or</i> buesynt.

b) I had been.

Sing. 1. Oeddw wedi bod.	Pl. 1. Oeddem wedi bod.
2. Oeddit wedi bod.	2. Oeddech wedi bod.
3. Oedd wedi bod.	3. Oeddent wedi bod.

* *Bum* is compounded of *bu* and *mi* (or *ym*.) The remaining terminations of *bod* are the same as those of *dysgu*.

Future. *I shall be.*

Sing. 1. Byddaf.	Pl. 1. Byddwn.
2. Byddi.	2. Byddwch.
3. Bydd or bydda.	3. Byddant.

Future perfect. *a) I shall have been.*

Sing. 1. Byddaf wedi bod.	Pl. 1. Byddwn wedi bod.
2. Byddi wedi bod.	2. Byddwch wedi bod.
3. Bydd (or bydda) wedi bod.	3. Byddant wedi bod.

b) I shall have been (in subjoined clauses.)

Sing. 1. Byddwyf or byddof.	Pl. 1. Byddom.
2. Byddych, -ech, or -ot.	2. Byddoch.
3. Byddo.	3. Byddont.

Contracted form.

Sing. 1. Bwyf, bôf.	Pl. 1. Bôm.
2. Bÿch, bêch, bôt.	2. Bôch.
3. Bo.	3. Bônt.

274. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

a) Be thou.

Sing. 1. —	Pl. 1. Byddwn.
2. Bydd or bydda.	2. Byddwch.
3. Bydded.	3. Byddant, -ont, -ent.

Contracted form.

Sing. 3. Boed, poed, bid.	Pl. 3. Boent, bint.
---------------------------	---------------------

b) Let me be, or may I be.

Sing. 1. Bydded i mi fod.	Pl. 1. Bydded i ni fod.
2. Bydded i ti fod.	2. Bydded i chwi fod.
3. Bydded iddo or iddi fod.	3. Bydded iddynt fod.

275. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. *I may be.*

a) Byddwyf, &c.: see form *b)* of Future Perfect.

b) Byddo i mi fod, &c.

Imperfect. *I would or should be.*

Sing. 1. Byddwn.	Pl. 1. Byddem (byddym.)
2. Byddit.	2. Byddech (byddyeh.)
3. Byddai.	3. Byddent (byddynt.)

Contracted form.

Sing. 1. Bawn.*	Pl. 1. Baem.
2. Bait.	2. Baech.
3. Bai.	3. Baent.

Pluperfect. *I should have been.*

Buaswn, &c.: see form *a*) of Plup. Indicative.

276. INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present and imperf. Bod, *to be; that I am or was* (in subjoined clauses.)

Perf. and plup. Bod wedi bod, *darfod bod, to have been; that I have or had been* (in subjoined clauses.)

Future. Bod ar fod, bod ar fedr bod, *to be about to be; that I am about to be* (in subjoined clauses.)

277. PARTICIPLES.

Present. Yn bod, gàn fod, dân (*or tàn*) fod, *being.*

Past. Wedi (*or gwedi*) bod, ar ol bod, yn ol bod, *having been.*

Future. Ar fod, ar fedr bod, *about to be.*

Verbal adjectives. Bodedig, *endued with being.* Bodadwy, *capable of being.*

IMPERSONAL FORM OF BOD.

278. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. Ys† (S. W.), ydys (N. W.), *it is, or there is, &c.*

* *Ped*, if, and the contracted form *bawn*, &c., sometimes coalesce into one word. Sing. Pettwn (*if I were*) pettit, pettai. Pl. Pettym, pettych, pettynt. "Mi a fynwn *pettych* chwi oll yn llefaru â thafodau dyeithr." 1 Cor. xiv. 5.

Ped is likewise prefixed to the pluperfect. Sing. Pettaswn (*if I had been*), pettasit, pettasai. Pl. Pettasem, pettasech, pettasent.

† *Ys* appears to be the same with the Eng. *is*, and *es* of the Gr. Lat. and Welsh, in *es-ti*, *es-t*, *o-es*. It is employed in forming the perfect and plup. tenses of Welsh verbs—taking the form *os* in *buost*=*bu-os-ti*, and *as* in other places; as, *carais*=*car-as-i*; *caraist*=*car-as-ti*.

Byddir or byddys (*of usage.*)

Imperf. Oeddid, *it was.* Byddid (*of usage.*)

Perfect indef. Buwyd or bued

Perfect def. Ys or ydys wedi bod } *it has been.*

Pluperf. Buasid (*or buesid*); oeddid wedi bod, *it had been.*

Future. Byddir, *it will or shall be.*

Fut. perf. Bydder (c. baer); byddir (*or byddys*) wedi bod, *it will have been.*

279. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Present. Bydder, *let be.*

280. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Pr. Bydder (c. baer), *it may be.*

Imperf. Byddid (c. baid), *it would be.*

Plup. Buasid (*or buesid*), *it would have been.*

* * * Of the compound verbs of Bod, see § 321.

AUXILIARY VERBS.

281. Auxiliary verbs serve to produce additional forms to other verbs, and to particularize their signification, and the time of action or event. The auxiliaries are *bod*, *darfod*, *cael*, and *gwneyd*, to which are usually added *gallu* and *medru*, *dylwn*, *dichon*, *rhaid*, and *mynu*.

282. **Gallu** and **medru**. "*Medru* implies skill and ability, whether natural or acquired, on the part of the person speaking. *Gallu* implies power, permission, or the non-existence of any external impediment. Thus *gallu* corresponds nearly to 'may,' *medru* to 'can.'"^{*} They are conjugated regularly. Gallaf fyned, *I may go.* Medraf ddysgu, *I can learn.*

283. **Dylwn** (fr. an obsolete infin. *dylu*) implies *duty*, like the Eng. 'I ought.' It is a defective verb, having only the imperfect tense, which is used to denote present obligation, and the pluperfect, which is used to denote past obligation.

Dylwn fyned, *I ought to go.* Impers. Dylid.

Dylaswn fyned, *I ought to have gone.* Impers. Dylasid.

Dylaswn fod wedi myned, *I ought to have been gone.*

* T. J. Hughes on Syntax.

284. **Dichon** (= Gr. *τυγχάνω*) is used (a) impersonally, implying *contingency* = *it may be, perhaps*, and followed by a transitive clause. *Dichon fy mod yn cyfeiliorni, it may be that I err.* *Dichon i mi ddywedyd hyn, it may be that I said this.* (b) It implies *power*, corresponding to *may, can, is able*. *Dichon dyn ddyoddef llawer, man can bear much.* *Pwy a ddichon sefyll? who can stand?* *Ni ddichon dyn ei draethu, man cannot relate it.* (c) When the first or second person is spoken of, *dichon* is used impersonally, and followed by the prep. *i*, to, and a pron. *Ni ddichon i mi sefyll = it is not possible for me to stand; I cannot stand.*

285. **Rhaid** is both a noun and a verb. It corresponds to 'must.'

a) In the following examples it is strictly a *noun*.

Y mae yn rhaid i mi ddysgu,	} <i>there is need for me to learn</i> = <i>I must learn.</i>
Rhaid yw i mi ddysgu,	
Rhaid i mi ddysgu (omitting the verb)	

b) In these examples it is a *verb*, and, like *must*, is indeclinable.

Myfi a raid ddysgu,	} <i>It is I (or you) that must learn.</i>
Tydi a raid ddysgu,	

c) Negative.

Nid rhaid i mi ddysgu, *I have no need to learn.*
Rhaid i mi beidio â dysgu, *I must not learn.*

286. **Cael** strictly signifies *to have*. As an auxiliary to *active* verbs, it implies liberty, or freedom from external hindrances; permission, compulsion, &c.; as, *caf ddysgu*. When an auxiliary to *passive* verbs it retains its radical signification: as, *yr wyf yn cael fy nysgu*.

287. **Gwneyd**, *to do*, and **darfod**, *to cease*, serve merely to give a different form to some of the tenses; as, *gwnaethym ddysgu, I learnt*: *darfu i mi ddysgu, I learnt*.

(a) *Cael* and *gwneyd* are irregular verbs, and are classified with them.

(b) *Darfod* is a compound of *bod*, and is conjugated like it. When an auxiliary it is used impersonally, and followed by the prep. *i* with its case; as, *darfu i mi ddysgu*. The forms *darfum ddysgu, darfuost ddysgu, &c.*, are probably corrupted forms for *darfu i mi ddysgu, darfu i ti ddysgu, &c.*

288. **Mynu** (fr. *myn*, the will) implies *will* or *determination*, and is conjugated regularly. *Mynaf ddyfod, I will have to come; I will come.*

CONJUGATION OF A REGULAR VERB.

289. 'There are two conjugations; one by *inflection*, and the other by *auxiliaries*.'

290. *Terminations of the inflected form.**

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Sing. 1. -af.	Pl. 1. -wn.
2. -i.	2. -wch.
3. -a (or root).	3. -ant.

Imperfect.

Sing. 1. -wn.	Pl. 1. -em.
2. -it.	2. -ech.
3. -ai.	3. -ent.

Perfect.

Sing. 1. -ais.	Pl. 1. -asom.
2. -aist.	2. -asoch.
3. -odd.	3. -asant.

Pluperfect.

Sing. 1. -aswn.	Pl. 1. -asem.
2. -asit.	2. -asech.
3. -asai.	3. -asent.

Future.

Sing. 1. -af.	Pl. 1. -wn.
2. -i.	2. -wch.
3. -a (or root).	3. -ant.

Future perfect.

Sing. 1. -wyf (or -of.)	Pl. 1. -om.
2. -ych (-ech or -ot.)	2. -och.
3. -o.	3. -ont.

IMPERATIVE PRESENT.

Sing. 1. -
2. -a (or root).
3. -ed.

Pl. 1. -wn.
2. -wch.
3. -ant (-ont, -ent).

* The terminations of verbs are changes and contractions of personal pronouns, as will appear from the subjoined analysis:—

Pres. Af = *fi*; i = *di*; a = *e*? Wn = *ni*; wch = *chwi*; ant = *hwynt*. (Cf. L. *amant*.)

Imperf. Wn = *mi*? it = *ti*; a = *e*? Em = ἡμεῖς; ech = *chwi*; ent = *hwynt*.

Perf. Ais = *as i*; aist = *as ti*; odd, cf. *amavit*, *loved*. Asom = *as ἡμεῖς*; asoch = *as chwi*; asant = *as hwynt*. [*As* is a verb, see § 278, *note*.]

Plup. Aswn = *as mi*? asit = *as ti*; asai = *as e*? Asem = *as ἡμεῖς*; asech = *as chwi*; asent = *as hwynt*. [Cf. L. *issem*, *isses*, &c.]

Future, see *present*.

Fut. perf. Wyf, of = *fi*; ot = *ti*; o = *o*. Om = ἡμεῖς; och = *chwi*; ont = *hwynt*.

Imperative. A, cf. L. *ama*; ed, cf. L. *amet*. Wn = *ni*; wch = *chwi*; ant = *hwynt*.

But Dr. Pughe seems to be of opinion, that these suffixes are to be derived from primitive verbs; such as *au*, *addu*, &c. His words are; "What appears as the inflections are identified, on due examination, to be these primitive verbs affixed to nouns, so as to form a verbal characteristic, in the different moods and tenses." (Gram. p. 65.)

SUBJUNCTIVE. Present = fut. perf. Imperf. = imperf. indic. Pluperfect = plup. indic.

INFINITIVE: see §§ 229, 230.

DYSGU, *to learn or teach.*

ACTIVE VOICE.

291. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. a) *I learn.*

Sing. 1. Dysgaf.*	Pl. 1. Dysgwn.
2. Dysgi.	2. Dysgwch.
3. Dysg or dysga.	3. Dysgant.

b) *I am learning; I learn.*

Sing. 1. Wyf yn dysgu.†	Pl. 1. Ym yn dysgu.
2. Wyt yn dysgu.	2. Ych yn dysgu.
3. Mae, &c., yn dysgu.	3. Maent, &c., yn dysgu.

c) Of habit or custom: *I am wont to learn.* Byddaf, &c. yn dysgu.

Imperfect. a) generally of habit or custom: *I used to learn, &c.*

Sing. 1. Dysgwn.	Pl. 1. Dysgem.‡
2. Dysgit.	2. Dysgech.
3. Dysgai.	3. Dysgent.

b) of habit or custom: *I used to learn.*

Sing. 1. Byddwn yn dysgu.	Pl. 1. Byddem yn dysgu.
2. Byddit yn dysgu.	2. Byddech yn dysgu.
3. Byddai yn dysgu.	3. Byddent yn dysgu.

c) *I was learning.*

Sing. 1. Oeddwn yn dysgu.	Pl. 1. Oeddem yn dysgu.
2. Oeddit yn dysgu.	2. Oeddech yn dysgu.
3. Oedd yn dysgu.	3. Oeddent yn dysgu.

* The subjoined is the form given by some grammarians for the present tense of the indicative, and is adopted by a few writers of the present day.

Sing. 1. Dysgwyl.	Pl. 1. Dysgym.
2. Dysgwyt.	2. Dysgych.
3. Dysgyw.	3. Dysgynt.

† When emphasis or antithesis is to be expressed, the infin. may take precedence. Pr., dysgu yr wyf. Imperf., dysgu yr oeddwn. Perf., wedi dysgu yr wyf, &c.

‡ The pl. of the imperf. sometimes ends in *ym, ych, ynt.* (Gen. xlii. 43.)

Perfect. a) *Perfect indefinite: I learnt.*

Sing. 1. Dysgais.	Pl. 1. Dysgasom.
2. Dysgaist.	2. Dysgasoch.
3. Dysgodd.*	3. Dysgasant.

b) Darfu i mi ddysgu, &c.

c) *Perfect definite: I have learnt.*

Sing. 1. Wyf wedi dysgu.	Pl. 1. Ym wedi dysgu.
2. Wyt wedi dysgu.	2. Ych wedi dysgu.
3. Mae, &c., wedi dysgu.	3. Maent, &c., wedi dysgu.

Pluperfect. a) *I had learnt.*

Sing. 1. Dysgaswn.	Pl. 1. Dysgasem.†
2. Dysgasit.	2. Dysgasech.
3. Dysgasai.	3. Dysgasent.

(a) The inflected forms, both of the active and passive of this tense, are oftener used in the subjunctive; but when they can be employed in the indicative without rendering the sentence ambiguous, they are to be preferred to the periphrastic "*oeddwn wedi dysgu*," as being more concise.

b) *I had learnt.*

Sing. 1. Oeddwn wedi dysgu.	Pl. 1. Oeddem wedi dysgu.
2. Oeddit wedi dysgu.	2. Oeddech wedi dysgu.
3. Oedd wedi dysgu.	3. Oeddent wedi dysgu.

c) Byddwn wedi dysgu, &c., of habit or custom.

Future. a) *I will learn.*

Sing. 1. Dysgaf.	Pl. 1. Dysgwn.
2. Dysgi.	2. Dysgwch.
3. Dysg, or dysga.‡	3. Dysgant.

* The third pers. sing. ends sometimes in *es*; in the poets in *awdd*; and in *is*, *ws*, and *wys* in the colloquial language of South Wales. *As* is occasionally met with.

† Sometimes *dysgesym*, *dysgesych*, *dysgesynt*.

‡ The third pers. sing. may always be made to end in *a*; as, *dysga*, *cara*, *ysgrifena*. But *a* is frequently omitted, and the person made to consist of the root of the verb, either in its pure state, or with a change of some of its vowels.

The following remarks are added to show how this person is formed by inflection of vowels:—

(a) *A* is changed into *ai*; as *saf*, *saif*; *par*, *pair*; *caff*-*ael*, *caiff*.

b) Caf ddysgu, &c., *permission, compulsion, 'shall,' &c.*

c) Gwnaf ddysgu, &c., *promise.*

Future perfect. a) *I shall have learnt* (in subjoined clauses.)

Sing. 1. Dysgwyf, <i>or</i> -of.	Pl. 1. Dysgom.
2. Dysgych, -ech, <i>or</i> -ot.	2. Dysgoch.
3. Dysgo.	3. Dysgont.

b) *I shall have learnt.*

Sing. 1. Byddaf wedi dysgu.	Pl. 1. Byddwn wedi dysgu.
2. Byddi wedi dysgu.	2. Byddwch wedi dysgu.
3. Bydd wedi dysgu.	3. Byddant wedi dysgu.

292. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Present. a) *Learn thou.*

Sing. 1. ———*	Pl. 1. Dysgwn.
2. Dysg, <i>or</i> dysga.†	2. Dysgwch.
3. Dysged.	3. Dysgant, -ont, -ent.

(b) *A* is changed into *ei*; as *tafl, teifl; ymafl, ymeifl; gall, geill; cadw, ceidw; galw, geihw; llanw, lleinw; dal, deil.*

(c) *A* of the penult, and *a* of the ultima are changed into *e, ei*, respectively; as *gwahardd, gweheirdd; gwarchadw, gwercheidw.*

(d) *A* of the penult, and *a* or *e* of the ultima are changed into *e, y*, respectively; as *attal, ettyl; para, pery; ateb, etyb; gwared, gweryd; darllen, derllyn.* *Bwyta* is also changed into *bwyty*.

(e) *A* and *o* of the penult, and *o* (or *aw*) of the ult. are changed into *e, y*, respectively; as *aros, erys; marchog, merchyg; adrodd, edrydd; dangos, dengys; gwrandaw, gwrendy; taraw, tery; gadaw, gedy; addaw, eddy; gosod, gesyd.*

(f) *O* in monosyllables, or in the ult. of words of more than one syllable, is very frequently changed into *y*; as, *tro, try; tor, tyr; rho, dyry; rhodd, rhydd; ffo, ffy; golch, gylch; dod, dyd; clo, cly; coll, cyll; llosg, llysg; cyfod, cyfyd; deffro, deffry; cyffro, cyffry; diffodd, di-ffydd; ymdro, ymdry; gwrthod, gwrthyd.*

In colloquial language this person is made to end in *iff*; as, *dysgiff, ys-grifeniff*, which is condemned by Dr. Davies as "most corrupt." Perhaps *iff* is a corruption of the pronoun *ef*, he; as *dysgiff=dysgef*; or cognate with the Latin *eb*, as in *docebit*.

* Occasionally we meet with a first pers. imper. "*Yna haucyf fi, a bwytaed arall,*" Job xxxi. 8. "*Gwelwyf dy ddialedd arnynt,*" Jer. xi. 20.

† The second pers. of the imper., may, like the third pers. sing. fut. indic., be made to end in *a*; as, *dysga, gwrthoda, cara*; but the suffix is very frequently omitted; as, *dysg, gwrthod, car.*

b) *Let me learn, may I learn.*

Sing. 1. Bydded i mi ddysgu. Pl. 1. Bydded i ni ddysgu.
 2. Bydded i ti ddysgu. 2. Bydded i chwi ddysgu.
 3. Bydded iddo (iddi) ddysgu. 3. Bydded iddynt ddysgu.

(a) *Moes, gad, rho, and dyro* (pl. *mocsuwh, gadewch, rhoewch*) are frequently auxiliaries of the Imperative = *let*. *Moes i mi glywed, let me hear. Gad i mi weled, let me see. Dyro i mi wybod, let me know.*

293. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. *I may learn.*

- a) *Dysgwyf, &c.* See form a) of the Future Perfect.
 b) *Byddo i mi ddysgu, &c.*

Imperfect. *I should learn.*

- a) *Dysgwn, &c.* See form a) of the Imperf. Indicative.
 b) *Byddai i mi ddysgu, &c.*

Pluperfect. *I should have learnt.*

- a) *Dysgaswn, &c.* See a) of the Plup. Indicative.
 b) *Buaswn wedi dysgu, &c.*
 c) *Buasai i mi ddysgu, &c.*

294. INFINITIVE MOOD.

Dysgu, to learn, may refer to all tenses according to the preceding verb or particle on which it depends.

- Bwriadaf ddysgu, *I intend to learn.*
 Bwriedais ddysgu, *I intended to learn.*
 Deuaf i ddysgu, *I will come to learn.*

Present and imperf. *Bod yn dysgu, to be learning, to learn; that I am or was learning*, used in subordinate sentences.

Perf. and plup. *Darfod i mi ddysgu; dysgu o honof; i mi ddysgu; bod wedi dysgu, to have learnt; that I learnt; that I have or had learnt*, used in subordinate sentences.

Future. *Bod ar ddysgu; bod ar fedr dysgu, to be about to learn; that I am about to learn*, used in subordinate sentences.

295. PARTICIPLES.

Present. Yn dysgu; gàn ddysgu; dân ddysgu, *learning*.

Past. Wedi (*or* gwedi) dysgu; ar ol dysgu, yn ol dysgu, *having learnt*.

Future. Ar ddysgu, ar fedr dysgu, *about to learn*.

When the participle is followed by a personal pronoun as its object, expressed or understood, a corresponding possessive pronoun will intervene between the particle of time and the infinitive.

Present, *teaching me, &c.*

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| 1. Yn fy nysgu <i>i</i> . | 1. Yn ein dysgu <i>ni</i> . |
| 2. Yn dy ddysgu <i>di</i> . | 2. Yn eich dysgu <i>chwi</i> . |
| 3. { Yn ei ddysgu <i>ef</i> . | 3. Yn eu dysgu <i>hwy</i> . |
| { Yn ei dysgu <i>hi</i> . | |

Past, *having taught me, &c.*

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Wedi fy nysgu <i>i</i> . | 1. Wedi ein dysgu <i>ni</i> . |
| 2. Wedi dy ddysgu <i>di</i> . | 2. Wedi eich dysgu <i>chwi</i> . |
| 3. { Wedi ei ddysgu <i>ef</i> . | 3. Wedi eu dysgu <i>hwy</i> . |
| { Wedi ei dysgu <i>hi</i> . | |

Future, *about to teach me, &c.*

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| 1. Ar fy nysgu <i>i</i> . | 1. Ar ein dysgu <i>ni</i> . |
| 2. Ar dy ddysgu <i>di</i> . | 2. Ar eich dysgu <i>chwi</i> . |
| 3. { Ar ei ddysgu <i>ef</i> . | 3. Ar eu dysgu <i>hwy</i> . |
| { Ar ei dysgu <i>hi</i> . | |

PASSIVE VOICE.

296. The passive voice is expressed either by *inflection* or by *periphrasis*.

297. The **inflected** form has only one termination for each tense: thus,

Pres.	Imperf.	Perf.	Plup.	Fut.
Ir; as,	Id; as,	Wyd (<i>or</i> ed); as,	Asid; as,	Ir; as,
Dysgir.	Dysgid.	Dysgwyd (<i>or</i> dysged).	Dysgasid.	Dysgir.

Fut. perf., Imperative, and Pres. Subjunctive,

Er; as, Dysger.

298. These inflections are made to agree with all persons, whether singular or plural, standing as the nominative case; so that the person and number of the verb are to be determined by the person and number of the nominative case. Thus, *dysgir* when put in construction with *mi* (as *dysgir fi*) is of the first person, and sing. number; when put in construction with *chwi* (as *dysgir chwi*) it is in the second person, plural number.

299. A proposition may be expressed by this form in three different ways: (1) with the nominative case before the verb; as *mi a ddysgir*: (2) with the nom. after the verb; as *dysgir fi*: (3) with a possessive pronoun before the verb with or without the nom. case after the verb; as *fe'm dysgir*; *fe'm dysgir i*.

300. The **periphrastic** is formed (1) of the inflections of *bod* with a passive participle of the verb specified; as *wyf yn cael fy nysgu*; (2) of the inflections of the impersonal form of *bod* with active participles of the other verb; as *ydys yn fy nysgu*.

301. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. *I am being taught, &c.*

[*Inflected.*]

- | | |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| a) Sing. 1. <i>Mi a ddysgir.</i> | Pl. 1. <i>Ni a ddysgir.</i> |
| 2. <i>Ti a ddysgir.</i> | 2. <i>Chwi a ddysgir.</i> |
| 3. <i>Efe, &c., a ddysgir.</i> | 3. <i>Hwy, &c., a ddysgir.</i> |

Observe that the particle *a* is followed by the *middle* sound.

- | | |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| b) Sing. 1. <i>Dysgir fi.</i> | Pl. 1. <i>Dysgir ni.</i> |
| 2. <i>Dysgir di.</i> | 2. <i>Dysgir chwi.</i> |
| 3. <i>Dysgir ef, &c.</i> | 3. <i>Dysgir hwy, &c.</i> |

Observe that *mi* and *ti* assume the *middle* sound: *fi, di*.


- | | |
|---------------------------------|----------------------------|
| c) Sing. 1. <i>Fe'm dysgir.</i> | Pl. 1. <i>Fe'n dysgir.</i> |
| 2. <i>Fe'th ddysgir.</i> | 2. <i>Fe'ch dysgir.</i> |
| 3. <i>Fe'i dysgir.</i> | 3. <i>Fe'u dysgir.</i> |

(a) *Fe* is merely an auxiliary pronoun, for which *fo* and *e* are sometimes employed; as, *fo'm dysgir*; *e'm dysgir*. In negative clauses, and in subjoined clauses after conjunctions hypothetical (*pe, ped*), explanatory (*y*), temporal (*pan, tra, hyd, &c.*), and conjunctions of purpose and of effect (*mal, fal, fel*), and also after adverbs or adverbial phrases, which have an

antithetical signification, the auxiliary *fe*, *fo*, or *e* is dismissed. *Ni'm* dysgir; *pe'm* dysgid; *fel y'm* dysger, &c. *Fe'm*, &c., may also be written *fe ym* or *fe a'm*: as, *fe ym* dysgir; *fe a'm* dysgir.


(b) Observe that the second person *yth* (contr. *'th*) takes the *middle* sound after it. *Fe* is followed by the same sound; as, *fe ddysgir* Arthur.

(c) The personal pronouns are generally omitted in this form, the possessive being thought sufficient to indicate the person; but when they are expressed, they are thus written: 1st pers. *i*; 2nd pers. *di*; 3rd pers. *ef*, *e*, *o*; as *fe'm* dysgir *i*; *fe'th* ddysgir *di*; *fe'i* dysgir *ef*, *e*, *o*.


 When the student has learnt the three foregoing examples of the present of the inflected form, he will be enabled to acquire the conjugation of the other tenses without any trouble, as he has only to substitute the inflections of those tenses (see above) for that of the present.

[Periphrastic.]

- d) Sing. 1. *Wyf yn cael fy nysgu.* Pl. 1. *Ym yn cael ein dysgu.*
 2. *Wyt yn cael dy ddysgu.* 2. *Ych yn cael eich dysgu.*
 3. *Mae, &c., yn cael ei ddysgu.* 3. *Maent, &c., yn cael eu dysgu.*

 A knowledge of the inflections of *bod*, together with the passive participles of *dysgu*, is all that is necessary to master this form throughout.

- e) Sing. 1. *Ydys yn fy nysgu.* Pl. 1. *Ydys yn ein dysgu.*
 2. *Ydys yn dy ddysgu.* 2. *Ydys yn eich dysgu.*
 3. *Ydys yn ei ddysgu, &c.* 3. *Ydys yn eu dysgu, &c.*

 A knowledge of the *impersonal* form of *bod*, together with the active participles of *dysgu*, is all that is necessary to master the whole of this form.

Imperfect. *I was (or used to be) taught.*

- | | |
|--|--|
| a) 1. <i>Mi a ddysgid.</i> | 1. <i>Ni a ddysgid.</i> |
| 2. <i>Ti a ddysgid.</i> | 2. <i>Chwi a ddysgid.</i> |
| 3. <i>Efe a ddysgid.</i> | 3. <i>Hwy a ddysgid.</i> |
| b) <i>Dysgid fi, &c.</i> | e) <i>Oeddid yn fy nysgu, &c.</i> |
| c) <i>Fe'm dysgid, &c.</i> | f) <i>Byddwn yn cael fy nysgu, &c.</i> |
| d) <i>Oeddwn yn cael fy nysgu, &c.</i> | g) <i>Byddid yn fy nysgu, &c.</i> |

Perfect indefinite. *I was taught.*

- | | |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| a) 1. <i>Mi a ddysgwyd.*</i> | 1. <i>Ni a ddysgwyd.</i> |
| 2. <i>Ti a ddysgwyd.</i> | 2. <i>Chwi a ddysgwyd.</i> |
| 3. <i>Efe a ddysgwyd.</i> | 3. <i>Hwy a ddysgwyd.</i> |
| b) <i>Dysgwyd fi, &c.</i> | c) <i>Fe'm dysgwyd, &c.</i> |

* Or, *mi a ddysged, &c.*

Perfect definite. *I have been taught.*

- a) 1. Wyf wedi cael fy nysgu. 1. Ym wedi cael ein dysgu.
 2. Wyt wedi cael dy ddysgu. 2. Ych wedi cael eich dysgu.
 3. Mae wedi cael ei ddysgu. 3. Maent wedi cael eu dysgu.
- b) Wyf wedi fy nysgu, &c. c) Ydys wedi fy nysgu, &c.

Pluperfect. *I had been taught.*

- a) 1. Mi a ddysgasid. 1. Ni a ddysgasid.
 Ti a ddysgasid. 2. Chwi a ddysgasid.
 Efe a ddysgasid. 3. Hwyl a ddysgasid.
- b) Dysgasid fi, &c. d) Oeddwn wedi (or wedi cael) fy nysgu, &c.
 c) Fe'm dysgasid, &c. e) Oeddid wedi fy nysgu, &c.

Future. *I shall be taught.*

- a) 1. Mi a ddysgir. 1. Ni a ddysgir.
 2. Ti a ddysgir. 2. Chwi a ddysgir.
 3. Efe a ddysgir. 3. Hwyl a ddysgir.
- b) Dysgir fi, &c. c) Fe'm dysgir, &c.
 d) Caf fy nysgu, &c.

Future perfect. *I shall have been taught* (in subjoined clauses.)

- a) 1. Dysger fi. 1. Dysger ni.
 2. Dysger di. 2. Dysger chwi.
 3. Dysger ef or hi. 3. Dysger hwyl.
- b) Byddaf wedi (or wedi cael) fy nysgu, &c. c) Byddir (or byddys) wedi fy nysgu, &c.

302. IMPERATIVE MOOD. *Let me be taught.*

- a) Like Future Perfect, form a).
- b) 1. Bydded i mi gael fy nysgu. 1. Bydded i ni gael ein dysgu.
 2. Bydded i ti gael dy ddysgu. 2. Bydded i chwi gael eich dysgu.
 3. Bydded iddo gael ei ddysgu. 3. Bydded iddynt gael eu dysgu.

303. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. *I may be taught.*

- | | |
|----------------------------------|---------------------|
| a) 1. Dysger fi. | 1. Dysger ni. |
| 2. Dysger di. | 2. Dysger chwi. |
| 3. Dysger ef. | 3. Dysger hwy. |
| b) Mi a ddysger, &c.* | c) Y'm† dysger, &c. |
| d) Byddo i mi gael fy nysgu, &c. | |

Imperfect. *I should or would be taught.*

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------|
| a) 1. Dysgid fi. | 1. Dysgid ni. |
| 2. Dysgid di. | 2. Dysgid chwi. |
| 3. Dysgid ef. | 3. Dysgid hwy. |
| b) Mi a ddysgid, &c. | c) Y'm dysgid, &c. |
| d) Byddai i mi gael fy nysgn, &c. | |

Pluperfect. *I should or would have been taught.*

- | | |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| a) 1. Dysgasid fi. | 1. Dysgasid ni. |
| 2. Dysgasid di. | 2. Dysgasid chwi. |
| 3. Dysgasid ef. | 3. Dysgasid hwy. |
| b) Mi a ddysgasid, &c. | e) Buasid wedi fy nysgu, &c. |
| c) Y'm dysgasid, &c. | f) Buasai i mi gael fy nysgu, &c. |
| d) Buaswn wedi (or wedi cael) fy nysgu, &c. | |

INFINITIVE MOOD.

304. 'In Welsh there is no inflection of the verb to express the Infinitive passive; but that state is indicated by combinations of the possessive pronouns with the Infinitive active,' with or without auxiliary verbs.

305. When the possessive refers to a personal pronoun coming after the Infinitive, expressed or understood, the verb is *active*; as, daeth i'm dysgu (i) *he came to teach*

* The form "*dysger fi*," occurs oftener in the Subjunctive than "*mi a ddysger*."

† As the Subjunctive is usually introduced by such particles as *fel*, *pe*, *y*, *§c.*, *fe* is dismissed. [See § 301, (a)].

*me.** But when the possessive refers to the nom. case of the main verb, and does not admit of a pers. pron. after the verb, it indicates a *passive* state. Thus, in the sentence 'haeddodd Arthur *ei* garu,' *ei* refers to *Arthur*, which is the nom. case to 'haeddodd.' So in English: 'Arthur deserved *to be loved*' = *that he should be loved*.

306. The forms *fy nysgu* (or *ym dysgu*) and *cael fy nysgu*, may be joined to the verbs of any tense; as,

Haeddaf *fy nysgu*, I deserve to be taught.

Daethym *im dysgu*, I came to be taught.

Deuaf i *gael fy nysgu*, I will come to be taught.

Present and imperfect.

Bod yn cael fy nysgu, *to be taught; that I am or was taught*, in subordinate sentences; as,

Dysgwylir *fy mod yn cael fy nysgu*.

Perfect and pluperfect.

Darfod fy nysgu, i mi gael fy nysgu, *darfod i mi gael fy nysgu, bod wedi (or wedi cael) fy nysgu, to have been taught; that I have or had been taught*, in subordinate sentences: as,

Dysgwylir *ddarfod fy nysgu*.

Future.

Bod ar gael fy nysgu, bod ar fedr cael fy nysgu, *to be about to be taught; that I am about to be taught*, in subordinate sentences; as,

Dysgwylir *fy mod ar fedr cael fy nysgu*.

307. PARTICIPLES.

Pres. and imperf. Yn cael fy nysgu, yn fy nysgu, *being taught*.

1. Yn fy nysgu.

2. Yn dy ddysgu.

3. { Yn ei ddysgu, *m*.
Yn ei dysgu, *f*.

1. Yn cael fy nysgu.

2. Yn cael dy ddysgu.

3. { Yn cael ei ddysgu, *m*.
Yn cael ei dysgu, *f*.

1. Yn ein dysgu.

2. Yn eich dysgu.

3. Yn eu dysgu.

1. Yn cael ein dysgu.

2. Yn cael eich dysgu.

3. Yn cael eu dysgu.

* In some cases the poss. is used when a pers. pron. cannot follow; as, "Yr hwn yr wyf yn *ei* garu." (See Syntax.)

Perf. and plup. Wedi (*or* gwedi) fy nysgu, ar ol, *or* yn ol fy nysgu, wedi &c. cael fy nysgu, *having been taught*.

- | | |
|--------------------|--|
| 1. Wedi fy nysgu. | } and so on, like <i>pres. and imperf.</i> |
| 2. Wedi dy ddysgu. | |

Future. Ar (*or* ar fedr) fy nysgu, ar gael (*or* ar fedr cael) fy nysgu, *about to be taught*.

- | | |
|------------------|--|
| 1. Ar fy nysgu. | } and so on, like <i>pres. and imperf.</i> |
| 2. Ar dy ddysgu. | |

Verbal Adjectives.

Dysgedig, *taught*. Dysgadwy, *capable of being taught*.

308. IRREGULAR VERBS.

The verbs which exhibit the greatest irregularity of conjugation are the following: *myned*, *dyfod* (*or daved*), *gwneyd* *or gwneuthur*, *grybod*, *adwaen* *or adnabod*, *cael* *or caffael*.

MYNED, to go.

Myned has no inflections. The inflected forms (except *dôs* and *cerdd* of the Imper.) are formed from the obsolete *au* and *elu*, to go. [With *au* cf. L. *eo* or *ago*; with *elu* cf. Gr. ἐλ-ευσομαι, ἡλ-θον.]

309. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. Wyf yn myned, &c., see "*dysgu*."

Imperfect.

- | | |
|---------------|-----------------|
| 1. Awn, elwn. | 1. Aem, elem. |
| 2. Ait, elit. | 2. Aech, elech. |
| 3. Ai, elai. | 3. Aent, elent. |

Perfect.

- | | |
|---------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Aethym,* elais. | 1. Aethom, elsom. |
| 2. Aethost, elaiat. | 2. Aethoch, elsoch. |
| 3. Aeth, elodd. | 3. Aethant, elsant. |

* The diphthong *ae* is sometimes changed into *eu* in the perfect and pluperfect; as, *cuthym*, *euthost*, &c.

Colloquial form.

- | | |
|----------|------------|
| 1. Eis. | 1. Aesom. |
| 2. Eist. | 2. Aesoch. |
| 3. Acth. | 3. Aesant. |

Pluperfect.

- | | |
|-------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Aethwn, elswn. | 1. Aethem, elsem. |
| 2. Aethit, elsit. | 2. Aethech, elsech. |
| 3. Aethai, elsai. | 3. Aethent, elsent. |

Colloquial form.

- | | |
|-----------|------------|
| 1. Aeswn. | 1. Aesem. |
| 2. Aesit. | 2. Aesech. |
| 3. Aesai. | 3. Aesent. |

Future.

- | | |
|----------------------------|-----------------|
| 1. Af, elaf. | 1. Awn, elwn. |
| 2. Ai, ei, eli. | 2. Ewch, elwch. |
| 3. A, aiff, eiff, el, ela. | 3. Ant, elant. |

Future perfect.

- | | |
|------------------------|-----------|
| 1. Elwyf, elof. | 1. Elom. |
| 2. Elych, elech, elot. | 2. Eloch. |
| 3. Elo. | 3. Elont. |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. — | 1. Awn, elwn. |
| 2. Dôs, cerdd. | 2. Ewch, elwch, cerddwch. |
| 3. Aed, eled, cerdded. | 3. Ant, elant, cerddant. |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see Fut. Perfect. Plup.: see Plup. Indic.

Imperf.: see Imperf. Indic.

INFINITIVE MOOD. Myned, &c., see *dysgu*.

PARTICIPLES. Yn myned, &c., see *dysgu*.

310. IMPERSONAL FORM OF MYNED.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. eir, elir. Imperf. eid, elid. Perf. aed, awd, aethwyd, aethpwyd. Plup. aethid, elsid. Fut. eir, elir. Fut. perf. aer, eler.

IMPER. MOOD. Aer, eler.

SUBJ. MOOD. Pr. aer, eler. Imperf. eid, elid. Pluperf. aethid, elsid.

DYFOD and DAWED, *to come*.

The inflected tenses of this verb (except *tyred* of the Imper.) are formed from *dawed* (of which *dyfod* is probably a mutation) and the obsolete *delu*.

311. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: Wyf yn dyfod, &c., see *dysgu*.

Imperfect.

- | | |
|-----------------------|--------------------|
| 1. Deuwn, delwn. | 1. Deuem, delem. |
| 2. Deuit, delit. | 2. Deuech, delech. |
| 3. Deuai, delai, dai. | 3. Deuent, delent. |

Perfect.

- | | |
|--------------|--------------|
| 1. Daethym.* | 1. Daethom. |
| 2. Daethost. | 2. Daethoch. |
| 3. Daeth. | 3. Daethant. |

Colloquial form.

- | | |
|-------------|-------------|
| 1. Deuais. | 1. Deusom. |
| 2. Deuaist. | 2. Deusoch. |
| 3. Deuodd. | 3. Deusant. |

Pluperfect.

- | | |
|---------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Daethwn, delswn. | 1. Daethem, delsem. |
| 2. Daethit, delsit. | 2. Daethech, delsech. |
| 3. Daethai, delsai. | 3. Daethent, delsent. |

Colloquial form.

- | | |
|------------|-------------|
| 1. Deuswn. | 1. Deusem. |
| 2. Deusit. | 2. Deusech. |
| 3. Deusai. | 3. Deusent. |

Future.

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. Deuaf, delaf, (dawaf, döaf) dôf. | 1. Deuwn, delwn, dewn, down. |
| 2. Deui, deli, dewi, doi. | 2. Deuwch, delwch, dewch, dowch. |
| 3. Deua, del, dela, daw. | 3. Deuant, delant, dewant, dônt. |

* The diphthong *ae* is sometimes changed into *eu* in the perfect and pluperfect; as, *deuthym*, *deuthost*, &c.

Future Perfect.

- | | |
|--------------------------------|--------------------|
| 1. Deuwyf, delwyf (-of.) | 1. Denom, delom. |
| 2. Deuych, delych (-ech, -ot.) | 2. Deuoch, deloch. |
| 3. Delo. | 3. Deuont, delont. |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|--------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. ——— | Pl. } See pl. of Fut. Indic. |
| 2. Tyred, dyred (tyre, dyre.) | |
| 3. Deued, deled (dawed, doed.) | |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see Fut. perf. Pluperfect: see Plup. Indic.

Imperfect: see Imperf. Indic.

INFINITIVE MOOD. Dyfod, &c., see *dysgu*.

PARTICIPLES. Yn dyfod, &c., see *dysgu*.

312. IMPERSONAL FORM OF DYFOD.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. deuir, delir, dewir. Imperf. deuid, delid. Perf. deuwyd *or* deued (daethwyd, daethpwyd, doed). Plup. daethid, delsid. Fut. deuir, delir, dewir, deir, doir. Fut. perf. deuer, deler, dower, doer.

IMPER. MOOD. = Future perfect.

SUBJ. MOOD. Present = Fut. perf. Imperf. deuid, delid, dewid, doid. Plup. = Plup. Indic.

GWNEYD, GWNEUTHUR or GWNELYD,* *to do*.

313. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. Wyf yn gwneyd, &c., see *dysgu*.

Imperfect.

- | | |
|---------------------|------------------------|
| 1. Gwnawn, gwnelwn. | 1. Gwnaem, gwnelem. |
| 2. Gwnait, gwnelit. | 2. Gwnaech, gwnelech. |
| 3. Gwnai, gwnelai. | 3. Gwnaent, gwneleent. |

* *Gwnelyd* is obsolete except in the finite tenses.

Perfect.

- | | |
|----------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. Gwnaethym* (gwnelais.) | 1. Gwnaethom, gwnelsom. |
| 2. Gwnaethost (gwnelaist.) | 2. Gwnaethoch, gwnelsoch. |
| 3. Gwnaeth (gwnelodd.) | 3. Gwnaethant, gwnelsant. |

Colloquial form.

- | | |
|-------------|---------------|
| 1. Gwneis. | 1. Gwneusom. |
| 2. Gwneist. | 2. Gwneusoch. |
| 3. Gwnaeth. | 3. Gwneusant. |

Pluperfect.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. Gwnaethwn, gwnelswn. | 1. Gwnaethem, gwnelsem. |
| 2. Gwnaethit, gwnelsit. | 2. Gwnaethech, gwnelsech. |
| 3. Gwnaethai, gwnelsai. | 3. Gwnaethent, gwnelsent. |

Colloquial form.

- | | |
|--------------|---------------|
| 1. Gwneuswn. | 1. Gwneusem. |
| 2. Gwneusit. | 2. Gwneusech. |
| 3. Gwneusai. | 3. Gwneusent. |

Future.

- | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Gwnaf, gwnelaf. | 1. Gwnawn, gwnelwn. |
| 2. Gwnai, gwneli. | 2. Gwnewch, gwnelwch. |
| 3. Gwna, gwnaiff, gwnel. | 3. Gwnânt, gwnelant. |

Future Perfect.

- | | |
|-------------------------|--------------|
| 1. Gwnelwyf, gwnelo. | 1. Gwnelom. |
| 2. Gwnelych, -ech, -ot. | 2. Gwneloch. |
| 3. Gwnelo. | 3. Gwnelont. |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|---------------------|------------------------|
| 1. — | 1. Gwnawn (gwnelwn.) |
| 2. Gwna. | 2. Gwnewch (gwnelwch.) |
| 3. Gwnaed, gwneled. | 3. Gwnant (gwnelant.) |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see Fut. perfect. Imperfect: see Imperf. Indic.
Pluperfect: see Plup. Indic.

* The diphthong *ae* is sometimes changed into *eu* in the perf. and pluperfect, as *deuthym*, *deuthost*, §c.

INFINITIVE MOOD. Gwneyd *or* gwneuthur, &c., see *dysgu*.

PARTICIPLES. Yn gwneyd *or* gwneuthur, &c., see *dysgu*.

314. PASSIVE FORM OF GWNEYD, GWNEUTHUR, OR GWNELYD.

INDIC. MOOD. Present, gwneir, gwnelir. Imperf. gwneid, gwnelid. Perf. gwnaed, gwnawd, gwnaethwyd, gwnaethpwyd. Plup. gwnaethid, gwnelsid. Fut. gwneir, gwnelir. Fut. perf. gwnaer, gwneler.

IMPER. MOOD. Gwnaer, gwneler.

SUBJ. MOOD. Pr. = Fut. perf. Imperf. = Imperf. Indic. Plup. = Plup. Indic.

GWYBOD, *to know*.

315. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

- | | |
|--------------|--------------|
| 1. Gwn. | 1. Gwyddom. |
| 2. Gwyddost. | 2. Gwyddoch. |
| 3. Gŵyr. | 3. Gwyddant. |

Imperfect.

- | | |
|-----------------------------|--------------|
| 1. Gwyddwn. | 1. Gwyddem. |
| 2. Gwyddit. | 2. Gwyddech. |
| 3. Gwyddai (gwyddiad, s.w.) | 3. Gwyddent. |

Perfect.

- | | |
|--------------|--------------|
| 1. Gwybum. | 1. Gwybuom. |
| 2. Gwybuost. | 2. Gwybuoch. |
| 3. Gwybu. | 3. Gwybuant. |

Pluperfect.

- | | |
|---------------|----------------|
| 1. Gwybuaswn. | 1. Gwybuasem. |
| 2. Gwybuasit. | 2. Gwybuasech. |
| 3. Gwybuasai. | 3. Gwybuasent. |

Future.

- | | |
|---------------|----------------|
| 1. Gwybyddaf. | 1. Gwybyddwn. |
| 2. Gwybyddi. | 2. Gwybyddwch. |
| 3. Gwybydd. | 3. Gwybyddant. |

Future Perfect.

- | | |
|---------------------------|----------------|
| 1. Gwybyddwyf, gwybyddof. | 1. Gwybyddom. |
| 2. Gwybyddych, -ech, -ot. | 2. Gwybyddoch. |
| 3. Gwybyddo. | 3. Gwybyddont. |

Contracted form.

- | | |
|------------------------------|-------------|
| 1. Gwypwyf, gwypof. | 1. Gwypom. |
| 2. Gwypych, gwypech, gwypot. | 2. Gwypoch. |
| 3. Gwypo. | 3. Gwypont. |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. — | 1. Gwybyddwn (gwypwn.) |
| 2. Gwybydd. | 2. Gwybyddwch (gwypwch.) |
| 3. Gwybydded (gwyped). | 3. Gwybyddant (gwypant.) |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see Future perfect.

Imperfect.

- | | |
|------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. Gwyddwn, gwybyddwn. | 1. Gwyddem, gwybyddem. |
| 2. Gwyddit, gwybyddit. | 2. Gwyddech, gwybyddech. |
| 3. Gwyddai, gwybyddai. | 3. Gwyddent, gwybyddent. |

Contracted form.

- | | |
|------------|-------------|
| 1. Gwypwn. | 1. Gwypem. |
| 2. Gwypit. | 2. Gwypech. |
| 3. Gwypai. | 3. Gwypent. |

Pluperfect: see Plup. Indic.

INFINITIVE MOOD. Gwybod, &c., see *dysgu*.

PARTICIPLES. Yn gwybod, &c., see *dysgu*.

316. PASSIVE FORM OF GWYBOD.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. gwyddir, gwyddys (gwŷs.) Imperfect, gwyddid. Perf. gwybuwyd (gwypwyd.) Plup. gwybuasid. Fut. gwyddir, gwybyddir. Fut. perf. gwybydder (gwyper.)

IMPER. MOOD. Gwybydder (gwyper.)

SUBJ. MOOD. Present. = Fut. perfect. Imperf. gwyddid, gwybyddid (gwypid.) Plup. gwybuasid.

ADWAEN,* and ADNABOD, *to be acquainted with, to recognise.*

317. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

- | | |
|---------------|----------------------|
| 1. Adwaen. | 1. Adwaenom. |
| 2. Adwaenost. | 2. Adwaenoch. |
| 3. Edwyn. | 3. Adwaenant (-ont.) |

Imperfect.

- | | |
|--------------|---------------|
| 1. Adwaenwn. | 1. Adwaenem. |
| 2. Adwaenit. | 2. Adwaenech. |
| 3. Adwaenai. | 3. Adwaenent. |

Perfect. (fr. adnabod.)

- | | |
|---------------|---------------|
| 1. Adnabum. | 1. Adnabuom. |
| 2. Adnabuost. | 2. Adnabuoch. |
| 3. Adnabu. | 3. Adnabuont. |

Colloquial: adwaenais, &c., like *dysgu*.

Pluperfect. (fr. adnabod.)

- | | |
|----------------|-----------------|
| 1. Adnabuaswn. | 1. Adnabuasem. |
| 2. Adnabuasit. | 2. Adnabuasech. |
| 3. Adnabuasai. | 3. Adnabuasent. |

Colloquial: adwaenaswn, &c., like *dysgu*.

Future. (fr. adnabod.)

- | | |
|----------------|-----------------|
| 1. Adnabyddaf. | 1. Adnabyddwn. |
| 2. Adnabyddi. | 2. Adnabyddwch. |
| 3. Adnebydd. | 3. Adnabyddant. |

Colloquial: adwaenaf, &c., like *dysgu*.

Future perfect.

- | | |
|---------------------------|---------------|
| 1. Adwaenwyf (-of.) | 1. Adwaenom. |
| 2. Adwaenych (-ech, -ot.) | 2. Adwaenoch. |
| 3. Adwaeno. | 3. Adwaenont. |

Or fr. *adnabod*; as,

- | | |
|----------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1. Adnabyddwyf (adnapwyf.) | 1. Adnabyddom (adnapom.) |
| 2. Adnabyddych (adnapych.) | 2. Adnabyddoch (adnapoch.) |
| 3. Adnabyddo (adnapo.) | 3. Adnabyddont (adnapont.) |

* Adwaen (quasi *adwn*) is compounded of *ad*=re, and *gwn*=cognosco.

IMPERATIVE MOOD. (fr. *adnabod*.)

- | | |
|----------------|-----------------|
| 1. — | 1. Adnabyddwn. |
| 2. Adnebydd. | 2. Adnabyddwch. |
| 3. Adnabydded. | 3. Adnabyddant. |

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see Future perfect.

Imperfect: see Imperf. Indic.; or from *adnabod*; as,

- | | |
|----------------|-----------------|
| 1. Adnabyddwn. | 1. Adnabyddem. |
| 2. Adnabyddit. | 2. Adnabyddech. |
| 3. Adnabyddai. | 3. Adnabyddent. |

Contracted form.

- | | |
|-------------|--------------|
| 1. Adnapwn. | 1. Adnapem. |
| 2. Adnapit. | 2. Adnapech. |
| 3. Adnapai. | 3. Adnapent. |

Pluperfect: see Plup. Indic.

INFINITIVE MOOD. *Adwaen*, &c., see *dysgu*.

PARTICIPLES. *Yn adwaen*, &c., see *dysgu*.

318. PASSIVE FORM OF ADWAEN.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. *adwaenir*. Imperf. *adwaenid*. Perf. *adnabuwyd*. Plup. *adnabuasid*. Fut. *adnabyddir*. Fut. perf. *adwaener*, *adnabydder* (*adnaper*.)

IMPER. MOOD. *Adwaener*, *adnabydder* (*adnaper*.)

SUBJ. MOOD. Pr. = Fut. perf. Imperf. *adwaenid*. Plup. *adnabuasid*.

CAEL or CAFFAEL, *to have** = *to get*.

319. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. *Wf yn cael or caffael*, &c., see *dysgu*.

* *To have* = *to possess*, is expressed in Welsh by an inflection of *bod* with a pronominal preposition; as, *y mae genyf* = *there is with me*. (See § 331, 332.)

Imperfect.

- | | |
|-------------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Cawn (caffwn.) | 1. Caem (caffem.) |
| 2. Cait, ceit (ceffit.) | 2. Caech (caffech.) |
| 3. Cai (caffai) | 3. Caent (caffent.) |

Perfect.

- | | |
|--------------------|-------------|
| 1. Cefais. | 1. Cawsom. |
| 2. Cefaist. | 2. Cawsoch. |
| 3. Cafodd (cafas.) | 3. Cawsant. |

Contracted form.

Sing. 1. Ceis, cês. 2. Ceist, cêst. 3. Câdd, câs.

Pluperfect.

- | | |
|------------|-------------|
| 1. Cawswn. | 1. Cawsem. |
| 2. Cawsit. | 2. Cawsech. |
| 3. Cawsai. | 3. Cawsent. |

Future.

- | | |
|----------------------|--------------------|
| 1. Câf. | 1. Cawn. |
| 2. Cai, cei (ceffi.) | 2. Cewch. |
| 3. Ca, caiff, ceiff. | 3. Cânt (caffant.) |

Future Perfect.

- | | |
|---------------------------------|----------------------|
| 1. Caffwyf (cafwyf, -of.) | 1. Caffom (cafom.) |
| 2. Ceffych (cefych, -ech, -ot.) | 2. Caffoch (cafoch.) |
| 3. Caffo (cafo.) | 3. Caffont (cafont.) |

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- | | |
|------------------|-----------------------------|
| 3. Caed, caffed. | 3. Cânt (caffant, caffont.) |
|------------------|-----------------------------|

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present: see Fut. perfect. Imperfect: see Imperf. Indic.

Pluperfect: see Plup. Indic.

INFINITIVE MOOD. Cael or caffael, &c., see *dysgu*.

PARTICIPLES. Yn cael or caffael, &c., see *dysgu*.

320. PASSIVE FORM OF CAEL OR CAFFAEL.

INDIC. MOOD. Pr. ceir, ceffir. Imperf. ceid, ceffid. Perf.

cafwyd, caffwyd, caed, cawd. Plup. cawsid. Fut. ceir, cefir. Fut. perf. caer, caffer.

IMPER. MOOD. Caer, caffer.

SUBJ. MOOD. Pr. = Fut. perf. Imperf. = Imperf. Indic. Plup. cawsid.

321. The compound verbs of *Bod* are conjugated like it. Most of the contractions, mentioned below, are now obsolete.

Adnabod (ad-nabod) *to recognise*, see § 317.

Canfod and canffod (can = Eng. *ken*, and bod) *to perceive*.

Clybod (clyw-bod) *to hear*. (Infin. obsolete.)

Cydfod (cyd-bod) *to agree*.

Cydnabod (cyd-nabod) *to acknowledge*.

Cyfarfod (cyfer-bod) *to meet*.

Darfod (dar-bod) *to cease to exist, to finish*.

Gorfod and gorffod (gor-bod) *to be obliged*.

Gwybod (gwydd-bod) *to know*, see § 315.

Hanfod and hanffod (han = L. *ens*, and bod) *to exist*.

Nabod (gwn = Eng. *ken*, Gr. *γιν-ωσκω*, and bod) *to recognise*.

(a) The *pres. INDIC.* of these verbs (except *gwybod*) are formed periphrastically; as, *wyf yn canfod*. *Cenyw*, *deryw*, *goryw*, and *henyw*, 3rd per. sing. of *canfod*, *darfod*, *gorfod*, and *hanfod*, are obsolete.

(b) *Imperf.* *Hanoeddwn*, &c., (like *oeddwn*) is an old form. So also is *daroedd*, 3rd per. sing. *Gorffai* = *gorfyddai*. "A *orffai* ar gewri," *I. MSS.*, p. 254.

(c) *Perf.* *Hanbu*, obsolete for *hanfu*.

(d) *Future*. Such as have *a* in the penult change *a* into *e* in 3rd pers. sing: as, *cenfydd*, *derfydd*, *adnebydd*, *cydnebydd*, *cyferfydd*, *henfydd*, *nebydd*. *Hanfod* has a contracted form: *hanffaf* (= *hanfyddaf*), *henffi*, *henffydd* (*hanbydd*); *hanffwn*, *henffweh*, *hanffant*.

(e) *IMPER.* *Darfydded* is contracted into *derfid*. "A *fyno Duw derfid*." *Hanfod* has a contracted form: Sing. 3, *hanffed*, *hanboed*, *hanbid*; Pl. 1, *hanffwn*, 2, *-weh*, 3, *-ant*.

(f) *Pres. SUBJ.* and *2nd future* of *canfod*, *darfod*, *gorfod*, *hanfod*, have contracted forms: *canffwyf*, *darffwyf*, *gorffwyf*, *hanffwyf*, &c., like *bwyf*, *pres. Subj.* of *Bod*.

(g) *Imperf.* *Darffai* = *darfyddai*. *Gorffai* = *gorfyddai*. *Hanffwn*, *-it*, *-ai*; *-em*, *-ech*, *-ent* = *hanfyddwn*, &c.

(h) *PASSIVE VOICE.* *Imperf.* *Hanffid* = *hanfyddid*. *Perf.* *Hanffwyd* = *hanfuwyd*. *Fut.* *Hanffir* = *hanfyddir*. *Imperf.*, *2nd fut.*, and *pres. Subj.* *Canffer*, *darffer*, *gorffer*, *hanffer* = *canfydder*, &c.

(i) Some modern writers change *bod* into *fydd* in the *perf.* and *plup.*, active and passive, and conjugate these tenses like *dysgu*. *Canfyddais* (= *canfum*), *canfyddwyd* (= *canfuwyd*), *canfyddaswn* (= *canfuaswn*), *canfyddasid* (= *canfuasid*).

322. Ysgwyd, *to shake*, forms }
its finite tenses from... } *ysgydw*: as, ysgydwaf.

Dwyn, *to bring*, *dyg*=ducere: as, dygaf.
Cyd-ddwyn, *to bear with*, *cyd-ddyg*: as, cyd-ddygaf.
Ymddwyn, *to behave, conceive*, ... *ym-ddyg*: as, ymddygaf.
Diane, *to flee*, *diang*: as, diangaf.
Chwerthin, *to laugh*, *chwardd*: as, chwarddaf.

(a) *Dwyn* has *dug* or *dygodd* in 3rd pers. sing. perf.; *dug* or *dyg* in 3rd pers. sing. fut.; and *dug* in 2nd pers. sing. Imper. Its compounds follow the same rule.

(b) *Chwerthin* in colloquial language retains *th* in finite tenses: as, *chwerthaf*, &c.

323. Rhoi, *to give*, has usually *dyry* (for *rho* or *rhy*) in 3rd pers. sing. fut.; and *dyro* (for *rho*) in 2nd pers. sing. Imper.

Dywedyd, *to say*, has occasionally *dynwand*, *dyfod*, or *dynwad* (for *dynwedodd*) in 3rd pers. sing. perf.; and *dynwyd*, *dyfyd*, or *dynwaid* (for *dynwed* or *dynveda*) in 3rd pers. sing. present and future.

Codi, *to raise* or *rise*, has *cŵyd* (for *côd* or *coda*) in 3rd pers. sing. fut., and 2nd pers. sing. Imper.

Cymmyrd, *to take*, canu, *to sing*, and gwanu, *to pierce*, make occasionally *cymmerth* for *cymmerodd*, *cânt* for *canodd*, and *gwânt* for *gwanodd* in 3rd pers. sing. perfect.

Several verbs have **p** sometimes inserted between the root and the termination in the perfect of the passive voice: as,

Claddpwyd <i>for</i> claddwyd.	Gwanpwyd <i>for</i> gwanwyd.
Daethpwyd <i>for</i> daethwyd.	Gwnaethpwyd <i>for</i> gwnaethwyd.
Dycpwyd <i>for</i> dygwyd.	Gwelppwyd <i>for</i> gwelwyd.
Dywedpwyd <i>for</i> dywedwyd.	Lladdpwyd <i>for</i> lladdwyd.

Lladd, *to kill*, has sometimes *llâs* as well as *lladdpwyd* for *lladdwyd*.

Gan y tri hyn y llâs traian y dynion. *Rev.* ix. 18.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

324. MEDD, *to say*. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.		Imperfect.	
1. Meddaf.	1 Meddwn.	1 Meddwn.	1 Meddem.
2. Meddi.	2 Meddweh.	2 Meddit.	2 Meddech.
3. Medd.	3 Meddant.	3 Meddai.	3 Meddent.

325. EB (cf. Gr. εἶπον: ἔπος) *to say*; 'quoth.'

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Sing. Ebe fi, ebe ti, ebe efe. Pl. Ebe ni, ebe chwi, ebe hwy.

(a) *Ebe* is also written *eb*, *ebr*, *ebyr*, or *ebai*.

(b) Its compounds *ateb*, to answer, *cyfateb*, to correspond, *gohebu*, to correspond, and *gwrtheb*, to answer, are conjugated like regular verbs.

326. PIAU, (= L. *po*-ssideo) to own. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Pres. Sing. Mi, ti, efe a biau.

Pl. Ni, chwi, hwy a biau.

Imp. Sing. Mi, ti, efe a bioedd.

Pl. Ni, chwi, hwy a bioedd.

Fut. Sing. Mi, ti, efe a bieufydd.

Pl. Ni, chwi, hwy a bieufydd.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Imperf. Sing. Mi, ti, efe a bieufyddai. Pl. Ni, chwi, hwy, a bieufyddai.

(a) The particle *a* is most frequently omitted, and *p* used instead of *b* (e. g. *mi piau*); but the above form is more correct. *Piau* is by some written *pia*; and *pioedd* is written *piodd*.

327. HWDE (N.W.) HWRE (S.W.) are used only in the Imper.

Sing. Hwde or hwre, take thou. Pl. Hwdiweh or hwriweh, take ye.

328. MOES, to give. The Imper. only is used.

Sing. Moes, give thou. Pl. Moesweh, give ye.

It also forms an auxiliary, similar to the Eng. 'let;' as, moes glywed, let me hear; moes i ni fyned, come, let us go.

BYW, to live, and MARW, to die.

329. *Byw* and *marw*, having no inflections, borrow the auxiliary verb *bod* to express their various tenses; as, wyf yn byw, I live; wyf yn marw, I am dying.

330. *Byw* and *marw* are also used adjectively, corresponding to *alive* and *dead*; but in construction they have this difference; when verbs, they preserve their *radical* initials after their particle 'yn;' when adjectives, they assume the *middle* sound after 'yn,' expressed or understood.

Verbs.

Y mae yn byw, he is living.

Y mac yn marw, he is dying.

Adjectives.

Y mae yn fyw, he is alive.

Y mac yn farw, he is dead.

(a) When the adjectives *byw* and *marw* are put in construction with the tenses *bum*, *byddwn*, *buaswn*, *byddaf*, and *unaccompanied by the particle yn*, they are usually translated into English by the verbs *live* and *die*; as,

Bu fyw, he lived.

Bu farw, he died.

Y MAE GENYF, "*I have.*"

331. The tenses of *have* = *possess*, are expressed in Welsh by the 3rd pers. of the verb *bod*, and a *preposition with its case*.

332. The prepositions are *gan*, with, *gyda*, with, and *i*, to; so that the sentence (*e.g.*) "*I have a book,*" may be expressed by,

a. Y mae genyf lyfr (N. W.) = *there is with me a book.*

b. Y mae gyda fi lyfr (S. W.) = *there is with me a book.*

c. Y mae i mi lyfr (S. W.) = *there is to me a book.*

(a) With this construction compare the L. "*est mihi,*" and the Gr. ἐμοὶ ἐστὶ.

(b) When the nom. case is indefinite, the order of the sentence is generally as above (*verb, prep. with its case, nom.*); but if the nom. is definite, the order is *verb, nom., prep. with its case.* *Indef.* Mae genyf lyfr. *Def.* Mae y llyfr genyf.

Present, *I have a book.*

1. Mae genyf lyfr.

2. Mae genyt lyfr.

3. Mae ganddo, or ganddi, lyfr.

1. Mae genym lyfr.

2. Mae genych lyfr.

3. Mae ganddynt lyfr.

And so on in the other tenses, substituting the third person of the proper tense for *mae*; as, imperf. *yr oedd genyf lyfr*; perf. *bu genyf lyfr*.

333. The participle, equivalent to "*having,*" is expressed by *a* or *ag* (or *ac*) and a *prep. with its case*.

1. A chenyf lyfr, *having a book.*

2. A chenyf lyfr.

3. { A chanddo lyfr.
A chanddi lyfr.

1. A chenym lyfr.

2. A chenych lyfr.

3. A chanddynt lyfr.

Or, *Ag i mi lyfr, ag i ti lyfr, ag iddo lyfr, &c.*

334. *Gan* and *gyda*, accompanied by an adjective, express other notions.

Mae yn dda genyf, or gyda fi, = *it is good with me; I am glad.*

Mae yn rhyfedd genyf, *I am surprised.*

Mae yn ddrwg genyf, *I am sorry.*

Mae yn edifar genyf, *I regret.*

Mae yn gas genyf, *I hate.*

Mae yn fflaidd genyf, *I abhor.*

So also *ar*, upon, with a noun.

Mae arnaf ofn = *there is on me fear; I am afraid.*

Mae arnaf eisieu, *I want.*

Mae arnaf chwant, *I am inclined.*

Mae arnaf hiraeth, *I long.*

Mae arnaf ddyled, *I owe.*

Mae gorfod arnaf, *I am compelled.*

THE ARTICLE.

335. The Welsh language has no indefinite article, corresponding to *a* or *an* of the English.

336. The *definite article* is *y** or *yr* (contracted 'r), corresponding to *the*, and like it defines a noun, or a word standing for a noun.

337. *Y* is used before a *consonant*; *yr* before a *vowel* and the letter *h*; 'r before a *vowel* or a *consonant*, if the preceding word ends with a vowel.

Yr aur; *yr haul*; *y galaru*; *y cyflawn*; *y tad a'r fam*.

(a) The articles *y* and *yr* are to be distinguished from the affirmative adverbs *y* and *yr* (= *it is*) and the conjunctions *y* and *yr* (= *that*.)

ADVERBS.

338 Adverbs may be divided into *simple* and *compound*. By 'simple adverbs,' we mean such as express the notion of an adverb by one term, without being necessarily simple and elementary in point of etymology; as *yna*, *yma*, *allan*, *ymaith*, &c. By 'compound adverbs' are meant such as express the notion of an adverb by two or more words; as *oddi uchod*, *o hyn allan*.

339. Many of the adverbs are really substantives, or substantive words in a state of construction. Some may be still looked upon as such; but others, having thrown aside the governing and the concomitant words, and preserving only the mere substantive, are conveniently reckoned as adverbs.

340. The following may be looked upon as substantives in a state of construction: *yn y fan*=on the spot; immediately. *Ar wahan*=on a separation; apart. *Ym mron*=on the slope; nearly. *O hyn allan*=from this out; henceforth.

341. These may be reckoned as adverbs, though strictly substantives under the government of prepositions: *Sut* (for *ym mha sut*,) how? *Weithian* (for *ar y waith hon*,) now. *Lle* (for *ym mha le*,) where?

342. *Motion to* is often expressed by the prep. *i*, with another word significant of place; as *i fyny*=to the mountain; upward. *I maes*=to the field; out. *I lanwr*=to the ground; downward. *I mewn*=to within; in.

* *Y* is probably cognate with the Gr. article *ὁ* or *ἡ*.

343. *Motion from* is often expressed by *oddi* and *o*, from, with another word significant of place; as *obry*=from the hill; below. *Oddi uchod*, from above. *Oddi yma*=from here; hence. *Oddi acw*, from yonder. *Oddi isod*, from below.

344. Some adverbs are formed by uniting a whole sentence, so as to form one compound word. *Sef* (namely) is compounded of *ys* is, and *ef*, he or it, and literally signifies *it* or *that is*. *Malpai* (as if it were) is divisible into *mal*, as, *pe*, if, *bai*, were. *Ysgatfydd* (perhaps) is formed of *ys-gad-bydd*=allow it will be or occur.

345. *Adverbs of quality* are formed from adjectives by setting before them the particle *yn* (hence called '*yn adverbial*,') and changing their initial consonant into the *middle* sound. [Their English equivalents are made by suffixing *ly* to the adjective.]

Uniawn, *upright*.

Cyfiawn, *just*.

Drwg, *bad*.

Teg, *fair*.

Yn uniawn, *uprightly*.

Yn gyfiawn, *justly*.

Yn ddrwg, *badly*.

Yn deg, *fairly*.

(a) These adverbs are capable of the same degrees of comparison as the adjectives, and by the same characteristic forms; as, *yn decach*, &c., more fairly.

346. *Adverbs of number* are made by adding *gwaith* or *tro* to any numeral adjective.

Unwaith, *once*.

Dwywaith, *twice*.

Teirgwaith, *three times*.

Untro, *once*.

Deudro, *twice*.

Trithro, *three times*. (See § 180.)

(a) These are really substantives under the government of such prep. as *ar* or *am*.

347. *Adverbs of order* are formed by setting '*yn adverbial*' before ordinal numbers, and the usual terms of succession.

Yn gyntaf, *first*.

Yn ail, *secondly*.

Yn olaf, *lastly*.

Yn ddiweddaf, *finally*.

CLASSIFICATION OF ADVERBS. The principal heads into which adverbs are usually divided, are the following:—
Adverbs of quality. (See above.) Adverbs of number. (See above.) Adverbs of order. (See above.)

348. Adverbs of place.

Aew (= ἐκεῖ) *yonder*.Adref, *home*.Allan, *out*.Fry, *above*.Draw, *yonder*.Hwnt, *away*.Isod, *below*.Uchod, *above*.Yma, *here*.Yna, *there (in sight.)*Yno, *there (out of sight.)*Ymaith, *hence*.Obry, *below*.Tanodd, *underneath*.Trwodd, *through*.Trosodd, *over*.Oddi yma, *hence*.Oddi yna, *thence*.Oddi yno, *from that place*.Oddi uchod, *from above*.Ym mlaen, *forward*.Ar wahan, *apart*.O'r neilldu, *aside*.Oddi fewn, *from within*.Oddi allan, *from without*.I fyny, *upward, up*.I lawr, *downward, down*.I waered, *downward, down*.Yn ol, *back*.Ar bwys, *near*.Rhag blaen, *forward*.I maes, *out*. (S. W.)I mewn, *within*.Oddi tanodd, *under*.

349. Abverbs of showing.

Dacw, *yonder (is.)*Dyma, *here (is.)*Dyna, *there (is.)*Llyma, *lo here*.Llyna, *lo there*.Nycha (= L. *en ecce*) *behold*.Wele, *behold*.

350. Adverbs of time.

Heddyw, *to day*.Heno, *to night*.Doe, *yesterday*.Neithwyr, *last night*.Echdoe, (cf. Gr. ἐχθές) *the day before yesterday*.Echnos, *the night before last*.Efory, yfory, *to-morrow*.Trenydd, *the day after to-morrow*.Tradwy, *the day after trenydd*.Tranoeth, *on the morrow*.Eleni, yleni, *this year*.Ellynedd, yllynedd, *last year*.Weithian, *now, at length*.Weithion, *now, at length*.Weithiau, *at times*.Gynt, *formerly*.Eisoecs, *already*.Allan o law (N. W.) *presently*.Maes o law (S. W.) *presently*.Beunydd, *daily*.Yn union, *immediately*.Yn union deg *coll. immediately*.Erioed, *ever (past time.)*Byth, *ever (future time.)*Yn awr, *coll. nawr, (S. W.) now*.Yr awr hon, yr awron, *coll. yrŵan, (N. W.) now*.Toc, *presently*.Eto, *again, yet*.Bob amser, *always*.Yn wastad, *continually*.Newydd, *newly, just*.Ambell waith, *sometimes*.Ambell dro, *sometimes*.Erys talm, *long ago, for a long while (weeks, months or years.)*Erys meityn, *for some time, (hours, or a part of a day.)*O hyn allan, *henceforth*.Rhag llaw, *henceforth*.Toc a da, (*coll.*) *presently and in good time*.Ar fyr, *shortly*.

351. Adverbs of quantity.

I gyd, <i>wholly.</i>	Yng nghyd, <i>altogether.</i>
Braidd, }	Llawer, <i>much.</i>
O'r braidd, } <i>scarcely, almost.</i>	Llei lai, <i>less and less.</i>
Prin, <i>scarcely.</i>	Mwy fwy, <i>more and more.</i>

352. Adverbs of doubting.

Ef allai, }	Nid hwyrach, } <i>perhaps.</i>
Fe allai, }	Hwyrach, }
Ond odid, }	Ysgatfydd, <i>peradventure.</i>
Odid, }	

353. Adverbs of negation.

Ni, nid, nis, <i>not.</i>	Nage (nac-ie), <i>no.</i>
Na, nad, nas, <i>not; that .. not.</i>	Dim, an auxiliary negative.
Nac, <i>not.</i>	Mo (dim-o), an auxiliary negative.
Naddo, na ddo, <i>not.</i>	

354. Adverbs of affirmation.

Yn ddiau, <i>undoubtedly.</i>	Sef, <i>namely.</i>
Yn wir, <i>truly.</i>	Do, <i>yes.</i>
Yn ddilys, <i>certainly.</i>	Ië, <i>yes.</i>
O'r goreu, <i>very well.</i>	Nid amgen, <i>not otherwise.</i>
Purion, <i>very well.</i>	

355. Adverbs of interrogation.

A, simple interrogative.	Sut, pa sut, <i>how?</i>
Ai, <i>is it?</i>	Lle, pa le, <i>where?</i>
Ai ni, nid, or nis, <i>is it not?</i>	Pam, pa ham, <i>why?</i>
Oni, onid, onis, <i>is it not?</i>	Pa fodd, pa wedd, <i>how?</i>
Ai ië, <i>is it so?</i>	

356. Adverbs of comparison.

Cyn (can, gan), <i>as.</i>	Rhy, <i>too.</i>
Go, <i>rather.</i>	Po (= quo), <i>by how much.</i>
Iawn, <i>very.</i>	Mwy, <i>more.</i>
Lled, <i>rather.</i>	Llai, <i>less.</i>
Mor, <i>as.</i>	Mwyaf, <i>most.</i>
Pur, <i>very.</i>	Lleiaf, <i>least.</i>
Digon, <i>sufficiently.</i>	Tra, <i>very.</i>

357. Auxiliary affirmative adverbs.

A; as,	'Duw a ddywedodd.'
Y; as,	'Yna y dywedodd.'
Yd; as,	'Basaf dwfr man yd lefair.'
Ydd; as,	'Cyflym ydd a rym yr oes.'
Yr; as,	'Hwyr yr erys Duw cyn taro.'

(a) *E*, *fe*, and *fo*, called by some *auxiliary affirmative adverbs*, are more properly *auxiliary pronouns*.

358. In Welsh, as in other languages, many of the adverbs are to be distinguished from conjunctions and prepositions by their *use* and *signification*, not by their form; for it happens that the same word is in one place an adverb, and in another a conjunction or a preposition. In the sentence, “Deuaf *yna* y fory,” I will come *there* to-morrow, *yna* is an adverb; but in the sentence, “Os felly, *yna* mi a ddeuaf,” if so, *then* I will come, *yna* is a conjunction.

359. **Conjunctive adverbs.** Such words as *cyn*, *pryd*, *pan*, *wedi*, *tra*, (*whilst*) *hyd*, *hyd oni*, *hyd nes*, &c., are by some called *adverbs*, by others *conjunctions*, and by others *conjunctive adverbs*, on the ground that they combine the notion of both an adverb and of a conjunction. In the sentence, “I will visit you when I return,” the word *when* includes the notion of an adverb, as it refers to a *point of time*; but it includes also the notion of a conjunction, as it connects the clause “when I return,” with the preceding, “I will visit you.” But as these particles have an influence over their verbs, and require a particular construction, it is better to disregard their adverbial import, and classify them under conjunctions.

CONJUNCTIONS.

360. “Conjunctions are usually divided into the two principal classes of *conjunctives* and *disjunctives*.” These again are capable of subdivisions, of which the following are the most important:—

α) **Copulative.** A, ac, and. Hefyd, also.

β) **Disjunctive.** Neu, or.

Naill ai . . . ai, neu, ynte, *either* . . . or.

Na or nac . . . na or nac, *neither* . . . nor.

γ) **Suppositive (or hypothetical.)** O, od, os (formerly *or*), *if*. Pe, ped, pes, pei, *if*. Oni, onid, onis, *if* . . . not; *except*. Oddieithr, oddigerth, *except*.

δ) **Concessive.** Er, serch, cyd, *although*.

ε) **Causal.** O achos, o herwydd, o waith, o blegyd, am (formerly o ethryb, o blaid,) *because*. Gan (can) *since*. Yn gymmaint ag, *inasmuch as*. Canys, *for*.

(a) O is sometimes omitted in o achos, o herwydd, &c.

ζ) The conjunctions of **motive** or **purpose**. Mal, fal, fel, megys, modd, *in order that*. Rhag, *in order that* . . *not*.

η) The conjunctions of **effect** or **result**. Mal, fal, fel, so *that*.

θ) **Explanatory.** Y, yr, mai, taw, *that*.

ι) **Temporal.** Pan, pryd, *when*. Wedi, gwedi, ar ol, yn ol, *after*. Tra, *whilst*. Cyhyd ag, cyd (for cyhyd), cyd ag, *as long as*. Er pan, *since*. Hyd, nes, tan, hyd oni (onid, onis), hyd nes, *until*. Cyn gynted ag, gynted ag, er cynted ag, *as soon as*. Pryd bynag, *whenever*. Newydd, *just when*. Gyda (cyda), *the moment that*.

κ) **Comparative.** Na, nag (no, nog,) *than*. Mal, fal, fel, megys, ys, *as*. Ag, *as*.

(a) Mal, fal, fel, and megys are sometimes followed by ag: mal ag, &c.

λ) **Adversative.** Ond, eithr, *but*. Namyn, onid, oddi-eithr, oddigerth, *except*. Eto, er hyn, er hyny, *yet, notwithstanding*.

μ) **Illative (or inferring.)** Yna, *then*. Am hyny, gan hyny, o achos hyny, &c., *therefore*.

PREPOSITIONS.

361. Prepositions may be divided into the following classes:—

α) **Simple prepositions** are such as express the notion of a preposition by one term, without being necessarily simple and elementary as to etymology; as *am, mewn, gerfydd*.

β) **Compound prepositions** are such as express the notion of a preposition by two or more words; as *ar led, oddi amgylch, tu mewn i*.

γ) **Pronominal prepositions** are such as enter into combina-

tion with personal pronouns; as, *genyf*, with me, from the prep. *gan*, with, and the pronoun *mi* or *fi*, me.

ð) **Inseparable prepositions**, or prefixes, are such as enter into combination with nouns, adjectives, &c., to form compound words; as *af* in *aflwydd*; *gor* in *gorthrwm*; *dy* in *dygynnull*.

SIMPLE PREPOSITIONS.

362. As the government of the prepositions is of great importance in the Welsh language, it will be useful here to arrange them under different heads, that the student may with greater facility acquaint himself with the governing power of each.

363. **Prepositions proper.** Some may be denominated 'prepositions proper,' or those that seem to have the greatest claim to such a name, in opposition to nouns used prepositionally by an ellipsis of a particle.

364. *a)* The following govern the **radical** sound:—

Cyn, <i>before</i> .	Heibio, <i>by, past</i> .
Er, <i>for; since</i> .	Is, <i>below</i> .
Erys, er's (vulgo <i>es</i>), <i>since; for</i> .	Mewn, <i>in</i> .
Erbyn, <i>against; by</i> .	Myn, (= <i>μην</i>), <i>by</i> (in swearing.)
Ger (gar), }	Rhag, (= <i>præ</i>), <i>from; for</i> .
Cer (ear), }	Serch, <i>notwithstanding</i> .
Gerfydd (cerfydd), <i>by</i> .	Rhwng, <i>between</i> .
Gwedi, wedi, }	Uwch, (uch), <i>above</i> .
(Cwedi), }	
	<i>after</i> .

365. *b)* The following govern the **middle** sound:—

Am (= Gr. <i>ἀμφι</i>), <i>about, on</i>	I,† <i>to, into</i> .
account of, of, for.	Tros, dros, <i>over; for</i> .
Ar, on, upon; at.	Trwy, drwy, <i>through</i> .
At, to, close to.	Wrth, close to, by; to.
Gan, can, with; by.	O,‡ <i>out of, from</i> .
Heb, without.	Tan, dan, <i>under; until</i> .
Hyd,* <i>as far as</i> .	

* *Hyd* and *ar hyd* sometimes govern the radical. "Ar hyd llwybrau uniondeb." Ps. xxvii. 11.

† *I* governs the pron. *ti* and its compounds in the *radical*; as "peri i ti dewi;" it governs *mi* and its compounds, and *mewn* and *maes*, in the *rad.* or *middle*; as "dywed i mi or i fi."

‡ *O* in some cases governs the *rad.* or *middle*; as, o mewn or o fewn; o tan or o dan.

(a) The prep. *oddi*, from, usually governs the *middle*; but sometimes the *radical*.

(b) *Idd*, to; *odd*, and the obsolete *oc*, from, precede nouns only when they have an article or its equivalent before them; as *idd y tŷ*; *odd eu tai*. They are peculiar to S. W.

366. c) The preposition *yn* governs the **nasal** sound.

(a) In certain cases *yn* becomes *ym* and *ynŷ*. [See § 97, 98.]

(b) "*Yn* participial" governs the *radical*; "*yn* adverbial," and "*yn* apposition," govern the *middle*. Thus the different functions of the word *yn* are distinguished by its government.

367. d) The following govern the **aspirate** of class first (*c*, *p*, *t*); and **radical** of classes second and third (*g*, *b*, *d*; *ll*, *m*, *rh*.)

A,* *with*. *Ag*, before vowels.

Gyda, *cyda*, *with*, *along with*. *Gydag*, *cydag*, before vowels.

Tua, *towards*; *about*. *Tuag*, before vowels.

Efo, *with*.

Tra, *beyond*.

(a) A circumflex is usually placed over *a* and *ag* when prepositions; as, *lladd â chleddyf*, *to kill with a sword*.

368. **Substantive prepositions.** Some prepositions may be termed 'substantive prepositions,' or substantives employed as prepositions.

369. A substantive, when followed by another substantive in the possessive case, governs it in the *radical* sound; e. g. "*planwr gwinllan*," where we see that *gwinllan* retains its *radical* sound after *planwr*.

Accordingly we find that *all substantive prepositions govern the radical sound*.

Achos (= *causâ*), *on account of*.

Cylch, *amgylch*, *about*.

Parth, *parthed*, *as to*.

Plegyd, *because of*.

Gwaith,† *because of*.

Herwydd, *because of*.

Traws, *draws*, *over*.

COMPOUND PREPOSITIONS.

370. Compound prepositions are made up (1) Of two or

* *A* and its compounds govern the pron. *mi* in the *rad.* or the *middle*; as, *gyda mi*, or *gyda fi*.

† Cf. *ἔργῳ*, ergo: *victoriæ ergo*.

more simple prepositions; as *oddi ar, tuag at am*. (2) Of prepositions and substantives (*or* substantive words); as *ar led, tu cefn i*.

371. As some of these end with a preposition (*oddi ar, hyd at*), and some with a substantive (*ar led, ger bron*), they are hence divisible into two classes.

372. **Compounds ending with a preposition.** These govern the same sound as the simple prepositions with which they end. For example, *ar* governs the *middle* sound; as, *ar fynydd*: hence its compound *oddi ar* governs the *same* sound; as, *oddi ar fynydd*.

Am dan,* *about*.

Gor is, *below*.

Gor uwch, *above*.

O fewn, *within*.

O dan, *under*.

Oddi ar, } *from upon, from*.

Oddi dan, *from under, under*.

Oddi am,*

Oddi am dan,* } *from about*.

Oddi wrth, *from beside, from*.

Yn erbyn, *against, in opposition to*.

I . . erbyn, *against* (as, "daeth i'm herbyn.")

Ar gyfer i, *opposite to*.

Ar gyferyd i, *opposite to*.

Cyferbyn â (âg), *opposite to*.

Cyfarwyneb â (âg), *opposite to*.

Gwydderbyn â (âg), *opposite to*.

Parth â (âg), *towards*.

Parth ag at, *towards*.

Tuag at, *towards*.

Tuag at am, *as to*.

Hyd at, *as far as*.

Hyd ar, *as far as*.

Hyd yn, *as far as*.

Yng nghyda (âg), *together with*.

Yng ngwrthwyneb i, *against*.

Oddi maes i, } *from without*.

Oddi allan i, }

Oddi mewn i, *from within, within*.

Tu blaen i, *before*.

Tu cefn i, *behind*.

Tu maes i, } *outside*.

Tu allan i, }

Tu draw i, } *beyond*.

Tu hwnt i, }

Tu isaf i, *below*.

Tu ol i, } *behind*.

Tu yn ol i, }

Tu mewn i, *within*.

Tu uchaf i, *above*.

Tu yma i, *this side*.

Tu yna i, *that side*.

373. **Compounds ending with a substantive.** These govern the *radical* sound, like substantive prepositions.

Am bent† = *about the head; on, at*.

Ar bent† = *on the head; on, at*.

Ar hyd, *along*.

Ar led, *over*.

Ar ol, *after, behind*.

Ar draws, *over*.

Ar warthaf, *upon*.

Er mwyn, *for the sake of*.

Ger bron, *in presence of, before*.

Ger gwydd, *in presence of, before*.

Ger wyneb, *in presence of, before*.

Ger llaw, *at hand, near*.

Rhag bron, *in presence of, before*.

Rhag wyneb, *in presence of, before*.

O flaen, *before*.

Heb law, *besides*.

* See Syntax, § 749.

† *Chwerthin am ben or ar ben, to laugh at*.

Is law = <i>below the hand; below.</i>	O ran, <i>as for, because of.</i>
O achos = <i>from the cause of; because of.</i>	Uwch ben = <i>overhead; above.</i>
O blegyd, <i>because of.</i>	Uwch law = <i>overhand; above.</i>
O herwydd, <i>because of.</i>	Yn ol, <i>behind, according to.</i>
O ethryb, <i>because of.</i>	Yng nghylch = <i>in a circle; about.</i>
O waith, <i>because of.</i>	Ym mhlith, <i>among.</i>
O gylech, o amgylech, <i>about.</i>	I blith = <i>to among; among.</i>
Oddi amgylech, <i>from about, about.</i>	Ym mysg, <i>among.</i>
O barth, o barthed, <i>as to.</i>	Yng ngwydd, <i>in the presence of, before.</i>
O ddeutu, o beutu, <i>about.</i>	Yn ymyl = <i>at the side of; close to.</i>
O gwmpas, <i>about.</i>	Yn lle, <i>instead of, for.</i>
	Wrth law = <i>by the hand of; beside.</i>

PRONOMINAL PREPOSITIONS.

374. The prepositions that admit of being combined with the personal pronouns, so as to form a class of words, which *Dr. Pughe* very properly calls 'pronominal prepositions,' are the following:—

a) Simple: *ar; at; dar; er; gan or can; heb; hyd; han or hon* (proceeding from); *i; rhag; rhwng; tan or dan; tros or dros; trwy or drwy; wrth; yn.*

b) Compound: *am dan; o dan or tan; oddi dan or tan; oddi ar; oddi wrth; oddi gan; oddi am dan; oddi rhwng; ar hyd; o han or hon; hyd yn; hyd ar; hyd at; parth ag at.*

375. When personal pronouns are suffixed to these particles, they suffer their vowels to be changed and inverted, to render the words more harmonious, and to give a greater variety of forms.

376 The following table exhibits the various forms which each personal pronoun assumes.

1. Af, of (<i>or wyf</i>), yf, fr. <i>fi.</i>	1. Om, ym, cognate with Gr. ὁμήϊς.
2. At, ot, yt, fr. <i>ti.</i>	2. Och, ych, fr. <i>chwi.</i>
3. { O, m. fr. <i>o = e.</i>	3. Ynt, fr. <i>hwynt.</i>
{ I, f. fr. <i>hi.</i>	

(a) The 2nd pers. sing. sometimes ends in *d*: *atad, am danad, &c.* The letter *t* in *ynt* is sometimes cut off in poetry. "Pau fo caledfyd *arnyn*." E. Prys.

377. These pronominals are classified under three distinct heads, distinguished by the termination of the first person sin-

gular. *Ataf* has *af* for its ending; *hebof* has *of* or *wyf*; *genyf* has *yf*: hence they belong to three different classes.

378. First class: *Af*.

- | | |
|--|---|
| Sing. 1. <i>Ataf</i> (at-fi), <i>to me</i> . | Pl. 1. <i>Atom</i> (at-îµēĩς), <i>to us</i> . |
| 2. <i>Atat</i> (at-ti), <i>to thee</i> . | 2. <i>Atoch</i> (at-chwi), <i>to you</i> . |
| 3. { <i>Ato</i> (at-o), <i>to him</i> . | 3. <i>Atynt</i> (at-hwynt), <i>to them</i> . |
| { <i>Ati</i> (at-hi), <i>to her</i> . | |

The following belong to this class:—

- | | |
|--|---|
| <i>Arnaf</i> (ar-fi), <i>upon me</i> . | <i>Oddiarnaf</i> , <i>from upon me</i> . |
| <i>Darnaf</i> , (dar-fi), <i>upon me</i> . | <i>Oddi am danaf</i> , <i>from about me</i> . |
| <i>Tanaf</i> or <i>danaf</i> (tan-fi), <i>under me</i> . | <i>Hyd arnaf</i> , <i>even upon me</i> . |
| <i>Am danaf</i> , <i>about me</i> . | <i>Hyd ataf</i> , <i>up to me</i> . |
| <i>O danaf</i> , <i>under me</i> . | <i>Parth ag ataf</i> , <i>towards me</i> . |
| <i>Oddi danaf</i> , <i>from under me</i> . | |

379. Second class: *Of* (or *wyf*.)

- | | |
|--|---|
| Sing. 1. <i>Erof</i> or <i>erddof</i> (er-fi), <i>for me</i> . | Pl. 1. <i>Erom</i> or <i>erddom</i> (er-îµēĩς), <i>for us</i> . |
| 2. <i>Erot</i> or <i>erddot</i> (er-ti), <i>for thee</i> . | 2. <i>Eroch</i> or <i>erddoch</i> (er-chwi), <i>for you</i> . |
| 3. { <i>Erddo</i> , (er-o), <i>for him</i> . | 3. <i>Erddynt</i> (er-hwynt), <i>for them</i> . |
| { <i>Erddi</i> (er-hi), <i>for her</i> . | |

The following belong to this class:

- | | |
|--|--|
| <i>Hebof</i> (heb-fi), <i>without me</i> . | <i>Hydof</i> (hyd-fi), <i>over me</i> . |
| <i>Hanof</i> or <i>honof</i> (han-fi), <i>of me</i> . | <i>Ynof</i> (yn-fi), <i>in me</i> . |
| <i>Rhagof</i> (rhag-fi), <i>before me</i> . | <i>O hanof</i> or <i>o honof</i> , <i>of</i> or <i>from me</i> . |
| <i>Rhyngof</i> (rhwng-fi), <i>between me</i> . | |
| <i>Trosf</i> or <i>drosf</i> (tros-fi), <i>over</i> or <i>for me</i> . | <i>Hyd ynof</i> , <i>even to me</i> . |
| | <i>Oddi rhyngof</i> , <i>from between me</i> . |
| <i>Trwyf</i> or <i>drwyf</i> (trwy-fi), <i>through me</i> . | <i>Ar hydof</i> , <i>over me</i> . |

(a) *N* and *dd* (as in *arno*, *erddo*, *ganddo*) are no parts of the original words, but are thrown in for the sake of euphony. (Cf. Gr. *μη-δ-εις*.) Instead of *dd* we sometimes find *th* and *t*: *ganto*, *ynthynt*, *rhyngthynt*, *ganthynt*.

(b) *Trwyf* often omits the *y* in 1st and 2nd persons, making *trwof*, *trwot*; *trwom*, *trwoch*.

Trosf has *t* in 3rd person—*trosto*, *trostynt*; and colloquially in all the other persons—*trostof*, *trostot*, &c.

O hanof, *o honof*, &c., are conjugated without the aid of *dd* in any person—*o hono*, *o hont*, *o honom*, *o honoch*, *o honynt*. *O naddynt* is sometimes found for *o honynt*.

380. Third class: Yf.

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| 1. Genyf (gan-fi), <i>with me.</i> | 1. Genym (gan-ḡmēĩς), <i>with us.</i> |
| 2. Genyt (gan-ti), <i>with thee.</i> | 2. Genych (gan-chwi), <i>with you.</i> |
| 3. { Ganddo (gan-o), <i>with him.</i> | 3. Gauddynt (gan-hwynt), <i>with them.</i> |
| { Ganddi (gan-hi), <i>with her.</i> | |

The following belong to this class:—

Wrthyf (wrth-fi), *to me ; by me.*
 Oddi wrthyf = *from beside me ; from me.*
 Oddi genyf = *from with me ; from me.*

(a) *Wrthyf* and *oddi wrthyf* are conjugated without the aid of *dd* in the 3rd person, making *wrtho*, *wrthi*, *wrthynt*.

381. The preposition *i* with a personal pronoun is thus written:—

Simple.

- | | |
|---------------|------------------------|
| 1. Imi (im'.) | 1. Ini (in'.) |
| 2. Iti (it'.) | 2. Ichwi (ieh', iwch.) |
| 3. { Iddo. | 3. Iddynt. |
| { Iddi. | |

Emphatic.

- | | |
|---------------------|----------------|
| 1. I mi. | 1. I ni. |
| 2. I ti. | 2. I chwi. |
| 3. { Iddo ef or fo. | 3. Iddynt hwy. |
| { Iddi hi. | |

INTERJECTIONS.

382. Many of the particles, denominated *interjections*, are 'verbs of the Imperative mood, both in their form and abstract meaning, and mostly of the second person.' *Aro!* stop, is the Imper. of *aros*, to stop: *wela* or *vele!* behold, the Imper. of *gweled*, to see or behold: *taw!* hush, the Imper. of *teui*, to be silent.

383. Some are nouns and adjectives out of construction: as, *ffwrdd*, avaunt; *huv!* alas; *syndod!* wonder; *dyn!* dear me; *dyn byn!* man alive; *druan!* poor thing; *druan bach!* poor little thing. Some are adverbs: as, *dyna!* here is; *dacw!* yonder; *dyna!* there; *hwnt!* avaunt; *llyma!* lo here; *llyna!* lo there; *ymaith!* avaunt, away.

384. A phrase, or a clause with a portion left out, will frequently constitute an interjection; as, *gwyn ei fyd!* would to heaven; *ysywaeth* (= which is worse), the more the pity.

385. Others are mere ejaculations which cannot be derived from any of the more substantial parts of speech.

Bw! <i>boh.</i>	Hai wehw! }	Och! <i>alas.</i>
Dyt! <i>hold.</i>	Wehw! } <i>murder.</i>	Ow! <i>oh.</i>
Ffi or ffei! <i>fie.</i>	Ho! <i>ho.</i>	Pw! }
Ha! <i>hah.</i>	How! <i>alack.</i>	Twyt! } <i>pshaw.</i>
Hai! <i>hey.</i>	O! <i>oh.</i>	Wi! <i>hey.</i>

PREFIXES AND AFFIXES.

PREFIXES.

386. Prefixes, or inseparable prepositions, generally* add to or alter the meaning of the words, to which they are prefixed. *Rhedeg* to run; *cylch*-redeg, to run round.

A (cf. Gr. *a intensivum*) augmentative or emphatic. [Government:† *asp.* of *c* and *t*: radical and middle of the other letters.] Achas (cas), *odious*. Athrist (trist), *very pensive*. Abwyd (bwyd), *bait*. Agwedd (gwedd), *form*. Aball (pall), *failing*. Afach (bach), *grapple*.

It seems that *a*, like *a privativum* of the Greek, is negative in *achlod*, from *a* and *clôd*, praise; and possibly in *afarn* (barn), bribery, and *afrys* (brys), slow.

A, a contraction of *an*. Anghyfiawn = annglyfiawn, *unjust*.

Ach, enhansive. [*Middle.*] Achludd (lludd), *obstruction*. Achres (rhês), *row*.

Ad, back, again = *re*. [*Mid.*] Adbrynu (prynu), *to redeem*. Adladd (lladd), *aftermath*.

Ad in several words implies negation or contrariety. Adfudd (budd), *loss*. Adffurf (ffurf), *formless*. Adfirain (mirain), *unseemly*. Adfarch (march), *gelding*. Adflas (blas), *ill taste*. Adwisg (gwisg), *disarray*.

"Pob gwledd, er y sydd heddyw,

"Wedi ei wledd adwledd yw" = *starvation*.

Ad takes also the form *at*: as, attalu (talu); ateb (eb.)

Add, enhansive. [*Mid.*] Addfed (med), *ripe*. Addfwyn (mwyn), *kind*. It seems to be a modification of *ad* in *addnaid* (naid), *refuge*.

* Generally, because some of the prefixes are sometimes redundant in point of *signification*,—serving merely to strengthen the *form* and afford a greater variety of *synonymous words*.

† In explaining the government of the prefixes considerable assistance has been derived from Rev. D. S. Evans' "Llythyaeth."

Af (probably a mutation of *am* = *an*) negative, privative, like Eng. *un* and *in*. [*Mid.*] Afreolaidd (rheolaidd), irregular. Aflwydd (llwydd), *misfortune*.

Ail, again = *re*. [*Mid.*] Ailfedyddio (bedyddio), *to rebaptize*. Ailbrynn (prynu), *to repurchase*.

Al, enhansive = *great*, *high*, or *very*. [*Radical*: sometimes *mid.*] Albrys (brys), *great haste*. Alcan (cân), *tin*. Alwen (gwen) = *very white*; the name of a river.

"It is often a prefix and affix in the names of places; as, *Alban, Penal, Alchwyd*: and rivers; as, *Alwen, Alun, Alaw, Alwy*."*

All (cf. Gr. ἀλλος, L. *alius*) another, other. [*Mid.*, except *t*, which retains its *rad.* *M* also retains its *rad.* in *allman, allmor, allmyr*.] Allwladu (gwlad), *to banish*. Alleiriad (gair), *paraphrase*.

Am (cf. Gr. ἀμ-φι, L. *am-bo*, Ger. *um*) round, about, like *am*, *peri*, *circum*. [*Mid.*] Amdori (tori), *to amputate*. Amdo (to), *shroud*.

Am is a mutation of *an*. [*Nasal*, § 87.] Ammharch (parch), *disrespect*. Ammrainnt (braint), *dishonour*.

Am is a contraction of *aml*, many. [*Mid.*] Amliw (lliw), *particoloured*. Amryw (rhyw), *sundry*.

An (cf. ἀνευ, *in, un*), negative, privative, corresponding to *dis*, *mis*, *in*, *un*. [*Nasal* of *c, t, d*: *nasal* and *mid.* of *g*: *rad.* of *ll* and *rh*. Words beginning with *p* and *b* are preceded by *am*.] Anghall (call), *indiscreet*. Annoeth (doeth), *unwise*. Angraddol (graddol), *ungraduated*. Anwir (gwir), *untruth*. Anllythyrenog (llythyrenog), *illiterate*. Anrhanadwy (rhanadwy), *indivisible*.

An in a few words has the force and is probably a mutation of *en*. Anllad (llawd), *wanton*. Andaw (taw), *to listen*. Anerch (arch), *to greet*. Anwir (gŵyr), *iniquitous, wicked*.

Ar, upon or over; high, great, very. [*Mid.* *Ll* in some words takes either *mid.* or *rad.* *M, p*, and *t* in a few instances retain their *rad.*] Argraff (craff), *inscription*. Arfri (bri), *high dignity*. Arloesi or arlloesi, (lloesi), *to clear*.

Ar in a few words seems to correspond to '*præ*.' Arfaeth (maeth), *predestination*. Argoel (coel), *omen*.

Arch (cf. Gr. ἀρχη), chief, principal. [*Mid.*] Archdeyrn (teyrn), *monarch*. Archddiagon (diagon), *archdeacon*. Archesgob (esgob), *archbishop*.

As, (cf. *ex*), parting, separating, like *ex*: emphatic. [The prefixes *as, es, ys, cys, dis, dys, dos, gos* and *hys*, govern the *rad.* of *m*; *mid.* of

* Dr. Pughe's Dictionary, *sub voce* '*al*.'

ll and *rh*. Their influence over the other mutable consonants has been explained under §§ 93-95.] *Asgon* (con), *humble*. *Asgwrn* (cwrn or corn), *bone*.

At is a mutation of *ad*, q. v. [*Middle*, except *t*, which retains its *rad*. *D* in many instances becomes *t* after *at*.] *Athorion* (pawr), *leavings*. *Attwf* (twf), *second growth*. *Attal* (dal), *to stop*.

At in a few words implies *to*. *Attodiad* (dodiad), *appendix*.

Cy, cyd, cyf, cym, cyn, cys (cf. Gr. σὺν, L. con,) conjunctive, mutual, like *co, col, com, con, cor*. [*Cyd* and *cyf* govern the *mid*. *Cy* occurs before *ng, ngh, f, l, th*. *Cym* is found before *m, mh*, and in a few words before the *mid*. of *t* and *g*. *Cyn*, before *n, nh*. *Cys* = *as*, q. v. See §§ 89-92.] *Cydredeg* (rhedeg), *to run together*. *Cywerth* (gwerth), *of equal value*. *Cynghor* (côr), *council*. *Cymmrawd* (brawd), *fellow*. *Cymdaith* (taith), *companion*. *Cynnal* (dâl), *to uphold*. *Cystal* (tâl), *of equal value*.

Cyd is generally changed into *cyt* before *t*. *Cyttras* (trâs), *consanguinity*.

Cyn is also cognate and synonymous with *cynt*. [*Mid.* and *nasal* of *d* and *t*; *rad.* or *mid.* of *rh*; *rad.* of *c* and *ll*; *mid.* of the remaining mutable consonants.] *Cyndad* (tâd), *first parent*. *Cynnelw* (delw), *pattern*. *Cynrhan* or *cynran* (rhan), *primary part*. *Cynead* (cad), *front of battle*. *Cynllun* (llun), *model*. *Cynfab* (mab), *firstborn son*.

Cynt, first. [*Mid.*] *Cyntair* (gair), *omen*. *Cyntanedig* (ganedig), *firstborn*.

Cyt, a mutation of *cyd*, is employed before *t*, whether a radical or a hardening of *d*. *Cyttir* (tir), *joint land*. *Cyttal* (dal), *to dwell together*.

Dad (dy-ad) repetition, like *re*; the undoing of an act, like *un* and *dis*. [*Mid.*] *Dadrodidi* (rhoddi), *to restore*. *Dadwisgo* (gwisgo), *to undress*.

Dad is sometimes changed into *dat*, q. v.

Dam (dy-am) = *am*, q. v. [*Mid.*] *Damredeg* (rhedeg), *to run about*. *Damdrychu* (trychu), *to amputate*.

Dar (dy-ar) = *ar*, q. v. *Darbwyllo* (pwylllo), *to persuade*. *Darllen* (lleain), *to read*.

Dar, like *ar*, corresponds sometimes to '*præ*.' *Darparu* (par = L. *paro*), *to prepare*. *Darbod* (bod), *to provide*.

Dar (di-ar) negative; diminutive. [See *ar*.] *Darfod* (bod), *to cease to exist*. *Dargwsg* (cwsg), *slumber*. *Darlosgi* (llosgi), *to singe*.

Dat, a mutation of *dad*, is used before *t*, and sometimes before other letters. *Dattroi* (troi), *to untwist*. *Datguddiad* (cuddiad), *revelation*.

Ded (dy-ed) = *ed*. [*Mid.*] Dedfryd * (bryd), *verdict*. Dedwydd, (gwydd), *happy*.

Di (cf. L. *de* in *decolor*, *deformis*, &c.), negative, privative, like *dis*, *in*, *un*, and the suffix *less*. [*Mid.*] Dilwgr (llwgr), *undefiled*. Diwerth, (gwerth), *worthless*.

(a) The 'i' is sometimes omitted before another vowel. Daeth (di-aeth), the reverse of *aeth*; i. e. *he came*. Del (di-el), *he will come*. Daw, (di-aw = au), *he will come*.

(b) *Di* has frequently the property of converting a substantive into an adjective; as *dawn*, talent, *diddawn*, untalented.

Dir (dy-ar or er) extreme, great; extremely, greatly. [*See ar.*] Dirboen (poen), *extreme pain*. Dirfawr (mawr), *very great*.

Dir is privative in *dirmyg* (myg), *contempt*, and *dirwest* (gwest), *abstinence*. It is probably compounded of *di* and *ar* or *er*.

Dis (di-ys; cf. L. *dis* in *dispar*, *dissimilis*, &c.) negative, undoing of an act, like *un*, *dis*, &c. [*See as.*] Disgloff (cloff), *not lame*. Disliw, (lliw), *colourless*.

Dy, augmentative or intensive; iterative. [*Middle*; sometimes the *asp.* of *c.*] Dirwyn (rhwyn = rhwym), *to wind*. Dyfal (mal = μελ-ει), *diligent*. Dychryn (cryn), *terror*.

(a) *Dy* is changed into *ty* in tywyll (gwyll), *dark*; tywallt (gwallaw), *to pour*; and tywynu (gwyn), *to shine*.

(b) The 'y' is sometimes omitted before another vowel. Dethol (dy-ethol, Gr. εθελω), *to select*. Dwyn (dy-gwain), *to bring*. Deffraw (dy-efraw), *to wake*. So in the words *dyma*, *dyna*, *dacw*, *dobry*, *diso*, *ducho*.

Dys (dy-ys), intensive. [*See as.*] Dystaw (taw), *silent*. Dysgwyl, (gwyl), *to wait*.

Dos (dy-gos), intensive. [*See as.*] Dosbarthu (parthu), *to distribute*.

Dym (dy-ym) = *ym*, q. v. [*Mid.*] Dymostwng (gostwng), *to humble one's self*. Dymgelu, (celu), *to hide one's self*.

E, intensive. [*See a.*] Echryn (cryn), *quaking*. Efryd (bryd), *study*. Edrych (drych = εἶπω), *to look*.

Ech (cf. Gr. εκ), emphatic. [*Middle*, except *echdoe*.] Echlur (llur), *livid*. Echdywynu (tywynu), *to glitter*.

(a) In *echdoe* and *echnos*, it seems to signify *priority*.

Ed, iterative; intensive. [*Middle*, except *edmyg*.] Edliw (lliw), *to upbraid*. Edmyg (myg), *honour*.

* Some derive *dedfryd* from *dedd*, a law, and *bryd*, opinion: *deulfryd* = the opinion or sentence of the law.

Eil = *ail*, q. v. [*Mid.*] Eilfam (mam), *second mother*.

En, emphatic. [*Rad.* of *c*, *ll*, *rh*, and *t*: *mid.* of the other consonants.] Encil (cil), *retreat*. Enllib (llib = *lib-ellus*), *slander*. Enfawr, (mawr), *very large*. Enwir (gwyr), *iniquitous*. "Cnawd difrod ar blant enwir." Myv. Arch.

Er,* impulsive, intensive; cause of. [See *ar*.] Ermyg (myg), *honour*. Ergryd (cryd), *cause of trembling, dread*.

(a) In some few words it takes the form *erdd*; as *erddrym* (grym); *erddrwng* (rhwng.)

Es, parting, separating = *ex*; emphatic. [See *as*.] Esgymuno = *ex-communico*. Estron = *extraneus*. Esgar (câr), *separation*. Esmwyth, (mwyth), *smooth*. Esblydd (plydd), *soft*.

Ges = *gos*, q. v. Gestwng = *gostwng*, to lower.

Go, partial, slight; partly, somewhat. [*Middle*: in a few words the *asp.* of *c*, and *rad.* of *ll*.] Gobaith (paith), *hope*. Gogleisio (clais), to tickle. Gochel (cêl), to beware.

(a) It has no particular meaning in the following words: gofâl (mal = *μελει*), *care*; gogonedd (conedd), *glory*; gollwng (llwng = *linguo*), to let go; golud (= *πλοῦτος*), *riches*.

(b) Coming before *a* it is sometimes changed into *gw*: as, *gwarchadw*, for *goarchadw*; *gwarchau*, for *goarchau*; *gwachul*, for *goachul*. Dr. Davies. It takes also the forms *ge* and *gwo*: as, *gelliwng* = *gollwng*; *gwobaith* = *gobaith*.

Gor, over, above, superior, extreme, very. [*Mid.* and *asp.* of *c*, *p*, *t*: *mid.* of *g*, *b*, *d*: *mid.* and sometimes *rad.* of *m*: *rad.* or *mid.* of *ll*.] Gorbwyso (pwyso), to overweigh. Gorphwyso (pwyso), to rest. Gorfawr, (mawr), *very great*. Gorllawn and gorlawn (llawn), *very full*.

(a) It takes sometimes the forms *gwor* and *gwr*. See below.

Gos (go-ys) = *go*, q. v. [See *as*.] Gosbwylo (pwylo), to decide partly.

(a) It sometimes takes the forms *ges* and *gwas*.

Gw = *go*, q. v., note (b.)

Gwor and **Gwr** = *gor*, q. v. Gworllwydd = *gorllwydd*, *prosperity*. Gwrfalch = *gorfalch*, *very proud*. Gwrandaw (andaw), to listen.

Gwas = *gos*, q. v. Gwasbarth = *gosbarth*, *distinct part*.

Gwrth, repulsive, contrary to, like *anti*, and *contra*. [*Mid.*] Gwrth-

* "Juan, to go; *Er-uan*, to cause to go (Basque.) Ouini, light; *Er-ouini*, to cause light or to enlighten (Egyptian)." Johnes' Philological proofs, &c.

ddywedyd (dywedyd), *to contradict*. Gwrthfarn (barn), *contrary judgment*.

Hy (cf. Gr. *εὖ*), apt to, easy, worthy of, capable of, like the suffix -'ble.' [Mid.] Hygof (côf), *memorable*. Hyfaeth (maeth), *easily nourished*. Hybarch (parch), *venerable*.

Lled, half, partly. [Mid.] Lledgyleh (cylch), *semicircle*. Lledfyw (byw), *half alive*.

Llet, a mutation of *lled*, is used before *t*. Llettyb (tyb), *opinion*. Llettrem (trem), *half glance*.

Pen, head, chief, supreme. [Radical, when used as a prefix or an adjective; when as a substantive, generally *mid*.] Penllywydd (llywydd), *chief leader*. Peutywysog (tywysog), *supreme prince*. Penfelyn (melyn), = *yellow as to the head; yellow-headed*.

Rhag, before, like *pre* and *fore*. [Mid.] Rhagosod (gosod), *to set before*. Rhagweled (gweled), *to foresee*.

Rhy, excessive, over. [Mid.] Rhybarch (parch), *extreme regard*.

(a) "Prefixed to the preterite of a verb, it forms the preterplup. tense; with the pres. tense, it implies the action done in a signal manner; and with the future it implies a time still further." Dr. Pughe's Dict. s. v. "rhy."

Tra (cf. L. *trans*), beyond, over, like *trans* and *tra*; very, extreme. [Asp. of *c*, *p*, *t*: *rad*. of the other letters. Two or three words assume the *mid*.] Trachas (cas), *extreme hatred*. Tragwyddol (gwydd), *being beyond cognizance; eternal*. Tramôr (môr), *transmarine*.

Try (fr. *tricy*), through, thoroughly, like *per* and *dia*. [Mid.] Tryfesur (mesur), *diameter*. Tryfrith (brith), *spotted all through*.

Ym (see § 224, foot-note), reflexive; mutual. [Mid.] Ymguddio, (cuddio), *to hide one's self*. Ymsenu (senu), *to chide mutually*.

Ys, a mutation of *es*, parting, separating, like *ex*; a lengthening of *s*; emphatic. [See *as*.] Ysgar = esgar, *separation*. Ystyn = estyn, *to extend*. Ysgrythyr = *scriptura*. Ysgol = *schola*. Ystafell = *stabulum*. Ysbwrial (bwrw), *refuse*. Ysgafn (cawn), *light*. Ysgarthion (carthion), *off-scourings*.

AFFIXES.

387. NOUN TERMINATIONS. Derivative nouns are formed from other simpler nouns, from adjectives or from verbs, by the addition of a termination.

From *nouns*; as *telynor*, from *telyn*; *cyfeillach*, from *cyfaill*.

From *adjectives*; as *callineb*, from *call*; *gwylder*, from *gwyl*.

From *verbs*; as *gwybodaeth*, from *gwybod*; *darlleneydd*, from *darllen*.

388. Abstract. The following are generally terminations of abstract nouns, denoting the *state*, *quality*, or *property* of the words to which they are suffixed. [English equivalents: *ance*, *ence*, *head*, *hood*, *ness*, *tude*, *ty*, &c.]

Deb: *purdeb*, *purity*; *uniondeb*, *uprightness*.

Der, ter: *gwylder*, *modesty*; *digter*, *anger*.

(a) *Dab* and *dwr* are sometimes found for *deb* and *der*; as *dyndab*, *sychdwr*, *cryfdwr*.

Did, dyd, tid, tyd (cf. L. *tut* in, e. g., *servitutis*): *gwendid*, *weakness*.

(a) *Tid* and *tyd* occur after the letter *c*; *ieuenetid*, *angenoctyd*.

Dod, Dawd (cf. L. *tat* in, e. g., *civitatis*): *Duwdod*, *Godhead*.

(a) *Dod* in simple historical prose; *dawd* in poetry and nervous prose. This remark applies equally to *od* and *awd*; *og* and *awg*.

Dra, tra: *eondra*, *boldness*; *cyfleustra*, *opportunity*.

Edd: *mawredd*, *greatness*; *puredd*, *purity*.

I: *brynti*, *filthiness*; *caledi*, *hardship*.

Iant, ant, aint: *llwyddiant*, *success*; *maddeuant*, *pardon*; *digofaint*, *anger*.

Id, yd (cf. L. *it* in, e. g., *amicitia*): *rhyddid*, *freedom*; *mebyd*, *infancy*.

Ioni: *daioni*, *goodness*; *haclioni*, *liberality*.

Ineb: *doethineb*, *wisdom*; *gwylltineb*, *rage*.

Ni: *tlysni*, *beauty*; *oerni*, *coldness*.

Rwydd: *caredigrwydd*, *kindness*; *perffeithrwydd*, *perfection*.

Wch, wg: *tawelwch*, *quietness*; *tywyllwg*, *darkness*.

Ydd: *llawenydd*, *joy*; *dywenydd*, *pleasure*.

389. Agent. The following denote *persons*, *agents*, *instruments*, &c. [English equivalents: *ar*, *er*, *yer*, *ess*, &c.]

Wr, iwr (rad. *gwr*, *mon*), fem. **wraig**. *Carwr*, *lover*. *Heliwr*, *hunter*. *Golehwraig*, *washer-woman*.

(a) *Iwr* is used, if the Infinitive verb ends in *io* or *ied*, or when verbs borrow *i* in their finite tenses. *Gweithiwr* (infin. vb. *gweithio*.) *Ystyriwr* (infin. vb. *ystyried*.) *Heliwr* (fin. vb. *heliaf*, §c.)

Ur, adur (*person or thing*), fem. **ures, urles, adures**. *Ffoadur*, *fugitive*. *Gwniadur*, *thimble*. *Golchuries*, *washer-woman*. *Pecladures*, *female sinner*.

(a) Some modern critics wish to confine *ur* and *adur* to persons, and *yr* and *adyr* to things and instruments.

Ydd (*person or thing*), fem. **yddes**. *Darllenydd*, *reader*. *Berwed-ydd*, *boiler*. *Gwasanaethyddes*, *maid-servant*.

Or, awr (*person*), fem. **ores**. *Cantor*, or *cantawr*, *singer*. *Cant-ores*, *female singer*.

Awdur, awdwr (*person*), fem. **odres**. *Llywiauwdur*, or *llywiauwdwr*, *governor*. *Amherawdwr*, *emperor*. *Amherodres*, *empress*. [Cf. *L. ator, atrix*; *imperator, imperatrix*.]

Awdr, odr (*person or thing*), fem. **odres**. *Amherawdr*, *emperor*. *Pwysawdr* or *pwysodr*, *rammer*.

Yr, adyr (*thing, instrument*) occur but rarely except in modern words. *Canwylyr*, *chandelier*. *Cysgiadyr*, *opiate*.

On (*person or thing*.) *Gwyddon*, *philosopher*. *Byson*, *ring*.

Es (cf. *L. ix*, *Eng. ess*) fem. termination added to animate objects. *Dynes*, *woman*. *Llewes*, *lioness*.

Al (*person or thing*.) *Gwestai*, *guest*. *Awyrbwysai*, *barometer*.

Ad, iad (*person, or verbal noun = ing*, see § 122.) *Ceidwad*, *keeper*. *Offeiriad*, *priest*. *Cadwad*, *keeping*. *Lladdiad*, *killing*.

An (*person or thing*.) *Mudan*, *dumb one*. *Cryman*, *sickle*.

In (*person = yn, or thing*.) *Dewin*, *wizard*. *Brenin*, *king*. *Cribiu*, *rake*. *Melin*, *mill*. *Megin*, *bellows*.

Arn (*instrument*) is probably a contraction of *harn* or *haiarn*, *iron*. *Coesarn*, *defence for the leg*. *Canwyllarn*, *candlestick*. *Llwyarn*, *spoon*.

El (*thing, instrument*.) *Pwyntel*, *pencil*. *Cantel*, *rim*.

Ell (*instrument*.) *Ysgrafell*, *scraper*. *Bwyell*, *axe*. *Picell*, *spear*.

OI (*instrument*.) *Trosol*, *lever*. *Craffol*, *writing pen*.

390. The **Diminutive** terminations are the following: **an**, mas. or fem.; **yn**, mas., **en**, fem.; **ig**, **og**, and **ell**, fem. [With *ell*, cf. *L. ella* in *puella*; *Eng. el* in *satchel*.]

Llyfran, *m., little book.* Bwyellan, *f., small hatchet.* See § 145.
 Bachgenyn, *little boy.* Pelen, *little ball.*
 Ynysig, *islet.* Pwtog, *short little woman.* Iyrchell, *young roe.*

391. **Promiscuous.** The following affixes are too promiscuous to be classified under distinct heads.

Ach (*reproach; union, collection, &c.*) Corach, *dwarf.* Cyfeillach, *society.* So also, *blythach, buach, celach, bwbach: cyfrinach, cyfeddach, ysbleddach, afallach, nodach, sitrach.*

Ad and **hād**, sometimes *üad* and *häd* (*abstract, and sometimes verbal noun.*) Cyfiawnhäd, *justification.* Cwblhäd, *finishing.*

Awd or **od**, denotes (a) an *act, verbal noun* = *äd, iäd.* Darllenawd, *reading.* Gyrawd, *driving.* (b) A *thing done* (cf. *L. atum*); and when suffixed to an instrument, it denotes a blow given with that instrument. Ffonod, *a blow given with a stick.* So, *gwialenod, cleddyfod, arfod, gorddod.*

Aeg (*language.*) Cymraeg, *Welsh language.* Ffrancaeg, *French language.*

Eg (*language; science or art.*) Cernyweg, *Cornish language.* Rhesymieg, *logic.* Rheithieg, *rhetoric.*

Aeth, iaeth (*state or quality, abstract noun; science, art, system, &c.*) Cadwedigaeth, *salvation.* Llysieuath, *botany.* Ieithyddiaeth, *philology.*

Anaeth, aniaeth = *aeth, iaeth.* Gwasanaeth, *service.* Gwlybaniaeth, *wetness.* Gofaniaeth, *smith's craft.* Cryddaniaeth, *shoemaker's trade.*

Aid (= *ful in handful.*) Basgedaid, *basketful.* Dyrnaid, *handful.*

Ain = *en.* Celain, *carcase.* Putain, *harlot.* Bathain, *medal.*

As (*union, conjunction, &c.*) Teyrnas, *kingdom.* Priodas, *marriage.* Perthynas, *relation.* Galanas, *massacre.* Cymdeithas, *society.*

Au = *eu*, (see § 102.)

Cyn, *mas., cen, fem.* (= *yn, en*), occur only in a few words. Ffwlcyn, *silly fellow.* Ffolcen, *silly woman.*

Eb (cf. *Gr. ἔπος*), *expression or utterance.* Galareb, *elegy.* Deiseb, *petition.*

Ed (*what is done or suffered; cf. L. atum.*) Adduned, *vow.* Tyuged, *fate.* Colled, *loss.* Niwed, *harm.* Caethiwed, *captivity.*

En (*fem.: yn, mas. q. v.*), is added to *pl. nouns* to form the singular; and also to *sing. nouns and adjectives.* Mesen (*pl. mes*), *acorn.* Derwen, (*pl. derw*), *an oak.* Hogen, *girl.* Llomen, *naked female.*

Es = *as*. Llynges, *fleet*. Llawes, *sleeve*. Buelies, *milking fold*.

Eu (see § 102.) Angeu, *death*. Geleu, *leech*. Ceneu, *cub*.

Fa (*place*.) Camfa, *stile*. Cigfa, *shamble*. Porfa, *pasture*.

(a) *Fa* is also used metaphorically. *Cynnulleidf*a signifies, literally, *a place of assembly*; but, metaphorically, *those who assemble, congregation*. So also, *ysfa*, *llosgfu*, *cnofa*, &c.

Fan (rad. man, *place*.) Trigfan, *dwelling place*.

Had = *ád*, q. v.

Iaeth = *aeth*, q. v.

Iar occurs only in a few obsolete words. Rhodiar, *ranger*. Toniar, *wave*. Baniar, *banner*. Ufeliar, *sulphur*.

Ing, occurs only in a few words. Gwyning, *sap of timber*. Rhudding, *heart of timber*. Gweiling, *brass*.

L is sometimes suffixed to words without conveying any particular meaning. Awdl (= Gr. ᾠδή), *ode*. Banadl, *broom*. So also, *byddagl*, *chwibanogl*, *tymmestl*, *chwynogl*.

Le (rad. lle, *place*.) Gauafle, *winter quarters*.

Od = *awd*, q. v.

Og or **awg** (*one in possession of, having, full of, &c.*) Swyddog, *officer*. Marchog, *knight*. Ysgyfarnog, *hare*.

Oni, oneg, oniaeth (*science or art*.) Barddoni, *bardic science*. Seroneg, *astronomy*. Barddoniaeth, *poetry*.

Red occurs but very seldom. Gweithred, *act*. Breithred, *conflict*.

Ryn, mas. **ren**, fem. (= *yn, en*), occur only in a few words. Llipryn, *fribble*. Llipren, *fribble*.

W has no peculiar meaning. Tarw, *bull*. Twrw, *noise*. Agerw, *vapour*.

(a) Dr. Pughe says, "The *w* has a very peculiar quality, as a termination of primitive nouns, of giving a negative or contrary meaning to them. Thus *hel*, a gathering, with *w* affixed, implies what is past gathering, or a possession: *ul* implies what is humid, and with the affix *w* it implies what is divested of humidity, that is, cinders or ashes: and thus in all other instances."* This, however, should be received with caution, as the etymology and the explanations assigned to almost all the words, adduced to illustrate this signification, are dubious and unsatisfactory.

Wy occurs but seldom. Cynnorthwy, *help*. Brythwy, *tumult*. Macwy, *youth*. Camwy, *perversion*. Canwy, *splendour*.

* Grammar, p. 21.

Yf occurs but seldom. Peryf, *causer*. Gwryt, *virgin*; *bachelor*. Cleddyf, *sword*.

Yll (mas., perhaps connected with *ell*.) Brithyll, *trout*. Curyll, *sparrow-hawk*. Cerfyll, *statue*. [Camyll = κάμηλος; ffrewyll = φραγέλλιον.]

Yn (mas.: *en*, fem., q. v.) is added to pl. nouns to form the singular; and also to singular nouns and adjectives. Plentyn (pl. plant), *child*. Aderyn (pl. adar), *bird*. Cardotyn, *beggar*. Coegyn, *conceited fellow*.

392. ADJECTIVE TERMINATIONS.

Adwy (*that may be, capable of = able, ible*.) Credadwy, *credible*. Gwerthadwy, *saleable*.

Aid (*made of, covered with = en or n*.) Euraid, *golden*. Arianaid, *silvered over*.

Aidd (cf. Gr. εἶδος: *like, resembling = ish, ly, like*.) Plentynaid, *childish*. When suffixed to adjectives, it signifies *partly, somewhat = ish, some*. Pruddaid, *somewhat sorrowful*.

Ain (*full of, possessing = ous, ful, y*.) Prydain, *beautiful*. Mad-iain, *bounteous*.

Awr or **or** (*full of*.) Geiriawr, *full of words*.

Awg or **og** (cf. L. *ox* or *oc* in *ferox, ferocis*: *abounding with, full of, possessing*.) Brwynog, *abounding with rushes*. Bywiog, *vigorous*. Arfog, *armed*.

Awl or **ol** (cf. L. and Eng. *al*: *relating to; of the nature of; having = al*.) Dynol, *human*. Gwrol, *manly*. Synwryol, *rational*.

(a) *Awg* and *awl* are used mostly in poetry: *og* and *ol* in prose,—like the verbal terminations *aw, iaw, and o, io*. [See § 231, (a.)]

(b) Some writers, in order to avoid an hiatus, prefer *awg* and *awl*, even in prose, when *o* occurs in the preceding syllable; and *og* and *ol*, in poetry, when the preceding syllable ends in *a*. Crynoawl, not crynöl. Athrofaol, not athrofaawl.

Ed (cf. Eng. *d, th*) and **fed** are the endings of the ordinal numbers = *th*. Chweched, *sixth*. Seithfed, *seventh*.

Edig (cf. L. *amatus*, Eng. *loved*), strictly denotes the past passive participle; but the words, of which it forms a part, are generally used as adjectives = *ed, en, t*. Dysgedig, *learned*. Colledig, *lost*. Caredig, *beloved*.

Edd, fem. of *ydd*, q. v. Trydedd, *third*. Pedwaredd, *fourth*.

Fawr (rad. *mawr, great*.) Clodfawr, *much praised*. Gwerthfawr, *precious*.

Fed = *ed*.

Gar (rad. *câr*: *fond of, addicted to, having, or endued with.*) *Gwin-gar, fond of wine. Rhyfelgar, apt to war.*

Ig (cf. L. and Eng. *ic* in *angelicus, angelic: relating to; relating to a nation, &c.* = *ish; full of; having.*) *Gwledig, rural. Gwyddelig, Irish. Iuddewig, Jewish. Gwenwynig, poisonous. Boneddig = having a stem; noble.*

In (cf. Eng. *en*: *consisting or made of.*) *Priddin, earthen. Meinin, stony.*

Llawn, lawn (*full of.*) *Digllawn, wrathful. Ffyddlawn, faithful.*

(a) *Llawn* and *lawn* are frequently written *llon* and *lon*; as *digllon, ffyddlon*; but as *llon* signifies *cheerful*, the forms *digllawn* and *ffydd-lawn* are to be preferred.

Llyd, lyd, formerly fem. *lled, led* (cf. L. *lent* in *violentus, &c.*: *full of, especially of some disagreeable or unpleasant substance.*) *Gwenwynllyd, poisonous. Gwaedlyd, bloody. Tarthlyd, foggy. Creuled, fem. of creulyd, bloody.*

(a) *Llyd*, is generally used after *ng, m, n, and r*; *lyd* generally after *b, ch, d, dd, f, g, p, s, t, th*, and the vowels.*

Og = *awg, q. v.*

Ol = *awl, q. v.*

Us (cf. L. *os*, and Eng. *ous* in *vinosus, dangerous: full of.*) *Ofnus, fearful. Rhyfygus, presumptuous.*

Ydd, fem. *edd* (cf. Eng. *d, th*), the termination of the ordinals *trydydd, third, and pedwerydd, fourth.*

393. Two adjectival terminations are sometimes joined together, the latter modifying the signification of the preceding. In many instances, however, the latter is redundant.

Og aidd; as, *taiogaidd.*

Us ol; as, *iachusol.*

Lawn us; as, *boddlonus.*

Us aidd; as, *trefnusaid.*

Aidd ol; as, *sancteiddiol.*

In ol; as, *gerwinol.*

Edig ol; as, *caredigol.*

Fawr us; as, *clodforus.*

TERMINATIONS OF INFINITIVE VERBS have been arranged and exemplified under §§ 229—239; and of FINITE VERBS under §§ 290, 297.

* D. S. Evans' "Llythraeth," § 187.

PART III.—SYNTAX.



THE ARTICLE.

394. The Welsh article has the forms *y*, *yr*, and *'r*. The difference between *y* and *yr* is somewhat similar to that which exists between *a* and *an* in English; that is, *y* precedes a consonant; as *y dyn*, the man; *yr*, a vowel and the aspirate *h*; as *yr awen*, the muse; *yr haf*, the summer.

395. When a word ending in a vowel precedes the article, the contracted form *'r* is frequently used, whether the following word begins with a vowel or a consonant: as,

Yn awr yw *'r* amser, *now is the time.*

Y gauaf a'r haf, *the winter and the summer.*

Y gwir a'r gau, *the true and the false.*

(a) This contraction is made for the sake of euphony and neatness, the phrase '*y gwir a'r gau*' being more euphonic and compact than '*y gwir ac y gau*.' But some writers, unwilling to indulge in too many contractions, use this form of the article, only when it is preceded by the words *a*, *i*, *o*, *na*, *no*, *mo*, *gyda*, and *yng nghyda*; as, *y tad a'r fam*, the father and the mother; *lladd â'r cleddyf*, to kill with the sword; *myned i'r dref*, to go the town; *dyfod o'r wlad*, to come from the country; *gyda'r gwr*, with the man, &c.

396. The letter *w*, standing at the beginning of a word, is a consonant when it is pronounced *conjointly* with the vowel following. Hence this *w* is preceded by the form *y*: as,

Y waedd, *the cry.*

Y wich, *the squeak.*

Y weledigaeth, *the vision.*

Y wynfydedig forwyn, *the blessed virgin.*

(a) Such words as *gwlaw*, *gwlan*, *gwledd*, *gw lith*, *gwlydd*, *gw rach*, *gwraig*, *gwryf*, *gwryg* are monosyllabic words: hence such of them as are feminine are, as above, preceded by the form *y*; as,

Y wledd, *the feast.*

Y wrach, *the hag.*

Y wraig, *the woman.*

(b) It makes no difference with regard to the properties of *w* whether the word begins in its radical state with *gw*; as, *y wobr* (rad. *gwobr*), the reward, or simply with *w*; as, *yr wythnos*, the week.

397. But when *w* is sounded *by itself* (i. e. has the same sound as the Eng. *oo* in *good*, *boon*), it is a vowel, and is therefore preceded by the form *yr*: as,

Yr wden, *the withe.*
Yr wŷn, *the lambs.*

Yr wrthddadl, *the objection.*
Yr wyl, *the feast.*

398. In some monosyllabic words, the letter *i*, when followed by a vowel, is in S. W. considered as a consonant or a vowel; and hence is preceded either by *y* or *yr*.

Y iaith or yr iaith, *the language.* Y iawn or yr iawn, *the atonement.*
Y iwrech, or yr iwrech, *the roebuck.* Y iar or yr iar, *the hen.*


“Yr wyf yn tybied fod y iaith yn rhwydd a deallgar.” Theo. Evans.

399. The article governs a *feminine noun singular* in the *middle* sound: it governs a *feminine noun plural*, and a *masculine noun, sing. and plural*, in the *radical*.

Fem. sing. Y frenines (rad. brenines), *the queen.*
Fem. pl. Y breninesau, *the queens.*
Mas. Y brenin, *the king.* Y breninoedd, *the kings.*

400. The article affects an adjective or an adverb in the same way as it affects a noun: i. e. the adjective or the adverb is put in the *radical* or *middle* according to the gender and number of the noun following.

Y deilwng rian (rad. teilwng), *the worthy lady.*
Y dra theilwng rian (r. tra), *the very worthy lady.*
Y teilwng rianod, *the worthy ladies.*
Y goruchaf Dduw, *the supreme God.*

401. *Exceptions.* a) The cardinal numbers, even when followed by singular substantives of the feminine gender, retain the *radical* after the article: as, y pum torth, *the five loaves*; dammeg y deng morwyn, *the parable of the ten virgins.*  But dau, two, *mas.*, and dwy, two, *fem.* are softened after the article: as, y ddau lyfr, *the two books*; y ddwy gareg, *the two stones.*

b) **Ll** and **Rh**. A fem. *noun* sing. having *Ll* or *Rh* for its initial, retains the *radical* sound after the article; as, y llong, *the ship*; y rhwyf, *the oar.*

“Y llinos wâr ar frig y llwyn.” D. S. Evans.

But a fem. *adjective* sing. is softened, as above: y lidiog eneth (rad. llidiog), *the angry girl*; y rywiog eneth (rad. rhywiog), *the kind girl.*

c) The names of rivers, although feminine, retain the *radical* sound after the article. Y Tafwys (not Dafwys), *the Thames.*

d) *Bala* (the name of a town), although of the feminine gender, retains its *radical* sound after the article. Y Bala.

402. *Observation.* It has been observed, under ‘Etymology,’ that the omission of the letter *g* is the sign of its middle sound. Now, if it happens that the initial letter of a word, after the omission of *g*, is a vowel, that

word must be preceded by the form *yr*; as, *yr eneth* (rad. *geneth*), *the girl*; *yr afr* (rad. *gafir*), *the goat*; *yr wrthddadl* (rad. *gwrthddadl*), *the objection*.

But if the initial letter, after the omission of *g*, is a consonant, the word should be preceded by the form *y*; as, *y làn* (rad. *glàn*), *the bank*; *y lan-deg ferch* (rad. *glandeg*), *the comely girl*; *y wefus* (rad. *gwefus*), *the lip*.

403. The article (as in English) must always precede the noun, or the noun and its concomitants, which it defines; as,

Y dyn, *the man*. *Yr hen ddyn*, *the old man*.

Y tra thrugarog Dduw, *the very merciful God*.

404. When two or more *definite* nouns come together, one depending on, or governed by the other, the *last* noun only will admit of the article, or its equivalent; as,

Mâb y brenin = *son of the king*; *the son of the king*.

Gwâs mâb y brenin, *the servant of the son of the king*.

Tŷ fy nhâd = *house of my father*; *the house of my father*.

Cronglwyd tŷ fy nhâd, *the roof of the house of my father*.

(a) A '*definite noun*' is a noun preceded by an article, either really or virtually.

405. When the former of two nouns is definite, and the latter indefinite, no article is used; as,

Mab brenin = *son of a king*; *the son of a king*.

Brenin gogoniant, *the king of glory*.

(a) When a demonstrative pron. belongs to the former of two substantives, the article is sometimes placed before the first, the demonstrative pron. coming after the second substantive; as *y brenin gogoniant hwn* = *the king of glory this*; *this king of glory*. This construction, however, is somewhat offensive to the Welshman's ear, and should, if possible, be avoided.

406. When neither of two nouns is definite, the construction is the same as above, or the preposition *i* will precede the latter; as,

Mab brenin, *a son of a king*. *Mab i frenin*, *a son to a king*.

407. When the former of two nouns is indefinite, and the latter definite, the article and preposition *i* will precede the latter; as,

Mab i'r brenin, *a son to the king*.

408. When two nouns come together, the latter in the genitive, and equivalent to an adjective, the former will admit of

an article before it. And in this case the genitive is treated like an adjective; that is, it is put in the *rad.* or *mid.* sound, according to the gender and number of the noun on which it depends.

- (m.) { Y pen teulu, *the householder.*
 { Y llyfr gweddi, *the prayer-book.*
 (f.) { Y ddinas wagedd (rad. gwagedd), *the city of vanity.*
 { Yr awr weddi (rad. gweddi), *the hour of prayer.*
 { Pelydron clauer y seren ddydd, *the bright rays of the day star.*

409. When two nouns are connected by the preposition *o*, the article may precede both; as,

Y rhan fwyaf o'r arian, *the greatest part of the money.*

410. When two or more nouns come together, referring to the same person or thing, the article should be placed before the first only; as,

Y pwnc neu fatter, *the subject or matter.*

Yr ysgrifenydd a thrysorydd, *the secretary and treasurer.*

411. But when two or more nouns come together, and refer to different persons or things, the article, or its equivalent, should be repeated before each; as,

Y brenin neu'r frenines = *the king or the queen.*

Yr ysgrifenydd a'r trysorydd = *the secretary and the treasurer.*

Y gwr, y wraig a'r plant = *the husband, the wife, and the children.*

Yn dy ffydd, dy ofn a'th gariad = *in thy faith, thy fear, and thy love.*

412. Similarly, when adjectives precede a definite noun, it is far more elegant and expressive to repeat the article, or its equivalent, before each of them; as,

Y caredig, yr hynaws a'r ffyddlawn gyfaill = *the kind, the good-natured, and the faithful friend.*

Fy ngharedig, fy hynaws a'm ffyddlawn gyfaill = *my kind, my good-natured, and my faithful friend.*

413. An adjective, preceded by an article, is in Welsh, as in English, equivalent to a noun; as,

Y cyfiawn a ragora ar ei gymydog, *the just excels his neighbour.*

414. The article, standing immediately before *hwn*, *neb*, *sawl*, &c., serves to form relative pronouns; as *yr hwn* = *the this*; who: *y neb* = *the one, whoever.*

415. When a noun is accompanied by a demonstrative pro-

noun, an article, or its equivalent, will always be placed before the noun,—the demonstrative occupying the last place; as,

Y dyn hwn = *the man this* } *this man.*
 Y dyn yma = *the man here* }
 Fy mab hwn = *my son this; this my son.*

(a) In Greek the article is sometimes employed in the same manner; as,

'Απανεστη ἐκ τῶν χωρέων τοῦτων = *dychwelodd o'r cyrau hyn.*
 ἡ γενέα αὐτῆς = *y genedlaeth hon.* 'Ο ἀνὴρ οὗτος = *y gwr hwn.*

416. **Article before proper names.** Names of *persons* have no article before them, except (a) When they require to be particularly referred to, in which case they are usually accompanied by an adjective; as, *Yr Haman ddichellgar*, the crafty Haman; *y Moses hwn*, this Moses. (b) When they are made plural: as, *Y Gwyniaid o Lan Brân*, the Gwynnes of Glan Brân.

(a) The name "Jesus" is, however, usually written *yr Iesu* = ὁ Ἰησοῦς, the Jesus.

417. Names of *rivers* have, as in English, the article generally placed before them; as,

Yr Iorddonen, the Jordan. *Y Tafwys, the Thames.* *Y Dyfrdwy, the Dee.* (See § 401, c.)

418. Some names of *places* (countries, towns, &c.) are preceded by the article; as,

Yr Amerig, <i>America.</i>	Yr Alban, <i>Scotland.</i>
Yr Affrig, <i>Africa.</i>	Yr Iwerddon, <i>Ireland.</i>
Yr India, <i>India.</i>	Yr Amwythig, <i>Shrewsbury.</i>
Yr Aipht, <i>Egypt.</i>	Y Bala, <i>Bala.</i>
Yr Eidal, <i>Italy.</i>	Y Wyddgrug, <i>Mold.</i>
Yr Ysbaen, <i>Spain.</i>	Yr Aberniaw, <i>Barmouth.</i>

NOUNS.

419. **Apposition.** When two nouns come together, relating to the same person or thing, the latter is said to be in apposition to the former.

420. The noun that is set in apposition retains the *radical* sound of its initial letter: as,

Paul, *gwas Iesu Grist, Paul, the servant of Jesus Christ.*
 Môn, *mam Cymru, Mon, the mother of Wales.*

421. The rule is the same when the sentence contains a series of appositions; i. e., the apposition word retains the *radical*.

Mae genym gyfeillion ffyddlawu, brodyr caredig, merched da, a llyfrau defnyddiol.

(a) If an article, a possessive pronoun or an adjective intervenes, the apposition word will, of course, be governed by it. Buddug *y* frenines. Arthur *fy* nhad. Môn, *hen* fam Cymru.

422. But when a common noun, immediately following a proper noun, has acquired the character of an epithet or title, its initial letter should be changed into the *middle* sound, whether the noun, to which it is added, be *masculine* or *feminine*; as,

Dafydd frenin, *King David*. Idris Gawr, *Idris the giant*.
Ioan Fedyddiwr, *John the Baptist*. Mair Forwyn, *Mary the virgin*.

423. *Observ.* In the phrase 'Paul, gwas Iesu Grist,' *gwas* is distinct from the word *Paul*, and is separated from it by a comma; in the phrase 'Dafydd frenin,' the two words coalesce into one notion, and cannot be separated by the intervention of a comma. In other words, *gwas* is placed *appositively*; *frenin* is placed *attributively*.

424. This *epithet*, or common noun (e. g. *Dafydd frenin*,) is virtually definite; and hence, if it be made to precede the proper noun, an article must go before it; as,

Y brenin Dafydd = *the King David*. Y prydydd Rhys.
Y forwyn Fair. Y frenines Fuddug. Y cawr Idris.

(a) If the proper noun be feminine it is sometimes, but not necessarily, *softened*. Y forwyn Fair (rad. *Mair*.)

425. The common noun may also be preceded by an article, even when it follows the proper noun; as *Dafydd y brenin*.

Thus 'King David' may be expressed in three different ways. 'Dafydd frenin;' 'y brenin Dafydd;' 'Dafydd y brenin.'

426. '**Yn apposition.**' The particle *yn* is employed chiefly to set the predicate of a clause in apposition to the subject, or the latter of two accusatives in apposition to the former; as,

Dafydd sydd yn frenin, David is king.

A Duw a alwodd y goleuni *yn ddydd*, and God called *the light day*.

* * The use of *yn* will be more copiously discussed under "Apposition Verbs" and "Participles."

427. *Mal, fal, fel*, and *megys* are strictly *modal*, corresponding to the English ‘*as*.’

Efe, *megys* brenin, a barodd i’w holl ddeiliaid barchu y ddelw, *he, as a king, ordered all his subjects to respect the image.*

428. Appositions, equivalent to such as are introduced by ‘being,’ are expressed in Welsh by a *cause clause*; or a *relative*; or *absolutely*, thus: *a* or *ac*, *pers. pronoun*, ‘*yn*’ *ap-position, apposition-word*.

“Arthur, being a good poet.”

Arthur, *gan ei fod yn brydydd da. (Cause.)*

Arthur, *yr hwn sydd yn brydydd da. (Rel.)*

Arthur, *ac yntau yn brydydd da. (Absolute.)*

Pa ham y mae efe ac ereill, *a hwythau yn Iuddewon*, yn credu?
Pwy, *ac efe yn ddiniwed*, a gollwyd? Job iv. 7.

429. Two nouns are set in apposition by means of the prep. *o (of)*, when the one describes the *character, occupation, &c.*, of the other, and when one of them may be converted into an adjective, or, in fact, frequently omitted.

Gwr o brophwyd = gwr prophwydol = prophwyd, *a prophet.*

Llancesau o wryfon = llancesau gwryfol = gwryfon, *virgins.*

Benyw o olchyddes, or golchyddes o fenyw = golchyddes, *a washer-woman.*

(*a*) A similar idiom occurs in English. “Such expressions as *a rogue of a lawyer, a rascal of an attorney, &c.*, are equivalent to a *roguish lawyer, a rascally attorney.*”*

So also in Greek: Σὺς μέγα χρῆμα. Τοῦ χειμῶνος χρῆμα ἀφόρητον.

430. Appositions are sometimes made by placing *gan* before the apposition-word, if a *noun*; *genyff, &c.*, if a *pronoun*; as,

Y milwr *gan*† Arthur.

Y sant *gan* Bedr.

Y lleidr *genyt* ti.

Y diogyn *ganddo* ef.

431. **Nominative case.** The most natural position of the nominative case is after the verb, which, owing to its being the ‘principal word,’ stands at the beginning of the sentence; as,

A dygodd *y ddaiar* egin, *and the earth brought forth grass.*

A bendithiodd *Duw* hwynt, *and God blessed them.*

* Arnold’s English Grammar.

† Probably *gan* here signifies ‘*with*.’ If so, *Y milwr gan* Arthur will be translated by ‘the soldier with Arthur;’ that is, *dwelling with or in the person of Arthur.*

432. But when the nominative is the emphatic term, and frequently even in simple narration, it is made to precede the verb, in accordance with its position in the English language.

Arthur sydd yn myned yno, Arthur is going there.

A'r Arglwydd Dduw a luniasai y dyn, and the Lord God had formed the man.

433. When the nominative occupies the first place in the clause, or immediately follows its verb, it retains the *radical* form; but when it follows the verb, and is separated from it by an adverb, or a phrase, its initial letter is changed into the *middle* sound; as,

{	Dyunion dewr a ddaethant yno,	}	} <i>brave men came there.</i>
{	Daeth dyunion dewr yno,	}	
	Daeth yno ddynion dewr,		

* * The syntax of the nom. case will be enlarged upon under the 'Verbs.'

434. **Genitive case.** When two nouns of different relation come together, one of them is said to be in the *genitive* case.

435. In Welsh, the noun in the genitive relation is placed *after* the one on which it depends.

Mab *brenin* = *the son of a king; a king's son.*

Mab *brenin Lloegr* = *the son of the King of England; the King of England's son.*

(a) But in compounds the one that is in the genitive relation is put *first*, and governs the other in the *middle* sound. *Brenindy* = *ty brenin*, a King's house. (See § 77.)

436. The genitive relation is expressed, (a) by *mere apposition*, i. e., by simply putting the genitive in *apposition* to the other noun without any sign indicative of a case; (b) by *the preposition* "o," of; (c) by *other prepositions*, such as *ar*, on, at, to, *am*, for, *dros*, for, *rhag*, because of, for.

437. The genitive expressed by *mere apposition* retains the *radical* sound of its initial consonant; as,

Coron *brenin*, *a king's crown.* Olwynion *cerbyd*, *the wheels of a carriage.* Heol *Babilon*, *the street of Babylon.*

(a) But if any other word intervene between the two nouns, the genitive will, of course, be governed by it.

Ty y frenines, *the queen's house.* *Ty fy nhad*, *my father's house.*

(b) After *teyrnas*, kingdom, *teml*, temple, *ty*, house, *eglwys*, church, &c., the word *Duw*, God, generally, but not necessarily, takes the middle

sound. (Eglwys Dduw; ty Dduw.) So also do the words *Dewi* and *Dafydd*. (Esgob ty Ddewi.) But if an adjective belongs to the former substantive, and follows it, the genitive will retain its radical. Eglwys sanctaidd Duw, *God's holy Church*.

438. The genitive is expressed by **mere apposition** when *possession, property, or relation* is denoted; such as *the relation of the possessor to the thing possessed; the relation of an agent to an action or effect; the mutual relation of persons; the relation of a whole to its several parts*.

Ty brenin, *a King's house*. Llyfr Dafydd, *David's book*. Mantell Angharad, *Angharad's mantle*. Gwaith Duw, *God's work*. Nyth aderyn, *a bird's nest*. Teml Solomon, *Solomon's temple*. Iaith plentyn, *a child's language*. Lleferydd dyn, *a man's voice*. Cwyp Adda, *Adam's fall*. Dysgrifiad y bobl, *the people's description*. Tystiolaeth cariad, *love's testimony*. Ystyr y gair, *the meaning of the word*. Rhagoroldeb iaith y Cymry, *the excellency of the language of the Welsh*. Buchedd ein Prynwyr, *the life of our Redeemer*. Eisieu bwyd, *want of food*. Llyfr y Dadguddiad, *the book of Revelation*. Tad y bachgen, *the boy's father*. Mam fy nhad, *my father's mother*. Gwas ei frawd, *his brother's servant*. Wyr brenines Lloegr, *the queen of England's grandson*. Olwynion cerbyd, *the wheels of a carriage*. Hwyl llong, *the sail of a ship*. To ty, *the roof of a house*. Sail ty mab Lloegr, *the foundation of the house of the son of the king of England*.

439. When the genitive expresses the *age* or *price* of the object described, the **mere apposition** is used: and in this case the genitive is treated like an adjective; that is, if the preceding noun be *feminine singular*, the genitive takes the *middle*; but if it be *fem. plural*, or *masculine singular* or *plural*, the genitive retains the *radical* sound.

Gwr canmlwydd = *a man of a hundred years*.

Gwraig ganmlwydd = *a woman of a hundred years*.

Llyfr ceiniog, *a penny book*. Canwyll geiniog, *a penny candle*:

440. The **mere apposition** genitive occurs after nouns pl. when it describes the *place* from which persons or objects come, or to which they belong.*

Gwyr Athen, *the men of Athens*. Merched Cymru, *the women of Wales*. Gwragedd Llundain. Esgidiau Amwythig. Cyllyll Caerangon.

(a) If the former noun be singular, the genitive is preceded by *o*, unless the genitive is an epithet, in which case it generally takes the form of *mere apposition*. Gwr o Athen. Merch o Gymru. Lewis Mon. Gruffydd Maelor.

* See Dr. Davies' Grammar, p. 156.

441. When the genitive expresses the *material* or *substance*, of which a thing is made, it may either be *mere apposition*, or preceded by the preposition *o*; if mere apposition, the genitive is treated like an adjective. (§ 439.)

Ty coed, *or* ty o goed, *a house of* (= *made of*) *wood*.

Gwialen haiarn, *or* gwialen o haiarn, *a rod of iron*.

Ceffyl pren, *a wooden horse*. Sarff bres, *a brazen serpent*.

(a) There is the same difference between (e. g.) "gwialen haiarn" and "gwialen o haiarn," as there is in English between "an iron rod" and "a rod of iron."

(b) The prep. *o* governs the *middle*: ty o goed. After the word *mâth*, sort, the word *ar* is occasionally met with instead of *o*; *mâth ar* liw glâs ydyw, *it is a sort of a blue colour*.

442. When the genitive describes the *quality* or *property* of an object, it is preceded by *o*.

Dyn o ddysg, *a man of* (= *with, having*) *learning*.

Gwr o ddoniau mawr, *a man of great talents*.

Bachgen o daldra mawr. Adeilad o uchder rhyfeddol.

(a) This genitive is often equivalent to an adjective. Dyn o ddysg = dyn dysgedig = *a learned man*.

443. When the genitive is equivalent to an apposition, it is preceded by *o*. (See § 429.) [Apposition or explanatory genitive.]

Gwr o brophwyd = *a man of a prophet; a prophet*.

Gwr o saer, *a carpenter*. Cyfaill o Sais, *an English friend*.

Y pwnc o gyfiawnhâd, *the subject of justification*.

Y gelfyddyd o areithyddiaeth, *the art of elocution*.

444. When the preceding substantive, or substantive word, is contained in the genitive, the genitive is preceded by *o*. [Partitive genitive.] Such words as the following are contained in the genitive, or are *parts* of the *whole* which the genitive expresses: substantive words expressive of number and quantity; numerals; adjectives of the superlative degree; and such pronouns and substantive words as *prwy*, *who*, *neb*, *nobody*, *hyn*, *this*, *llawer*, *much*, *amryw*, *several*, *rhai*, *some*, *ychydig*, *few*.

Lliaws o ddynion, *a multitude of men*. Llu o filwyr, *a company of soldiers*. Rhan o'r tir, *a part of the land*. Darn o'r pren, *a piece of the timber*. Swm o arian, *a sum of money*. Ugain o wyr, *twenty men*. [See below (b)]. Y goreu o'r cwbl, *the best of the whole*. Y flwyddyn

olaf o'i deyrnasiad, *the last year of his reign*. Pwy o honoch? *which of you?* Hyn o arian, *this much of money*. Llauer o ddwfr, *much water*.

(a) Nouns and pronouns, denoting number and quantity (except such words as *prwy* and *neb*), and the numeral adjectives usually employed in speaking of number indefinitely, frequently change position with the genitive; and in this case their initial consonants should assume the *middle* sound; as,

Rhyfeddodau *lauer* = *wonders many; many wonders*.

Dwfr ddigon, *plenty of water*. Gwyr fagad, *a multitude of men*.

"Gwrandaw tonau hoff perseiniol
Adar yn y goedwig fyrdd."

(b) Numerals, except *mil*, *myrdd*, *myrddiwn*, are used with or without *o*: if with, the following substantive is plural; if without, it is sing. Ugain *gwr*; ugain *o wyr*. (See § 490.)

(c) Some common adjectives are sometimes followed by *o*. Mae Arthur yn *gampus o ysgolhaig* (= yn ysgolhaig campus) = *Arthur is excellent of a scholar; Arthur is an excellent scholar*. Mae'n *gywilyddus o beth* fod Arthur yn y carchar.

445. The **objective genitive** (i. e., the genitive which "would be the *object*, if the substantive and its attribute were expanded into a sentence"*) is sometimes expressed by *mere apposition*; but oftener by the aid of the preposition *o*; and after certain classes of words by other prepositions; such as *ar*, *at*, *am*, *dros*, *rhag*.

Mere apposition. Ofn Duw, *the fear of God*. Cariad Crist, *the love of (= to) Christ*. Rom. viii. 35. Gwybodaeth Crist Iesu fy Arglwydd, *the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord*. Phil. iii. 8. Arlun fy mrawd, *the picture of my brother*. Gofal y byd hwn, *the care of this world*. S. Matt. xiii. 22. [This form of the objective genitive is ambiguous, and hence not very often met with. "Thus *ofn y gelyn*, the fear of the enemy, may mean *the fear felt by the enemy himself*, or *the fear felt by another towards the enemy*."†]

The prep. o. Mwynhâd o gysur, *enjoyment of comfort*. Tystiolaeth o'n cariad, *a testimony of our love*. Llongddrylliad o'u ffydd, *a shipwreck of their faith*. Dysgrifiad o'r bobl, *a description of the people*. Prawf o alar, *a proof of sorrow*. Arwydd o ddigllonedd, *a sign of anger*.

Other prepositions. Serch ar ddifyrweh, *love of pleasure*. Cariad ar fy enaid, *love to my soul*. Is. xxxviii. 17. Cariad at Dduw, *love to God*. Gofal am eich bywyd, *care for your life*. S. Luke xii. 22. Gofal dros Eglwys Dduw, *care for the Church of God*. 1 Tim. iii. 5. Hiraeth am heddwch, *a longing for peace*. Ofn rhag y cleddyf, *terror by reason of the sword*. Ez. xxi. 12.

* Arnold's Gr. Grammar, (§ 824, b.) † T. J. Hughes on Syntax.

446. The *infinitive* mood of verbs often stands as a noun in the genitive.

Amser hau, the time of sowing. Amser medi, the time of reaping. Ym mhryd machludo haul, at the time of the going down of the sun.

447. **Accusative case.** The place, which the accusative case most naturally occupies, is after the verb and the nominative.

Teifi y bachgen gareg, the boy will throw a stone.

A'r dyfroedd a foddant y lloches, and the waters shall overflow the hiding-place.

448. But when it requires to be marked with emphasis, it may occupy the first place; as,

Gwialen dy nerth a enfyn yr Arglwydd o Sion, the rod of thy strength shall the Lord send out of Zion.

449. When the accusative begins the sentence, or when it immediately follows an infinitive verb, it retains the *radical* sound of its initial consonant; as,

Gwialen dy nerth a enfyn yr Arglwydd.

Y mae efe yn moliannu Duw, he praises God.

450. But when the accusative comes after a finite verb, or after an infinitive separated from it by an adverb or a phrase, its initial consonant should be changed into the *middle*; as,

Y bachgen a deifi gareg, the boy will throw a stone.

Tynu ymaith bechodau, to take away sins.

451. Prepositions govern different sounds (see §§ 364—373.) Hence, an accusative after a preposition must have its initial consonant placed in that sound which the preceding particle governs. For example:

Mewn and rhwng govern the rad. 'Mewn ty,' in a house. 'Rhwng mynyddoedd,' between mountains.

Tros and heb govern the middle. 'Tros for,' over sea. 'Heb Dduw, heb ddim,' without God, without any thing.

452. The accusative of an active, or the nominative of a passive verb is sometimes put absolutely at the beginning of the clause, a corresponding personal pronoun following the verb. This is done when particular attention is called.

A hefyd fy ngelynion hyny, dygwel hwynt yma, and also those my enemies, bring them hither.

Y duwiau, ni wnaethant y nefoedd, difethir hwynt, the Gods, that have not made the heavens, they shall be destroyed.

* * The syntax of the accus. in connection with the verb will be again referred to under the "*Verbs.*"

453. An accusative is also put absolutely after adjectives; as, *benyw deg ei phryd = a female fair (as to) her countenance.* (See Syntax of "*Adjectives.*")

454. Nouns denoting *duration* and *point of time, distance of place, and measure*, are put absolutely, as in English. If such nouns stand foremost in the sentence, they usually retain their *radical* form; but if they follow the verb, their initial consonant should be changed into the *middle*; as,

Deng wythnos yr arosais yno, } I stayed there ten weeks.
Arosais yno ddeng wythnos, }

Lliw nos y daethym, } I came by night.
Daethym liw nos, }

Pymtheg cufydd yr ymgryfläodd y dyfroedd, } 'fifteen cubits upward
Ymgrythäodd y dyfroedd bymtheg cufydd, } did the waters prevail.'

455. **Vocative case.** The vocative case is preceded by an interjection, expressed or understood; and, as all interjections govern the *middle* sound, the initial of the vocative will accordingly be *softened*.

O Dad trugarog! O drugarog Dad! } O merciful Father.
Dad trugarog! Drugarog Dad! }

456. When the interjection is omitted, the vocative sometimes retains its *radical* form; as,

Duw Dad, o'r nef, trugarha wrthym, O God the Father, of heaven, have mercy upon us.

Occasionally the article, with or without an interjection, precedes the vocative; as,

O y Galatiaid ynfyd! O the foolish Galatians.

Yr ogoned, lan, fendigaid Drindod, the glorious, holy, blessed Trinity.

457. **Proper names.** Welsh Critics differ with regard to the initial mutations of proper names. Some treat them like common nouns; i. e., place them in *rad.*, *mid.*, *nas.*, or *asp.*, according to the governing power of the word immediately preceding in the clause. Others treat Welsh, and naturalized pro-

per names, like common nouns; but "show regard to strangers"* by allowing them to remain, under all circumstances, in their original form. And others are inclined to leave many Welsh, and all foreign proper names, untouched. The following rules exhibit the prevailing usage of the present day.

458. Welsh proper names of *places* (countries, towns, &c.,) are governed in the same way as common nouns. Foreign proper names of places, which by continually occurring have become naturalized, follow the same rule.

Aethym o *Lundain* i *Fangor*. Ym *Mhennant*.
Yng *Nghanaan*. Yn y *Ganaan* bur.

459. Foreign proper names of *places* usually retain their *radical* sound.

Aeth o *Damascus* ac arosodd yn *Cæsarea*.

460. Welsh proper names of *rivers* are governed like common nouns. [But, although fem., they retain the *rad.* after the article.]

Yr hen *Dafwys*. Yn *Nyfrdwy*. Y *Teifi*.

461. Proper names of *persons*, whether Welsh or foreign, *usually* retain their *radical* forms, except when preceded by an adjective, in which case they generally follow the rules of common nouns.

Dywedodd wrth *Dafydd*. Aeth at *Llewelyn*.
Yr hen *Lewelyn*. Yr addawedig *Fessia*.

(a) Names of persons, beginning with *c*, *p*, or *t*, generally take the *asp.* sound after *a*, *na*, *gyda*, and *efo*. A *Chain*. A *Phedr*. *Silvanus* a *Thimotheus*.

ADJECTIVES.

462. The agreement of adjectives with their nouns in gender and number is partial.

463. **Gender.** Those which agree in gender by *vowel inflections* are certain primitive adjectives, their compounds, and some few derivatives, of which a list is given in §§ 159, 160.

Ceffyl gwyn, *white horse*. *Caseg wen*, *white mare*.
Tarw penwyn, *white-headed bull*. *Buwch benwen*, *white-headed cow*.

464. But if the adjective is in a state of comparison, or has

* Rev. Walter Davies.

a pl. termination, or is put in construction with a pl. noun, the radical form (i. e., the masculine) undergoes no change, with respect to vowel inflections, to indicate gender.

Carreg drymach (not *dromach*) *heavier stone.*

Ceryg trymion (not *tromion*) *heavy stones.*

Merched pengrych (not *pengrech*) *curly-headed girls.*

465. When adjectives begin with one of the *mutable consonants*, and follow their nouns, their gender is also indicated by their initial consonant; as,

Ceffyl cryf, *strong horse.*

Caseg gref, *strong mare.*

Gwr duwiol, *godly man.*

Gwraig dduwiol, *godly woman.*

(a) If the noun is *plural*, the initial consonant of the adjective undergoes no change; as,

Cesyg gwynion. *Gwragedd duwiol.*

466. When adjectives have no vowel-inflections, and do not begin with any of the mutable consonants, they are said to be of *common gender*; as,

Gwr hardd, *a handsome man.* *Gwraig hardd*, *a handsome woman.*

* * See 'Government of Adjectives.'

467. **Number.** Those which agree in number are mostly primitive adjectives: sometimes compounds and derivatives.

Gwr doeth, *a wise man.*

Gwyr doethion.

Gwr annoeth, *a foolish man.*

Gwyr annoethion.

Y caredig frawd, *the kind brother.*

Y caredigion frodyr.

(a) Dr. Pughe, treating of the primitive adjectives, says: "The primitive adjectives may or may not agree in number with their substantives, optionally, as the euphony may require." And again of the derivatives: "The adjectives of this class seldom take the plural form, except in poetical language, when they are made to agree with plural nouns with happy effect." But it should be observed that a very large number of adjectives are *never* made plural; and as none of the common adjectives necessarily require a plural number, it would be more convenient to employ the *singular* form of all such, even when the noun is *plural*. (*Gwyr doeth*.)

(b) Adjectives should be in the plural form when they stand as plural nouns; as,

'*Y nefolion*,' *the heavenly ones.* '*Y caredigion*,' *the beloved ones.*

468. **Position.** The place which a common adjective in the positive state occupies in a sentence, conventionally arranged, is usually *after* the noun which it modifies; as,

Gwr cyfawn, *a just man.*

Merch landeg, *a comely woman.*

469. But in poetical language and rhetorical prose, the adjective is very often made to *precede* the noun; as,

“*Hyfryd* liwiau'r bryniau a'r bronydd,
Gerddi a gweunydd gyll eu gwawr;
Prudd ddystawrwydd sy'n gyffredin,
Heb ddim lleisiau ar y llawr.” *D. Davies.*

(a) When adjectives are qualified by *go*, somewhat, and *iawn*, very, they *always* follow their nouns: and *generally* when qualified by other adverbs. *Dyn go ddysgedig. Dyn dysgedig iawn.*

(b) An adjective, joined to a noun to form a compound, generally takes the precedence. *Mawrfryd* = mawr bryd. (§ 77.)

470. Indefinite pronouns (except *arall* and *oll*), and numerals (except *cyntaf*), always precede their substantives. (§§ 214, 490, 501.)

471. “Adjectives in a state of comparison are so adapted that they may be optionally made to precede or to follow the nouns.”*

Cyn hardded gwr, gwr cyn hardded, *as handsome a man.*

Harddach gwr, gwr harddach, *a handsomer man.*

Yr harddaf wr, y gwr harddaf, *the handsomest man.*

472. ‘Several adjectives may come together, either preceding or following the noun to which they belong;’ or one may precede and another follow it, according to the writer’s taste.

Fy anwyl gariadus frodyr, }
Fy mrodyr anwyl a chariadus, } *my dearly beloved brethren.*
Fy anwyl frodyr cariadus, }

473. **Government.** *Positive* and *superlative* adjectives govern the *middle*† sound of the noun following, whether it be sing. or pl., masculine or feminine; *equal* and *comparative* adjectives govern the *radical*.

Pos. *Duwil* bendefig, *pious nobleman.* *Glan* rianod, *fair ladies.*

Sup. *Y* mwynaf gyfaill, *the kindest friend.* *Ein* grasusaf frenines, *our most gracious queen.*

* Dr. Pughe’s Grammar, p. 59.

† The superlatives *mwyaaf* and *lleiaf* are adverbs as well as adjectives: when adverbs, they govern the radical sound. (Arthur yw y *mwyaaf* dysgedig. *Y* ffordd *fwyaaf* cyffredin o’u cadw yn awr ydyw drwy y dawus. *Brutus.*)

Eq. Cyn fwyned gwr, *as kind a man*. Cyn fwyned gwraig, *as kind a woman*.

Comp. Mwynach gwr, *a kinder man*. Mwynach gwraig, *a kinder woman*.

(a) If the superlative is indefinite, i. e., not preceded by the article or its equivalent, it governs the *radical* sound. "A thecaf merch dan haul ydoedd." "Goreu diod, diod dŵr." Sometimes the superl. is followed by the radical, even when it is preceded by the article. "Y cyntaf peth a welais."

(b) Should an article precede the comparative, the following noun may be *softened*. "Ond darfu'r harddach ferched llon." D. S. Evans.

(c) The equal and comparative adjectives govern the *radical*, whether they have the inflected forms (e. g. mwyned, mwynach), or are formed by putting *mor* (for equal), and *mwyr* or *llai* (for comp.) before the positive state of the adjective. Cyn hardded bachgen, *mor hardd bachgen, as beautiful a boy*. Gwrolach milwr, *mwyr gwrol milwr, a braver soldier*.

474. When an adjective follows a *feminine noun singular*, it is changed into the *middle* sound; but when it follows a *feminine plural* noun, or a *masculine noun, sing. or plural*, it retains its *radical* form.

Fem. sing. Merch ddoeth, *wise girl*. Gwraig daclus, *tidy woman*.

Fem. pl. Merched doethion, *wise girls*. Gwragedd taclus, *tidy women*.

Mas. Milwr gwrol, *brave soldier*. Milwyr gwrol, *brave soldiers*.

(a) An adverb, preceding the adjective, is affected in the same way (the adjective being, of course, governed by the adverb.) Gwraig bur daclus. Gwragedd pur daclus. Milwr or milwyr pur wrol.

But *go*, somewhat, *môr*, so, and generally *rhy*, too, retain the *radical* sound, even after a *fem. noun sing.* Gwraig *go* daclus. Gwraig *môr* daclus. Gwraig *rhy* annhaclus.

(b) In N. W. the word *bach*, little, often retains its *radical* form, even after a *fem. noun sing.* Hanes Jane *bach*. Yr eneth *bach*.

475. When a series of attributive adjectives are placed after a noun, the second and following adjectives assume the same sound as the first (the sound of the first depending, of course, on the substantive immediately preceding.)

Dyn *da*, gostyngedig, call, *a good, humble, prudent man*.

Gwragedd *da*, gostyngedig, call, *good, humble, prudent women*.

Gwraig *dda*, ostyngedig, gall, *a good, humble, prudent woman*.

476. But when the adjective is set in apposition to a noun, and separated from it by a comma, the adjective will retain its *radical* form, even when the noun is *feminine singular*. [The rule is the same as when one noun is set in apposition to another. § 420.]

Trwy flydd i *iachawdurineth*, parod i'w datguddio. 1 S. Petr i. 5.
Cymmerodd *agwedd* ddynol, cyffelyb i'r eiddom ni.

In the phrase "*iachawdwriaeth* barod," *ready salvation*, "*parod*" is used *attributively*, and hence assumes the *middle* sound, "*iachawdwriaeth*" being *fem. sing.*; but in "*iachawdwriaeth*, parod i'w datguddio," *salvation, ready to be revealed*, "*parod*," is placed *appositively*, and therefore retains its *radical* form.

477. When an adjective follows a proper noun of either gender, as an epithet or agnomen, its initial consonant should be put in the *middle* sound; as,

Hywel *dda*, *Hywel the good*.
Elen brydferth, *Ellen the beautiful*.
Alecsander fawr, *Alexander the great*.
Lazarus dlawd, *Lazarus the poor*.

(a) The *position* of adjectives of this character is the same in English. (*Alexander the great. Cato the wise.*)

478. **Accusative after adjectives.** Sometimes an adjective is followed by a noun in the accusative, expressing the thing to which the notion of the adjective belongs. In other words, the adjective is made to agree with the object spoken of, rather than with the noun which describes the quality of that object; as,

Gwr *hardd yr olwg* = *a man beautiful the appearance*.
Gwraig *lan ei chalon*. Dyn *trwm ei glyn*.
Seithwyr *da eu guir*. A'r adar *llaes eu hesgyll*.
Gwyn ei fyd y gŵr = *happy (as to) his state the man*. Ps. i. 1.

In (*e. g.*) "*gwr hardd yr olwg*" the adj. *hardd* agrees with the word *gwr*, rather than with *golwg*, which describes its quality. Here the Welsh and English are at variance; for in the latter the adj. is made to agree with the describing noun, and not with the noun described. (A man of a *beautiful appearance*.)

(a) With the above compare the Greek idiom.

Πόδας ὥκεις Ἀχιλλεύς = *Achilles swift (as to) feet*.
Καλὸς τὴν ψυχὴν = *beautiful (as to) the soul*.

479. Occasionally the preposition '*o*' intervenes between the adjective and the accusative; as,

Gwr teg *o bryd* = *a man fair of countenance*.

480. By modern writers it is frequently made to agree with the quality of the object described, in accordance with the English idiom; as,

Gwr *o olwg hyfryd*, *a man of pleasant look*.

481. **Comparison.** The *equal* degree is expressed (a) simply by the form ending with 'ed:' (b) by the same form, preceded by other particles: (c) by the positive state, preceded by *mor*. This comparison denotes sometimes *admiration* or *vague comparison*; and sometimes *equality*.

482. It will be expressed in English by the adverbs *how*, *so*, or *as*, with an adjective in the positive state.

"How." *Wyned yw'r eira!*
Cyn wyned yw'r eira! } *how white the snow is!*
Môr wyn yw'r eira! }

"So." *Cued ganddo ei bleser, fel na ddaw, he is so fond of his pleasure, that he will not come.*
Mae cyn ddoethed fel y gŵyr y cwbl, } *he is so wise, that he*
Mae môr ddoeth fel y gŵyr y cwbl, } *knows the whole.*

"As" *Dôs ymaith gynted ag y gelli,* } *go away as soon as you*
Dôs ymaith cyn gynted ag y gelli, } *can.*
Dôs ymaith môr fuan ag y gelli, }

483. In general, however, the form which corresponds to *how*, marking admiration, is that which ends in *ed*, either alone or preceded by an interjection:

Duw anwyl, fyred einioes! O fyred yw'r einioes!
Och! berycled yw'r daith.

(a) "When the adjective is put absolutely, its initial assumes the middle form; as, *Duw cadw Rys deced ei rôdd.*" J. W. ab Ithel.

484. *Cyn* (*cân* or *gân*) with the 'ed form,' and *mor* with the positive state, are used when we express the notion implied in *so* and *as*, and in *how* when it heads a subjoined clause.

Rhedodd cyn gyflymed, fel na allodd ei ddal.
Y mae Arthur cyn hardded a Dafydd.
A welwch chwi môr wijn yw'r eira?

(a) Observe the corresponding particles:

Cyn or môr....fel = so.....that.
Cyn or môr....a or ag = as...as.

485. When two objects are spoken of, the comparative is used in English; as 'He is the elder of the two.' In this case the Welsh employ the superlative; as 'Efe yw'r *hynaf* o'r ddau' = he is the *eldest* of the two. 'Efe yw'r *goreu* o'r ddau' = he is the *best* of the two.

486. In English "proportionate equality is marked by *the* —*the* with comparatives. '*The more* you study *the more*

you will learn.'''* In Welsh this is expressed by two superlatives, the particle *po*† (colloquially *prwy*) preceding the former; as,

Po mwyaf yr edrychaf arno, sicraf wyf o hono = *by so much the most* I look at him, *the most certain* I am of him; the more I look at him, the more certain I am of him.

(a) The words *yn y byd* (in the world), *oll* or *i gyd* (all), *byth* (ever) are often placed after the latter superlative, to strengthen the assertion. 'Po mwyaf y carwn Grist, mwyaf *oll* y myfyriwn ar Ei gariad.'

(b) The two clauses are frequently inverted—especially when there is an ellipsis of one or the of two verbs; as 'Goreu po cyntaf' = *best by so much the soonest; the sooner the better*. 'Goreu po cyntaf y daw,' *the sooner the better he comes*.

(c) *Po* governs the *radical* sound; *po mwyaf*, *the more*; *po cyntaf*, *the sooner*; *po gwresocaf*, *the warmer*.

487. Comparison is also expressed by *go*, partly; *lled*, partly; *digon*, sufficiently; *iawn*, very; *wrth*, to; *tra*, very; *pur*, very; *rhy*, too; *gyda*, with.

'Gwr tra dysgedig,' *a very learned man*.

'Gyda'r goreu o honynt,' (*equal*) *with the best of them*.

NUMERALS.

488. **Cardinal Numbers.** Cardinals have no distinction of gender, except *dau*, two, *tri*, three, and *pedwar*, four, which have *dwy*, *tair*, and *pedair* for the feminine.

Dau ddyn, *two men*.

Dwy ddynes, *two women*.

Pum dyn, *five men*.

Pum dynes, *five women*.

(a) When two numerals are put together, either as a compound or separately, the former must be *mas.*, even when the substantive which is qualified is of the fem. gender. *Trigain mlynedd*, or *tri* ugain mlynedd, *60 years*. *Dau* gan mlynedd, *200 years*.

489. They have no plural number, except when, as in English, they are used substantively. *Degau*, tens; *ugeiniau*, scores; *cannoedd*, hundreds.

Y mae yn ei lyfrgell ugeiniau o lyfrau, *there are in his library scores of books*.

490. Cardinals precede their nouns, which may follow either immediately or with the intervention of the preposition 'o.'

* Arnold's English Grammar.

† With *po* and *prwy* compare Eng. *by*, and Latin *quo*.

If the nouns follow immediately, the rule is that they should be in the *singular* number; if with the intervention of 'o,' they must be in the *plural*; as,

Tri dyn = three man; three individual men.

Tri o ddynion = three of men, from the general class.

(a) Sometimes, however, the nouns are put in the plural, even when they immediately follow the numerals. Thus

Seithwyr da eu gair. Y deuddeg *apostolion*.

Y tri *wyr* hyn. Pedwar *gwy*r rhyddion.

(b) *Mil*, a thousand, *myrdd*, a myriad, and *myrddiwn*, a myriad, and their compounds, are always followed by the preposition; as 'Mil o wyr.' 'Dwy fil o wyr.'

491. **Government.** Great irregularity of usage prevails with regard to the sounds which come after the cardinal numerals, the same numeral being often made to govern two and sometimes even three different sounds. Thus we have the *rad.* in "saith *basgedaid*," *seven baskets full*, and the *mid.* in saith *fugail*, *seven shepherds*. We venture, however, to lay down the following as *the rules*; and in writing Welsh the student may safely adhere to them.

492. *Un* (masculine), *tair* (feminine), *pedwar* and *pedair*, *pum*, *chwech*, *naw* (with its compound *deunaw*), *deg* (with its comp. *deuddeg*, *pymtheg*), *ugain* (with its comp. *deugain*, *trigain*), *can* (with its comp. *deugan*, *trichan*, &c.), govern the *radical* sound.

Un corff, *one body*. *Pedwar gwr*, *four men*. *Pum gwraig*, *five women*.

493. *Un*, feminine, (except after *ll* and *rh*), *dau* and *dwy*, govern the *middle*. *Ll* and *rh* retain their *rad.* after *un* fem.

Un ddynes, *one woman*. *Dau ddyn*, *two men*. *Dwy ddynes*, *two women*.

Ll and *rh*. *Un llaw*, *one hand*. *Un rhaw*, *one spade*.

494. *Tri* and *chwe* govern the *aspirate* of the 1st. class (*c*, *p*, *t*); and the *radical* of the 2nd. and 3rd. (*g*, *b*, *d*; *ll*, *m*, *rh*.)

Tri char, *three friends*. *Tri phen*, *three heads*. *Chwe tharw*, *six bulls*. *Tri gwr*, *three men*. *Tri bys*, *three fingers*. *Chwe llew*, *six lions*.

495. *Saith* and *nyth* govern the *middle* of *c*, *p*, *t*; and the *radical* of the other consonants.

Saith gorn, *seven horns*. Saith ben, *seven heads*. Wyth dorth, *eight lances*.

Saith gwas, *seven servants*. Saith bys, *seven fingers*. Wyth llong, *eight ships*.

496. *Deng*, and its comp. *deuddeng* and *pymtheng*, which are mostly used before words beginning radically with *g*, *d*, *m*, *n*, or a *vowel*, govern the *nasal* of *d*; *middle* of *g*; and *radical* of *m*.

Deng nafad, *ten sheep*. *Deng wr*, *ten men*. *Deng mis*, *ten months*.

(a) It is very probable that *deng* formerly governed *g* in the *nasal*, and that such phrases as *deng wr*, *deng air*, &c., were written *deng ngwr*, *deng ngair*, &c.

497. *Pum*, *saith*, *nyth*, *naw*, *deg*, *deng*, *ugain*, *can*, with their compounds, govern the words *blynedd* and *blwydd* (a year) in the *nasal*; and the word *diwrnod* (a day) in the *nasal*, or *radical*.

Pum mlynedd, *five years*. *Wyth mlynedd*, *eight years*. *Can mlwydd*, *hundred years*. *Saith niwrnod* or *diwrnod*, *seven days*.

Deng is followed by the *nasal* of *diwrnod*, never by the *rad*. *Deng niwrnod*.

498. Numerals with nouns sing. equal to pl. A singular noun preceded by a numeral is equivalent to a plural. Hence,

a.) It is followed by a plural verb.

Y ddau ddyn a atebasant, *the two men answered*.

b.) The numerals (except *dau* and *dwyr*) retain the radical sound after the article, even when their substantives are feminine.

Y tair dynes, *the three women*. Y deng morwyn, *the ten virgins*.

c.) The demonstratives *hwn*, *hwnnw*, &c., are put in the plural.

Y tair gwaith *hyn*, *these three times*.

Y ddau filwr *hyny*, *those two soldiers*.

Exceptions. (a) When a numeral is followed by a substantive and an adjective, the adjective will be singular. *Dau ddyn du*, *two black men*. *Tri gwr ieuanc*, *three young men*. (b) The adj. pronoun *arall* is sometimes put in the sing., and sometimes in the plural. Y ddau ddyn *arall*, *the other two men*. Y saith niwrnod *ereill*, *the other seven days*.

499. Difference between *pump* and *pum*; *chwech* and *chwe*; *deg* and *deng*; *cant* and *can*.

a) The contracted forms *pum*, *chwe* (N. W.), and *can*, are *adjectives*, and followed immediately by substantives: *pump*, *chwech*, and *cant*, are *substantives*.

Pum plentyn, *six children*. *Chwe* dafad, *six sheep*. *Can* gwr, *a hundred men*.

Pump o blant = *five of children; five children*. *Chwech* o ddefaid, *six sheep*. *Pa* sawl dafad sydd genych? *Cant*. *How many sheep have you? A hundred*.

(a) The substantive *oed*, age, is preceded by the full form *pump*, *chwech*, and *cant*. *Mae'r* plentyn yn *bump* *oed*, *the child is five years old*.

(b) In S. W. *chwech* is both a *substantive* and an *adjective*. *Chwech* o blant, *or chwech* plentyn, *six children*.

b) *Deng* is an *adjective* (§ 496): *deg* is an *adjective* and a *substantive*.

Deng niwrnod, *ten days*. *Deg* ceiniog *or deg* o geiniogau, *ten pence*. *Pa* sawl llyfr sydd genych? *Deg*. *How many books have you? Ten*.

500. **Ordinal Numbers.** Ordinals have no distinction of gender, except *trydydd*, third, and *pedwerydd*, fourth, which have *trydedd* and *pedwaredd* in the feminine.

Y trydydd dydd, *the 3rd day*.

Y pedwerydd boreu, *the 4th morning*.

Y pummed mab, *the 5th son*.

Y drydedd awr, *the 3rd hour*.

Y bedwaredd bennod, *the 4th chapter*.

Y bummed ferch, *the 5th daughter*.

501. Ordinals *precede* their nouns; and the nouns, if *masculine*, retain the *radical*; if *feminine*, they are changed into the *middle* sound; as,

Y pummed dydd. *Y* bummed bennod (rad. pennod.)

(a) But *cyntaf*, *first*, is usually put *after* its noun; as, *Y* dyn *cyntaf*.

(b) *Ail*, *second*, is followed by the *middle* sound, even when the noun is *masculine*; as, *Yr ail* ddyn; *yr ail* bwne.

It appears that formerly the government of *ail* was regular; that is, it governed a *mas.* noun in the *radical*, and a *fem.* in the *middle*; as,

- | | | |
|----|---|--|
| | { | <i>Yr ail</i> dydd, <i>the second day</i> . Gen. i. 8. |
| m. | { | <i>Yr ail</i> cyfammod, <i>the second covenant</i> . E. Samuel. |
| | { | <i>Yr ail</i> peth, <i>the second thing</i> . M. Kyffin. |
| f. | { | <i>Yr ail</i> flwyddyn, <i>the second year</i> . Num. ix. 1. |
| | { | <i>Yr ail</i> farwolaeth, <i>the second death</i> . Rev. ii. 11. |

502. When the *names of the objects numbered* are joined to periphrastic numerals, they take their place immediately after the first-mentioned numeral; thus,

23 *men*: tri dyn ar hugain = three men over twenty.

The 30th day: y degfed dydd ar hugain = the tenth day over twenty.

PRONOUNS.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

503. The different forms and modifications of personal pronouns depend, to a certain extent, upon the position assigned to them in construction. They are to be considered in their connection with *verbs*, *nouns*, and *prepositions*.

504. **Connected with verbs.** "The personal pronouns may be used or omitted with the verbs, either preceding or following them, in all their inflections. They are more particularly used when an emphasis is required on the pronoun."*

Simple. Gwelais y dyn.

Emphatic. Gwelais *i* y dyn.

505. *First pers. singular.* When the nominative case comes after the verb, the first person takes *fi* or *finnau*, if the tense of the verb ends in *f*, *r*, or *d*: it takes the form *i* or *innau*, if the tense ends in *n*, *m*, or *s*.

f, r, d. Caraf *fi*.

Cerir *fi*.

Cerid *finnau*.


n, m, s. Adwaen *i*.

Bum *i*.

Cerai^s *innau*.

506. When the pronoun is in the accusative, *following* the verb, the first person takes *fi* or *finnau*, if the nominative case also follows the verb; as, carodd Arthur *fi* or *finnau*; carodd (ef) *fi* or *finnau*.

(a) The word "*following*" refers to *order of construction*, not to *government*.

507.  But when a possessive pronoun precedes the verb, the nominative and the accusative take the form *i* or *innau*. *Fe'm* cerir *i* or *innau*; pan *y'm* cerir *i*; dywed *fy* mod *i* or *innau* yno; Arthur a'm carodd *i* or *innau*.

508. The pl. *ni* and *ninnau* will take any position. *Ni* or *ninnau* a ddaethom; daethom *ni* or *ninnau*; carasant hwy *ni* or *ninnau*.


* Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 65.

509. *Second person singular.* When the nominative comes after the verb, the second person takes *di* or *dithau*, if the verb is in the *imperative* mood, or ends in *ch*, *d*, *r*, or in a *vowel*; as,

<i>Canlyn di.</i>	<i>Fel y cerych di ef.</i>
<i>Carasid di.</i>	<i>Cerir di. Ceri di.</i>

It takes *ti* or *tithau*, if the verb ends in *t*: as *ceraist ti*; *carasit tithau*.

510. When the pronoun is in the accusative, *following* the verb, it takes the form *di* or *dithau*, if the nominative case also follows the verb. *Carodd Arthur di*; *carodd (ef) dithau*.

511.  When a possessive pronoun precedes the verb, the nominative and the accusative take *di* or *dithau*, independently of the preceding letter.

<i>Fe'th gerir di or dithau.</i>	<i>Pan y'th gerir di.</i>
<i>Dywed dy fod di yuo.</i>	<i>Arthur a'th garodd di.</i>

512. The pl. *chwi* and *chwithau* will take any position like *ni* and *ninnau*.

513. *Third pers. singular.* When the nominative or the accusative precedes the verb, the forms usually employed are *efe* and *efo*, for the masculine. *Efe* or *efo* a ddaeth; *efe* or *efo* a garaf fi.

514. *E*, *ef*, *o*, and also *efe*, are employed when the nominative follows the verb. *Dywedodd e, ef, o, or efe*.

515. When the pronoun is in the accusative, *following* the verb, the forms *e*, *ef*, or *o*, are used. *Ceraiſ e, ef, or o*; *Arthur a'i carodd e, ef, or o*.

516. The fem. *hi* and *hithau*; the mas. *yntau*; and the pl. *hwythau* and *hwyntau* will take any position, like *ni* and *ninnau*.

517. *Hwy* and *hwynt*. *Hwynt* is for the most part an accusative *following* an active verb; or a nominative *following* a passive verb. *Caraf hwynt*; *cerir hwynt*. But *hwy* is preferred to *hwynt* after *ut*; as 'carant *hwy*,' not 'carant *hwynt*.'

Hwy may be used in all cases. *Hwy a garant*; *carant hwy*; *Arthur a'u car hwy*.

518. The 'emphatic' forms of all persons and numbers (except *efe*, see above), and the 'emphatic and conjunctive,'

generally precede their verbs. *Myfi* or *myfinau* a erfyniaf: *tydi* or *tydithau* a ddeui: *ynni* a atolygwn i ti.

(a) Such expressions as “pa ham y derbyniodd gliniau *fyfi* ;” “canlyn di *fyfi*,” where the emphatic form is in the accusative, *following* the verb, are not often met with.

(b) But if the emphatic form be connected by a conjunction to a simpler form of the pronoun, or to a noun, it may follow the verb. Aethym i a *thydi* yno; aeth *Arthur* a *myfi* yno.

519. Auxiliary pronouns. *Fe*, *fo*, and *e* are employed as auxiliary pronouns in affirmative prepositions, and are placed before the verb when followed by its nominative case. They are strictly auxiliaries of the 3rd pers. singular, and in the *active voice* they seldom occur except before this person of the verb: but in the *passive voice* they can stand before all numbers and persons.

Fe weryd ef y cyfion, *he will deliver the righteous.*

E ddaw fy mrawd yma, *my brother will come here.*

Fe dybir hyn gan lawer, *this is thought by many.*

Fe ddywedir fod gan Arthur gledlyd, *it is said that A. has a sword.*

Fe'm or *fu'm* lluddiwyd i, *I was prevented.* See p. 75, note (a.)

520. *Mi* (a corruption of *me*, the radical form of *fe*) is, in colloquial language, put before verbs of all numbers and persons when they are followed by their nom. case.

Mi feddyliais i. *Mi* feddyliaist ti. *Mi* feddyliodd y dynion.

(a) *Fe*, *fo*, *e*, and *mi*, are followed by the *middle* sound. *Fe* ddaw.

521. *Hi*. *Hi* corresponds to *it*, standing as the nominative case to a verb, descriptive of the *weather*, *circumstances*, &c.

Y mae *hi* yn gwlawio, *it is raining.*

Y mae *hi* yn galed arno, *it is hard upon him.*

Dywed ei bod *hi* yn galed arno, *he says that it is hard upon him.*

522. Connected with nouns. When the possessive pronoun is to be marked with a degree of emphasis, a corresponding personal pronoun is put after the noun. The forms, which they assume when thus employed, will be seen in the following examples:—

1. Fy nhad i, or innau.

2. Dy dad di, or dithau.

3. { Ei dad ef, e, o, or yntau.

{ Ei thad hi, or hithau.

1. Ein tad ni, or ninnau.

2. Eich tad chwi, or chwithau.

3. Eu tad hwy, hwynt, or hwythau.

523. **Connected with prepositions.** The pronouns take the same forms after '*compound prepositions ending with a substantive*,'* as those which they take after nouns.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. O'm blaen <i>i</i> , or <i>innau</i> . | 1. O'n blaen <i>ni</i> , or <i>ninnau</i> . |
| 2. O'th flaen <i>di</i> , or <i>dithau</i> . | 2. O'ch blaen <i>chwi</i> , or <i>chwithau</i> . |
| 3. { O'i flaen <i>ef</i> , <i>e</i> , <i>o</i> , or <i>yntau</i> . | 3. O'u blaen <i>hwy</i> , <i>hwynt</i> , or <i>hwythau</i> . |
| { O'i blaen <i>hi</i> , or <i>hithau</i> . | |

524. After *pronominal prepositions*† they assume the following forms:—

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Ataf <i>fi</i> , or <i>finnau</i> . | 1. Atom <i>ni</i> , or <i>ninnau</i> . |
| 2. Atat <i>ti</i> , or <i>tithau</i> . | 2. Atoch <i>chwi</i> , or <i>chwithau</i> . |
| 3. { Ato <i>ef</i> , <i>fe</i> , <i>fo</i> , or <i>yntau</i> . | 3. Atynt <i>hwy</i> , or <i>hwythau</i> . |
| { Ati <i>hi</i> , or <i>hithau</i> . | |

525. **Apposition and government.** The government of words, put in apposition with pronouns, depends on the force intended to be expressed by the apposition words. They are put either in the *radical* or the *middle* sound.

526. When a substantive, or substantive word, is put in apposition with a pronoun, and does not require to be emphatically expressed, its initial consonant is put in the *middle* sound.

Nyni, bawb oll, a bechasom, *we all have sinned*.

Glanhewch eich dwylaw, chwi bechaduriaid. *S. James*, iv. 8.

I'ch cadw chwi, ddynionach musgrell, segur. *Theo. Evans*.

527. When the apposition is to be marked with emphasis, it very properly retains its *radical* and strong form; as,

Chwi, gywyr y doniau mawr, a gyfeiliornasoch.

528. When one pronoun is put in apposition with another, the apposition pronoun generally retains the *radical*; as,

Gwerthwyd ni, myfi a'm pobl, *we are sold, I and my people*.

Dos [*di*] allan o'r arch, *ti a'th wraig*.

529. **Fy hun, &c. = myself.** The pronouns *fy hun*, *dy hun*, &c., myself, thyself, &c., have generally the same position assigned to them as their corresponding words in English. [*Fy hun*, &c. = own, see § 533.]

Catwg *ei hun* a'i lladdodd ef, *Cato himself killed him*.

Catwg a'i lladdodd ef *ei hun*, *Cato killed him, himself*.

Catwg a laddodd *ei hun*, *Cato killed himself*.

* See § 373.

† See §§ 374—381.

530. **Plural for singular.** "As in English, pronouns of the *second person plural* are in ordinary conversation substituted for those of the *second person singular*. In addressing the Deity, the singular form is adhered to; also occasionally in solemn language; and in addressing inferiors, in which last case its use is more frequent than in English."*

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

531. Possessive pronouns (except *mau* and *tau*) *precede* the nouns or the nouns and concomitants to which they belong; as,

Fy nhad, *my father*. *Fy* auwyl dad, *my dear father*.
Gwlad *fy* mam, *my mother's country*.

532. When the possessive is required to be emphatic, a corresponding personal pronoun is by a peculiar idiom placed after the noun; as, *ei* dad *ef* = *his father of him; his father*. (See § 522.)

533. When still greater emphasis is required, the pronouns *fy hun*, *dy hun*, &c. = *own*, will be placed after the noun, with or without the personal pronoun; as,

Fy nhad *fy hun*, *my own father*.
Fy nhad *i fy hun*, *my own father*.

534. *Mau* and *tau* (which are obsolete except in poetry), are always placed *after* the noun which they modify, the noun being preceded by the definite article. [Order: *article, noun, pronoun*.]

Y llyfr *mau*, *my book*. *Y* glust *fau*, *my ear*.
Y llyfr *tau*, *thy book*. *Y* glust *dau*, *thy ear*.
Tro atom eilwaith *y* glust *dau*. Edm. Prys.

535. *Eiddof*, *eiddot*, &c. = *mine, thine; that, those*.

Y llyfr hwn *o'r eiddof*. *Eiddof* *fi* *yw'r* llyfr hwn.
Rhagora ei gân ar *eiddo* ei gydymgeisydd.

(a) This form of the possessive does not exist in the colloquial language; and as *repetition* is a peculiarity well agreeing with the idiom of the Welsh language, some good critics doubt the propriety of admitting it as a part of Welsh Grammar. They regard it rather as a somewhat modern invention in imitation of the English possessive pronouns *mine, thine, &c*. Such expressions as

* Spurrell's Grammar, p. 112.

“ Y llyfr hwn o'r eiddof,”

“ Rhagora ei gân ar eiddo ei gydymgeisydd,”

would undoubtedly be more idiomatically expressed in this manner :

“ *Fy llyfr hwn.*”

“ Rhagora ei gân ar gân ei gydymgeisydd.”

(b) Some grammarians maintain, and perhaps rightly, that an article should always be placed before the pronoun, to distinguish it from the substantive *eiddo*, property.

Oddi wrth *yr eiddo* y Gymraeg, *from that of the Welsh.*

Yr eiddynt hwy. Yr eiddo yntau.—Heb. iv. 10.

Yr eiddo pob prysur.—Prov. xxi. 5.

A'r eiddo Tobia.—Neh. vi. 17.

536. The possessives *fy*, *ym*, *dy*, *yth*, *ei*, &c., are by a peculiar idiom employed before verbs and participles, and between the component parts of certain compound prepositions.

“ Duw a'n (= *a ein*) gwnaeth ni,” *God made us.*

Duw sydd yn *ein* cadw. Daeth ar *fy* ol i.

* * * See Syntax of “ Verbs ” and “ Compound prepositions.”

537. **Government.** Ym, *my*; ein, *our*; eich, *your*; eu, *their*; and ill (*or eill*), *their*; are followed by the *radical* sound; as,

Mi a'm tâd, *I and my father.*

Ni a'n tâd, *we and our father.*

Efe a'm cospodd, *he punished me.*

Daeth i'm cospi, *he came to punish me.*

538. Dy and yth, *thy*; and ei, *his*, by the *middle*; as,

Dy dad, *thy father.*

Ei dad, *his father.*

Efe a'th gospodd, *he punished you.*


Daeth i'th gospi, *he came to punish you.*

539. Fy, *my*, by the *nasal* sound; as,

Fy nhad, *my father.* Daeth i *fy* nghospi, *he came to punish me.*

540. Ei, *her*, by the *aspirate* sound; as,

Ei thad, *her father.* Daeth i'w chospi, *he came to punish her.*

541.  But when *ei* masculine and *ei* feminine are put before *finite* verbs, they are followed by the *radical*; as,

Arthur a'i cospodd ef, *Arthur punished him.*

Arthur a'i cospodd hi, *Arthur punished her.*


542. Words beginning with a vowel have the aspirate *h* prefixed to them after the possessives *ym*, *ei fem.*, *ein* and *eu*; as,

Myfi a'm hawen (rad. awen), *I and my muse.*


Efe a'm haudwyodd, *he ruined me.*

Daeth i'm haudwyo, *he came to ruin me.*

(a) Some words, beginning with *i* followed by a vowel, are sometimes written without the asp. *h* when they are preceded by *ein*. Ein Iachawdwr (for ein Hiachawdwr), *our Saviour.* Ein Ior (for ein Hior), *our Lord.*

543.  When *ei mas.* precedes a **finite** verb beginning with a vowel, the said verb should be preceded by the *aspirate*; as,

Arthur a'i handwyodd ef, *Arthur ruined him.*

544.  Thus

a. *Ei mas.* and *ei fem.* placed before *finite* verbs with *consonant* initials govern the *radical*.

b. *Ei mas.* placed before *infinitive* verbs with *consonant* initials governs the *middle*; but *ei fem.* governs the *aspirate*.

c. *Ei mas.* and *ei fem.* placed before *finite* verbs with *vowel* initials require the aspirate *h* to be prefixed to the said verbs.

d. *Ei fem.* placed before *infinitive* verbs with *vowel* initials requires the aspirate *h* to be prefixed to the said verbs; but *ei mas.* does not.

545. *Fy*, *dy*, *yth*, and *eich*, do not require the aspirate after them.

Fy iaith, *my language.*

Dy iaith, *thy language.*

Ti a'th iaith, *thou and thy language.* *Eich* iaith, *your language.*

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

546. Demonstrative pronouns are used either by themselves, or in construction with nouns.

547. When joined to nouns or nouns and their concomitants, they take the last place, and the nouns will always be preceded by an *article* or its *equivalent*; as

Y gwr hwn = *the man this.* Y llafur blin yma.

Fy mab hwn = *my son this.* Ein blin gaethiwed hwn.

Nis goddef ein corff hwn i ni fod yn philosophyddion iawn. M. W.

548. A singular noun with any numeral adjective above *one* requires the demonstrative to be in the plural number: as,

Y tri dyn hyn, *these three men.* Y ddau lyfr hyny, *those two books.*

549. *Hyn, hyny, &c.* [See §§ 195—200.] The singulars *hyn, hyny, &c.*, this, that, are not, like *hwn, hon, &c.*, put in construction with substantives (e.g. *y dyn hwn, y ddynes hon*); but are employed when reference is made to a *circumstance, a sentence, or part of a sentence*, expressed, or understood by the person spoken to.

a.) Expressed. The sentence referred to may either precede or follow the clause of which *hyn, &c.*, is a part.

Ni ddaeth fy nghyfaill: hyn sydd yn fy ngofidïo.

My friend came not: this vexes me.

Hyn yw'r cwbl a ddywedais, na ddeuwn yno.

This is all I said, that I would not come there.

b.) Understood.

Hyn sydd gyfiawnder, this is justice. Hyn yw ei werth, this is its value.

Hyn yw eich ymddygiad, this is your conduct. Hyn yw ei faint, this is its size.

Clodforaf di o herwydd i ti wneuthur *hyn*. Ps. lii. 9.

Heblaw *hyn*, besides this.

Fel *hyn*, in this manner.

O ran *hyny*, as to that.

Ar *hyny*, upon that.

(a) In the coll. language of S. W. *hyn* and *hyny* are put in construction with substantives, and are of common gender; i. e., they are employed for *hwn, hwnw*, and *hon, hono*. Y llyfr *hyn* = y llyfr *hwn*, *this book*. Y fraich *hyn* = y fraich *hon*, *this arm*.

(b) In written language they are often used for *hwn* and *hwnw* after the word *peth*, a thing, and after some words expressive of time, especially *pryd*. Y peth *hyn* = y peth *hwn*, *this thing*. Y pryd *hyny* = y pryd *hwnw*, *that time*.

550. *Hyn, hyny, &c.*, followed by the prep. *o*, are often found before words expressive of *quantity* or *number*.

Hyn o beth = *this of a thing; this much*. *Hyn o dân*, *this much fire*.

Hyn o wair.

Hyn o lyfrau.

Hyn o ddefaid.

Ar hyn o amser cyfarwydda a llywia. Com. Prayer.

551. *Dyma* and *dyna*, which must always take precedence in the clause, may be substituted for *hyn, hyny, &c.*, as nom. or obj. of a verb, *dyna* (= that) referring to what has gone before, and *dyma* (= this) to what is coming.

Dyma a ddywedir, ei fod yn euog o'r trosedd.

This is what is said, that he is guilty of the offence.

Dyna a ddywedais, ei fod yn euog o'r trosedd.

That is what I said, that he was guilty of the offence.

(a) *Dyma* and *dyna* are in most instances equivalent to a subject and a copula. *Dyma eich ymddygiad* = *hyn yw eich ymddygiad*. *Dyna'r cwbl a ddywedais* = *hyna yw'r cwbl a ddywedais*.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS. (See "*Relative clause*.")

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS. (See "*Interrogative clause*.")

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.*

552. *Ambell* = *some few*, is usually followed by a singular noun, or a substantive word; as *ambell waith*, *ambell un*. [But we say *ambell rai*.]

(a) In colloquial language it is often followed by *i*; as '*ambell i waith*;' but this is not considered grammatically correct.

553. *Amryw* and *amrai* = *several*, take a plural noun; as *amryw* or *amrai ddynion*. Sometimes, however, *amryw* is followed by a noun in the singular; as *amryw fath*.

554. *Cyfryw* and *y fath* = *such*, are both sing. and plural. *Fath* (rad. *math*) is always, and *cyfryw* for the most part, preceded by *y*. *Y cyfryw ddyn*; *y gyfryw neithred*; *y fath lyfr*; *y cyfryw ag a ddelont*; *y fath ag ydynt*. *Fath* (= sort), preceded by *pa*, forms an interrogative; *pa fath ddynion*?

(a) *Math* (or *báth*) is always *softened* after the article. *Y fath ddyn*, *such a man*. *Y fath ddynes*, *such a woman*. *Y fath ddynion*, *such men*.

(b) Some maintain that *cyfryw* should retain the radical after the article, even when in construction with a *fem. noun sing*. "*Y cyfryw wledd nefol*," *such a heavenly feast*. Com. Prayer.

555. *Dim* = *no*, *any* (of a thing), is affirmative or negative. (a) *Affirmative*; as *A oes dim bai ynddo?* = *any fault*. *Cyn bod dim cymmanfäau* = *any assemblies*. (b) When *negative*, it is preceded by a negative particle; as *Nid wyf yn cael dim bai yn y dyn hwn* = *no fault*. It is also used as an auxiliary adverb: *Ni ddaeth efe ddim* = *he did not come at all*. [With *dim* as an adverb cf. the Latin *nihil*; as, '*nihil cedi-mus Græciæ*.']

556. *Holl* and *oll* = *all*, *whole*, differ in that *holl* precedes, and *oll* follows, the noun. Each "takes a sing. or pl. noun,

* See §§ 213—218.

according as it means every part of one whole, or every individual of one species. Y byd oll, yr holl fyd = *the whole world*. Y dinasoedd oll, yr holl ddinasoedd = *all the cities*.*

Oll is sometimes used with an ellipsis of the substantive word with which it agrees; as *Daethant oll yma* (unders. *hwy*.) *Ac oll sydd ynddynt* (unders. *yr hyn*.)

557. **Llawer** = *many, much*. (a) It is followed by a sing. noun, and refers to *number*; as *llawer dyn*. [But we say *llawer rhai*.] (b) When it is followed by "o" (of), it may refer to *number* or *quantity*; if to *quantity*, the following noun is *singular*; if to *number*, the noun is *plural*. *Llawer o win*, much wine; *llawer o afalau*, many apples. (c) When it is used by itself it takes a pl. verb, like *many* in English. *Llawer a farnant fel hyn*, many think thus.

558. **Ychydig** = *a few, little*. (a) When referring to *quantity*, &c., it takes a sing. noun with or without *o*; *Ychydig win*, *ychydig o win*, little wine; *ychydig lesâd*, *ychydig o lesâd*, little benefit. (b) When referring to *numerical objects*, it takes a plural noun, with or without *o*: *Ychydig ddynion*, *ychydig o ddynion*, a few men.

559. **Peth** = *some*, is strictly a noun, signifying a *thing, something*; but it is often used where the word *some* would be employed in English. *Peth daioni a gawd ynddo* = *something of good; some good*.

560. **Naill** = *the one*, and **y llall**, pl. **y lleill** = *the other*, are correlatives; as *cymmer y naill neu y llall*, *take the one or the other*. [*Naill* is also a conjunction, and followed by *ai*; as *Naill ai tyred neu aros gartref*.]

561. **Pob** = *every*. (a) It is most usually followed by a noun in the singular; as *pob dyn*, every man. (b) But when signifying *every sort* or *kind*, it may have a pl. noun after it; as "Ac efe a gedwis lawer o bob anifeiliaid" = *all sorts of animals*.

562. **Pawb** = *all, all men*, is plural, and should not be followed by a noun. '*Pawb a ddywedant hyn*,' *all say this*. Sometimes it is followed by a singular verb; as, *pawb a chwennych anrhydedd*.

(a) Some writers erroneously consider it as the plural of the adj. *pob*, and hence write "*pawb dynion*," &c.

* Hughes on "Syntax."

563. **Rhyw** = *some, some sort of*, takes a sing. or plural noun. *Rhyw wr*, some man; *rhyw wyr*, some men.

564. **Rhai** = *some*, denoting *number*, is plural, and hence is followed by a pl. noun and a pl. verb. *Rhai dynion*, some men; *rhai aethant*, some went. When accompanied by another adjective, it is equivalent to '*ones*' in English. *Rhywrai, some ones*; *y rhai goludog, the wealthy ones*. It is also used as a relative pronoun, when preceded by *y* and not attended by another adjective. '*Y gwyr, y rhai a ddaethant yma, the men, who came here.*'

565. **Sawl** = *many; whoever*. (a) When preceded by *pa* (but *pa* is frequently left out) and followed by a noun, it forms a question; as *pa sawl gwaith*, or *sawl gwaith*, how many times? (b) When preceded by *y* and not followed by a noun, it is a relative pronoun; as *y sawl a ddelont* = *whoever, such as*.

566. **Un** = *one; any*, is (a) A definite numeral: *y mae yma un dyn*. (b) An indefinite numeral, and as such is generally preceded by a negative: *nid oes un dyn a all wneyd hyn*. (c) When preceded by the article *yr*, it signifies *the one; the same; whosoever*; as, *efe yw yr un a welais ddoe; yr un peth; yr un a ddelo a wobrwyr*. [When *yr un* is equivalent to *the same*, it may agree with a sing. or pl. noun; as *yr un llyfr; yr un llyfrau*.]

(a) The article is frequently put before *un* when *un* signifies *one* or *any*; as, "*nid oedd yr un o honynt yno, there was not one of them there*. And this use of "*yr*" preceded by a negative particle, though condemned by some critics, occurs often in the works of the purest writers.

Gellid gweled nas meddai *yr un* galon. Ellis Wynne.

Nid adwaen i *yr un*. Is. xliv. 8.

Ni chollais i *yr un*. S. John xviii. 9.

Nac *yr un* o'th anifeiliad. Deut. v. 14.

567. **Unrhyw** = *the same, any*, is both sing. and pl. '*Cymmeraf unrhyw beth (or bethau) a fynoch, I will take anything you like*. '*Nid oes unrhyw briodoliaeth a ddichon adroddi hanfod Duw*.' '*Unrhyw yw y Tad*.'

568. **Neb** = *nobody, no one; anybody, any one*, is both affirmative and negative. (a) *Affirmative*; as, *od oes neb yn caru y byd, if any one loves the world*. (b) When *negative*, it is preceded (like *dim*) by a negative particle; as '*nid oes iachawdwriaeth yn neb arall, neither is salvation in any other*.'

[Cf. Gr. Οὐκ ἔστιν ἐν ἄλλω οὐδέν, ἢ σωτηρία.] (c) Preceded by *y*, it forms a *relative*: *y neb a wnelo hyn, whoever does this*.

Neb is strictly a substantive pronoun, and hence should stand by itself. Yet we sometimes find a noun or substantive word following it, both in composition of words and separately.

Nebawd, *nobody*; nebdyn, *no person*; neble, *no place*; nebrhyw, *no, any*.

Ac nad elom mewn *neb rhyw berygl*. Common Prayer.

Na chymmeradwywn *neb rhyw swyddogion* nad ydynt yn medru iaith y wlad. Carnhuanawc.

VERBS.

569. *Agreement. Nom. preceding.* When the nominative case precedes the verb, the verb will agree with it in number and person; as,

Myfi a ddywedais, *I said*.

Tydi a ddywedaist, *thou saidst*.

Efe a ddywedodd, *he said*.

Duw a ddywedodd, *God said*.

Hwy a ddywedasant, *they said*.

Y dynion a ddywedasant, *the men said*.

(a) This rule regards only propositions of simple narration; for when there is antithesis, or when particular emphasis is to be laid on some part of the sentence, the verb may disagree with its nom. both in number and person, as will be seen hereafter. But even in simple narration a verb in the sing. number is often joined to a plural nominative.

Gerddi a gweunydd *gyll* eu gwawr. D. Davies.

A diefl a'i *teifl* yn y tân. Gor. Owen.

570. *Verb preceding.* When the nominative case is a *noun* and *follows* the verb, then the verb is put in the third person singular, whether the nominative be *singular* or *plural*; as,

Daeth y dysgybl, the disciple came.

Daeth y dysgyblion, the disciples came.

571. "When, however, several verbs are coupled together, and the nom. to the first is the nom. to all the others, then though the first verb be *sing.* with a plural nom. in accordance with the above law, yet the nom. being now *known*, all the other verbs will be plural; as,

Crynodd y ceidwaid, ac *aethant* megys yn feirw, *the keepers trembled and became as dead*.*

* T. J. Hughes on 'Syntax.'

572. When the nom. case is a *pronoun*, whether *preceding* or *following* the verb, the verb will agree with it in number and person; as,

Efe a *ddaeth*; *daeth* efe, *he came*.

Hwy a *dlaethant*; *daethant* hwy, *they came*.

573. A collective noun is sometimes followed by a singular, and sometimes by a plural verb; as,

A lliaws a *ddaeth*, *and a multitude came*.

A'r holl lliaws a *leasant*, *and the whole multitude cried out*.

574. A singular noun with a numeral adjective (except *un*) is followed by a plural verb; as,

Y ddau ddysgybl a'i *clywsant* ef yu llefaru, *the two disciples heard him speak*.

575. When two or more singular nouns are connected together by a copulative conjunction, they are usually followed by a plural verb: sometimes by a singular; as,

Pedr ac Ioan a *atebasant*, *Peter and John answered*.

Arthur a Dafydd a *orchfygasant* y gelynion.

Moses ac Elias a *ymddangosodd* iddynt.

(a) Strictly speaking, the verb should not be put in the sing. except when the assertion is true of the nom. cases taken severally.

“Pedr ac Ioan a *aeth*” = ‘*Pedr a aeth*,’ and ‘*Ioan a aeth*.’

576. When pronouns of different persons, or pronouns and substantives, are coupled together by copulative conjunctions, the verb, if *following*, will be in the pl. number, and refer to the nom. of the most worthy person.

The 1st person is more worthy than the 2nd; and the 2nd than the 3rd.

Myfi a thydi a *awn*. *Tydi* ac efe a *ewch*.

Mi a'm tylwyth a *wasanaethwn* yr Arglwydd. Josh. xxiv. 15.

577. If the verb *precede* its nominatives, it will be made to agree in number and person with the one next to it; as,

Aethym i a thydi. *Aethost* ti ac efe. *Aethom* ni a chwi.

578. When antithesis or opposition is implied in the nom. case, the verb, following it, is put in the *third person singular*, for all numbers and persons. This construction will be rendered into English by ‘*it is*,’ or (in questions) ‘*is it*,’ with a relative sentence.

Myfi a *ysgrifennodd* y llythyr hwn, (*it is*) *I (who) wrote this letter.*
Tydi a *wnaeth* hyn. Ai chwi ynte eich cefndyr a *ddaw*?

579. Similarly, words connected by disjunctive conjunctions are followed by *third person sing.* of the verb, for all numbers and persons; as,

Naill ai tydi ai myfi a *ddywedodd* hyn.

Naill ai chwi neu y gwyr hyn a *ddywedodd*.

580. **Position.** The position of words in a sentence depends on the emphasis intended to be laid on them. In Welsh, as in other languages, the most important word takes precedence. In ordinary discourse, when no particular emphasis is intended to be expressed, or where the verb, as being the main part of the clause, may be regarded as emphatic, the order will stand thus: **verb, subject, predicate or object.**

Penodir Arthur yn frenin, *Arthur will be appointed king.*
Gwnaeth Duw y byd. Ni wnaeth y brenin ddeddf.

(a) In English the case is quite the reverse. "Shines forth the cheerful sun," is said to be *rhetorically* arranged, whereas, in Welsh, "Ymddysgleiria'r heulwen oleu," is arranged *conventionally*.

(b) If the predicate is definite, the copula cannot take precedence, but the order must be either *subject, copula, predicate*, or *predicate, copula, subject*. Arthur oedd eich cyfaill, or Eich cyfaill oedd Arthur, *Arthur was your friend.* [Never, *yr oedd Arthur eich cyfaill.*]

581. Some clauses will always have this order (§ 580), whether they be simple or emphatic; such as,

Imper. Bydded goleuadau, *let there be lights.*

Interr. made by *a.* A wnaeth y brenin ddeddf?

Time. Pan wnaeth y brenin ddeddf.

Motive. Fel y gwnelo y brenin ddeddf.

582. When the verb is periphrastic, the subject in ordinary discourse, intervenes between the auxiliary and the other part; as,

Y mae *y brenin* yn dyfod, *the king is coming.*

(a) Cf. the English interrogative, "Do *riches* make men happy?"

583. But if the principal part of the periphrastic verb (i. e., the infinitive or participle) is antithetical, the order of the clause is **infinitive, auxiliary verb, subject.**

Dyfod y mae'r brenin = *coming is the king.* Gweu yr oedd y wraig.
Beth y mae Arthur yn ei wneyd? Dyrnu y mae.

Dywedyd yr ydwyf y pethau a wnaethym i'r brenin. Ps. xlv. 1.

(a) When the sentence is thus arranged, the participial sign *yn* is dismissed. *Dyfod* [not *yn dyfod*] *y mae*. But *wedi* of the perfect, and *ar* and *ar fedr* of the future are retained. *Wedi cychwyn y mae*. *Ar gychwyn y mae*.

584. When the subject of the clause is to receive emphasis, the order of construction will be **subject, verb, predicate or object**.

Arthur a benodir yn frenin.

Duw a wnaeth y byd.

Y brenin sydd yn dyfod.

Y brenin ni wnaeth ddeddf.

(a) Good critics are of opinion that this arrangement should be adopted only when the emphasis falls on the subject of the verb, as above; yet many Welsh writers (and especially translators) continually express ordinary discourse in this manner. Occasionally, indeed, this construction is elegantly used, especially when a series of similar clauses follow one another, and where the same order of words would render the sentences too monotonous.

585. When the emphasis falls on the predicate, or the object of the verb, the clause will be thus arranged: **predicate or object, verb, subject**.

Yn frenin y penodir Arthur.

Y byd a wnaeth Duw.

Dyfod y mae y brenin. [See § 583.] Deddf ni wnaeth y brenin.

586. Some clauses will always be arranged according to the order in the two preceding rules, irrespective of emphasis; as,

Rel. { Arthur, yr hwn a'm tarawodd i.
 { Arthur, yr hwn a darewais i.

Interr. made by { Ai Arthur a'm tarawodd i?
ai and onid. { Ai Arthur a darewais i?

Nominal Interr. made { Pwy a'm tarawodd i?
by pwy, &c. { Pwy a darewais i?

587. For the sake of still greater emphasis and vivacity, a sentence may be thus arranged: **subject, predicate or object, verb**; or **verb, predicate or object, subject**; or we may completely transpose the conventional order, and have **predicate or object, subject, verb**.

Pob elfen ufudd-dod a roes, }
Rhoes ufudd-dod bob elfen, } *every element obeyed.*
Ufudd-dod pob elfen a roes, }

588. Thus, in accordance with the foregoing observations on position, the same sentence may be arranged in six different ways.

- | | |
|--|----------------------|
| a. <i>Penodir</i> Arthur yn frenin.
<i>Rhoes</i> pob elfen ufudd-dod. | } <i>Simple.</i> |
| b. Arthur a <i>benodir</i> yn frenin.
Pob elfen a <i>roes</i> ufudd-dod. | |
| c. Yn frenin y <i>penodir</i> Arthur.
Ufudd-dod a <i>roes</i> pob elfen. | } <i>Rhetorical.</i> |
| d. Arthur yn frenin a <i>benodir</i> .
Pob elfen ufudd-dod a <i>roes</i> . | |
| e. Yn frenin Arthur a <i>benodir</i> .
Ufudd-dod pob elfen a <i>roes</i> .* | |
| f. <i>Penodir</i> yn frenin Arthur.
<i>Rhoes</i> ufudd-dod bob elfen. | |

589. **Government.** When the subject *immediately* follows a finite verb, it retains its *radical* initial; as,

Daeth gwr dyeithr ataf, *a stranger came to me.*
Cerir dyn ffyddlaw, *a faithful man is beloved.*

(a) *Mi*, *ti*, and their compounds, take the *middle* sound; as, caraf *fi*; cerir *finnau*; ceri *di*; cerir *dithau*. (See "Personal Pronouns.")

(b) Some tenses of the verb *bod*, and especially *oes*, when preceded by a negative adverb, are sometimes followed by their subject in the *middle* sound; as,

Yn yr hwn *nid oes dwyll*, *in whom there is no guile.*
Efe a weddiodd *na byddai wlaw*. S. James. v. 17.
Nid oes air o son am gael meddiant o un cwr. Theo. Evans.

590. A *finite* verb governs its object in the *middle*; an *infinitive* verb governs its object in the *radical* sound; as,

Finite. Gwnawn *ddyn*, *let us make man.*
Ceisïaf *ddyfod*, *I will endeavour to come.*
Infinitive. Ofni *dyn*, *to fear man.*
Ceisio *dyfod*, *to endeavour to come.*

591. The pronoun *ti* and its compounds are softened after the infinitive.

Y mae yn dy garu *di*, *he loves you.* (See "Pers. Pronouns.")

592 An infinitive verb, heading a *transitive clause* (=that with a *finite verb*), is put in the *middle* sound, whether the verb on which it depends be *finite* or *infinitive*. [The *transitive clause* will be explained hereafter.]

Efe a ddywed *ddarllen* o hono y llyfr, *he says that he read the letter.*
Dywedir *ddarllen* o hono y llyfr, *it is said that he read the letter.*
Y mae yn dweyd *ddarllen* o hono y llyfr, *he says that he read the letter.*

* Or ufudd-dod, pob elfen *a'i rhocs*.

593. But the verb *bod*, even when it introduces a *transitive clause*, and is equivalent to *that* with a *finite verb*, is by many writers put in the *radical* or *middle*, according as the verb, on which it depends, is a *finite active* verb; or a *finite passive*, or an *infinitive*; i. e., it is put in the *middle* sound after a *finite active*; but in the *radical* after a *finite passive* or an *infinitive* verb.

Efe a ddywed fod Arthur yn darllen,	} <i>that Arthur is reading.</i>
Dywedir bod Arthur yn darllen,	
Y mae yn dweyd bod Arthur yn darllen,	

(a) This may have arisen from want of due observation of the different meanings of *bod*. In the sentence, "Yr wyf yn bwriadu bod yno," *bod* implies simply "*to be*," and should retain its *radical* initial. In the sentence, "Yr wyf yn meddwl bod Arthur yno," *bod* signifies "*that . . is*," and should, according to analogy, have its *soft* form '*fod*.'

594. If the subject or the object, following the verb, be separated from it by an intervenient word or phrase, the subject or the object will be put in the *middle* sound. The expression '*an intervenient word or phrase*,' which is here used for want of a more suitable term, stands for—

a. *An adverb.*

Yr oedd yno ddynion dewr, *there were there brave men.*
Tynu ymaith bechodau. Bwrw allan gythreuliaid.

b. *A word governed by a preposition.**

Yr oedd yn y synagog ddyn, *there was in the synagogue a man.*
Y sychedig yn tynu o'r ffynon ddyfroedd iechydwrïaeth.
Ni a ddylem alw i gof fywyd Crist. Nicander.
Rhoddwyd iddo bin ysgrifenydd buan. W. Davies.

c. *An address or exclamation.*

Yr wyf yn bwriadu, gyfaill, ddyfod i'th weled, *I intend, friend, to come to see you.*

d. *An apposition word.*

Yr oedd yn bresennol feddygon medrus, *there were present skilful physicians.*

e. *An auxiliary verb.*

Ceisio y maent dduwiau ereill, *they seek other gods.*
Cadw yr ydys ddeddfau Omri, *the statutes of Omri are kept.*

* Pronominal prepositions are here included.

(a) "But if a word, which of its own nature requires another form, comes between the subject or the object and the verb, then the subject or the object will take that form which this word requires."*

Gwelais ei gwr, *I saw her husband.*

Gwelais yn dy frawd, *I saw there thy brother.*

595. *Observation.* The above rule (§ 594) is sometimes violated in poetical works, and occasionally in prose; the word being made to retain its *radical* sound, whereas it ought to be put in the *middle*.

Ni phrofais dan ffurfafen

Gwe mor gaeth a'r Gymraeg wen. E. Prys. [*Gwe* for *we*.]

Trwy gyfrwyddaw yn hydda pob rhyw ansawdd. Henri Perri.
[*Pob* for *bob*.]

But when the word begins a quotation, or when it is very far removed from the verb, it may perhaps very properly retain its *radical* initial; as,

Lle y gosodwyd yn yr Hydref diweddaf, ar fur y Ganghell, uwch ben ei fedd, Gwyddfaen o faen marinawr. Tegid.

Auxiliary affirmative particles.

Auxiliary affirmative pronouns. (See §§ 519, 520.)

596. The *auxiliary affirmative adverbs* are *a*, *y*, *yr* (*yd*, *ydd*).

A is used before the verb when the nom. or accus. of the verb precedes; as,

Duw *a* greodd y byd, *God created the world.*

Y dyn, yr hwn *a* darewaist ti, *the man whom you struck.*

597. *Y*, *yr* (and formerly *yd* and *yddl*) are used when the nom. and accus. follow the verb, but some other part of the sentence precedes it; as,

Yna *y* dywedodd efe = *then (it was) he said.*

I'r pentref acw *yr* aeth efe.

(a) *A* governs the *middle* sound. *Y* is used before a *consonant*, and followed by the *radical*: *yr* is put before a *vowel*.

* * * For further explanation of auxiliary affirmative adverbs, see Syntax of "Adverbs."

598. The use of possessive pronouns before verbs. There is a peculiar idiom in Welsh of employing the possessive pronouns before verbs; a point in which the language differs essentially from the Greek, Latin, and English. These posses-

sives, or, as they are called by some, "introductory pronouns," are for the most part used in connection with personal pronouns. Sometimes they serve as harbingers indicating that another pronoun is to follow; and sometimes they reflect on a word that has gone before in the sentence. In some places they are apparently redundant; but when they are employed in a certain case before the infinitive mood, they perform an important office, namely, that of converting *active verbs* and *active participles* into *passive*.

599. These pronouns, when placed before verbs, generally suffer an elision, and are thus written:

<i>Singular.</i>			<i>Plural.</i>		
1	2	3	1	2	3
'm	'th	'i (or 'w, as i'w)	'n	'ch	'u (or 'w, as i'w)
for	for	for	for	for	for
Ym	yth	ei	cin	eich	eu

600. **Before transitive verbs.** When a personal pronoun is the object of a verb (whether finite or infinitive), and *immediately follows* it, a corresponding possessive is placed immediately before the verb, indicating that a personal pronoun is to follow. The participles, being compounds of the infinitive, are here included.

Duw a'n gwnaeth ni, *God made us.*

Arthur a'th garodd di, *Arthur loved you.*

Yr eneth ni'm gwel i, *the girl sees me not.*

Addawodd Arthur fy nysgu i, *Arthur promised to teach me.*

Rhag iddo eich dyfetha chwi, *lest he should destroy you.*

Y mae Arthur yn ei charu hi, *Arthur loves her.*

Duw sydd yn fy nghynnal i, *God supports me.*

Gau ei rwygo ef, *tearing him.* Wedi ei daraw ef, *having struck him.*

(a) When the possessive precedes, the personal pronoun is usually omitted, unless it is to be emphatic. (Duw a'n gwnaeth. Arthur a'th garodd. Y mae Arthur yn ei charu.)

(b) If the reflexive *hun* or *hunan*, self, be the object of the verb, the introductory possessive is by some employed, by others omitted; thus we may say, Arthur a laddodd ei hun, or a'i (= a ei) lladdodd ei hun, Arthur killed himself.

Yr ydym yn ein twyllo ein hunain. 1 S. John i. 8.

Yn eu galw eu hunain yn Gristionogion. Com. Prayer.

601. When the object of the infinitive takes precedence in the clause, a possessive pronoun will be inserted immediately before the infinitive. In this case the object may be a *noun* as well as a personal pronoun.

602. The poss. pron. agrees with the preceding objective in *number* and *gender*; but the *third person* is always to be used. [This is a case in which the possessive does not indicate that a pers. pron. is *to follow*.]

<i>Y dyn hwn yr wyf yn ei garu.</i>	<i>Os myfi yr ydych yn ei geisio.</i>
<i>Y fenyw hon yr wyf yn ei charu.</i>	<i>Os tydi y maent yn ei geisio.</i>
<i>Y rhai y medraf eu darllen.</i>	

603. When the auxiliary particles *y* and *yr* precede the verb (in which case the subject follows the verb), the possessive pronoun may or may not be expressed. When it is, the objective personal pronoun is generally omitted; when it is not, the personal pronoun should always be expressed.

Possessive expressed.

Yno y'm daliasant.

Fel y'n gwaredai.

Possessive omitted.

Yno y daliasant fi.

Fel y gwaredai ni.

(a) When the possessive is expressed, the subject coming after the verb, is almost invariably omitted. *Yno y'm daliasant*,—not, *yno y'm daliasant hwy*. Such construction as the following is rare. “*Pan y'm hamgylch-yno anwiredd fy sodlau.*” Ps. xlix. 5.

(b) In the above cases some write *ym, yth, ei, ein, eich, eu*, without a mark of contraction; others employ an apostrophe, and write *y'm, y'th, y'i, y'n, y'ch, y'u*. While the former mode is the more common, the latter is certainly the more correct; for, as it is evident, the particle *y* is in the above construction present before each of the pronouns. “*Yno y'm daliasant,*” *there they caught me*, would be written at full length, “*Yno y ym daliasant.*”

604. The same rule (§ 603) is applicable to a negative sentence, when the subject follows the verb, expressed or understood (§ 603 (a))

Possessive expressed.

Ni'th gerais, I loved thee not.

Ni'm carodd, he loved me not.

Possessive omitted.

Ni cherais di.

Ni charodd fi.

(a) But when the 3rd person is the object of the verb, the possessive is never placed before the verb in a negative preposition.

Ni cherais ef. Ni charasom hwynt.

605. Before intransitive and passive verbs. We have seen that the possessives are employed before *transitive* verbs in connection with words (especially *pers. pronouns*) in the *objective case*; but they are employed before *intransitive* and *passive* verbs in connection with words (especially *pers. pronouns*) in the *nominative case*.

606. *a. Intransitive verbs.* The verb *Bod*, and other intransitive verbs, when used in the infinitive as the main verbs of a clause, are often followed by their subject; and if, in this case, the subject be a pers. pronoun, the infinitive will always be preceded by a corresponding possessive.

Dywed *fy* mod *i* yn gywir, *he says that I am right.*

Dywed *dy* fod *di* yn darllen, *he says that you are reading.*

O herwydd *ei* fod *ef* yn dyfod, *because [that] he is coming.*

Dywed *ei* fyned *ef* i'r dref, *he says that he is gone to town.*

607. *b. Passive verbs.* The possessives are placed before passive verbs, when these verbs precede their subjects, (expressed or understood) and are themselves preceded by other words.

Fe'm dysgir *i*, or fe'm dysgir, *I am taught.*

Pan y'm dysger *i*, or pan y'm dysger, *when I am taught.*

Fel y'm dysger *i*, or fel y'm dysger, *that I may be taught.*

608. The infinitive passive. The infinitive passive is formed by placing before the simple infinitive a possessive pronoun, corresponding to the noun or pronoun which would be the subject, if the infinitive were analysed, and expressed by a finite verb. For example, in the expression "I came to be taught," *to be taught* is equivalent to 'that I might be taught:' here the subject of the infin. is the same with that of the verb on which it depends. Again, in "I sent him to be taught," *to be taught* is equivalent to 'that he might be taught:' here the subject of the infin. is the same with the *object* of the main verb. Hence

609. If, in Welsh, the governing verb be *intransitive*, the infinitive will be preceded by a poss. pronoun corresponding to the *subject* of the governing verb.

Mi a ddaethym *i'm* dysgu=I came to *my* teaching; to be taught=that I might be taught.

610. If the governing verb be *transitive*, the infinitive will be preceded by a poss. pronoun, corresponding to the *object* of the governing verb.

Anfonais *ef i'w* ddyysgu=I sent him to *his* teaching; to be taught=that he might be taught.

611. The infinitive, having thus acquired a passive signification, will consequently not admit a personal pron. after it;

so that the general difference in form between a *transitive* and a *passive* infinitive is, that the former has, and the latter has not, an *objective personal pronoun*. The pron. may or may not come after a transitive, according to the degree of emphasis required; but it can never come after a passive.

Transitive. Daethym *i'w ddysgu ef*, } *I came to teach him.*
 Daethym *i'w ddysgu*, }
 Anfonais ef *i'w ddysgu ef*, } *I sent him to teach him.*
 Anfonais ef *i'w ddysgu*, }

Passive. Daeth *i'w ddysgu*, *he came to be taught:*
 Anfonais ef *i'w ddysgu*, *I sent him to be taught.*

612. The auxiliary *cael* (to have) is very often borrowed to express the infinitive passive.

Mi a ddaethym *i gael fy nysgu* = I came to have my teaching; I came to be taught.

Anfonais ef *i gael ei ddysgu* = I sent him to have his teaching; that he might be taught.

* * The *passive participles*, being formed from the passive infinitive by prefixing certain particles to them, fall under the preceding observation. (See § 307.)

612. (1.) **Subjunctive Mood.** The *present* Subjunctive, in subjoined clauses, accompanies the *present*, *future*, and *perfect definite* of the Indicative: the *imperfect* Subjunctive accompanies the *imperfect*, *perfect indefinite*, and *pluperfect* of the Indicative. Thus,

Yr wyf yn dyfod (<i>pres.</i>)	}	fel y gwelwyf ef (<i>pres. subj.</i>)
Deuaf (<i>future.</i>)		
Yr wyf wedi dyfod (<i>perf. def.</i>)		
Yr oeddwn yn dyfod (<i>imperf.</i>)	}	fel y gwelwn ef (<i>imperf. subj.</i>)
Daethym (<i>perf. indef.</i>)		
Daethwn (<i>pluperfect.</i>)		

612. (2.) The verb is always put in the Subjunctive mood in the following clauses.

a) A *motive* clause, when headed by *fel*, *fal*, *mal*, *modd*, *megys*.

Af yno, fel y gwelwyf fy mrawd, *that I may see my brother* (*pres.*)
 Aethym yno, fel y gwelwn fy mrawd, *that I might see my brother* (*imp.*)

b) A *non-fact supposition*, and its *apodosis*.

Byddwn ddedwydd, pe byddai efe yma, *I should be happy, if he were here* (*imperf.*)

Aethen yno, pe daethai efe gyda mi, I should have gone there, if he had come with me (plup.)

c) A *wish* clause.

Duw a'ch *bendithio*, *may God bless you* (pres.)

O na *allwn* ysgrifenu, *would that I could write* (imperf.)

O na *welswn* ef, *would that I had seen him* (plup.)

d) A *negative transitive* clause (or "a substantive accessory sentence"*) after words implying *commanding*, &c.

Gorchymmyn na *chymmerwyf* y llyfr, *that I should not take the book* (pres.)

Gorchymmynodd na *chymmerwn* y llyfr, *that I should not take the book* (imperf.)

e) *Generally* in an *indefinite time* clause.

Hyd oni *ddelo*, *till he may come* (pres.) Hyd oni *ddelai*, *till he might come* (imperf.)

Pryd na *chaffo*. Crybwyll am danynt, pan *eisteddych*.

Pa bryd bynag yr *elo*. Pan y *mynont*.

Anhawdd yw genyf goelio hyny, hyd oni *welwyf* ychwaneg o eglurdeb. Gor. Owen.

f) *Generally* in an *indefinite relative* clause.

Y neb a *hawo* anwiredd, *he that soweth iniquity* (pres.) Prov. xxii. 8.

Pwy bynag a *gredo*. Dyweded Camden a *fyno*.

Gwnaed fel y *myno*. Lle ni *byddo* cynghor. Prov. xi. 14.

612. (3.) And when the state or fact, enunciated by the verb, is *contingent* in signification, the following clauses will have their verbs in the Subjunctive.

a) A *transitive* clause.

Dywedodd y *byddai* yno, *that he would be there* (imperf.)

Dywedodd y *buasai* yno, *that he would have been there* (plup.)

Barnodd mai cyfiawn *fyddai* hyn (imperf.): *fuasai* hyn (plup.)

b) A *cause* clause.

O herwydd y *byddai* [*buasai*] hyny yn golled, *because that would be a loss* (imperf. and plup.)

O herwydd mai cyfiawn a *fyddai* [*fuasai*] hyny (imperf. and plup.)

c) An *explanatory* cause clause.

Canys hyny a *fyddai* [*fuasai*] yn golled, *for that would be a loss* (imperf. and plup.)

* Arnold's English Grammar, p. 110.

d) A *concessive* clause.

Er lleied y *bo*, *though it be so small* (pres.)

Er y *byddai* [*buasai*] hyny yn gywir (imperf. and plup.)

Er mai cyfiawn *fyddai* [*fuasai*] hyny (imperf. and plup.)

e) An *effect* clause.

Cymmaint oedd ei lid fel y *lladdai* [*lladdasai*] ei frawd, *that he would kill his brother* (imperf. and plup.)

f) An *interrogative* clause.

Pwy a *ddeuai* yma? *who would come here?* (imperf.)

Pwy byth a *fuasai* yn meddwl hyny? (plup.)

Onid gwyhych *fyddai* cael tipyn ychwaneg? Gor. Owen.

THE VERB *BOD*, *to be*.

613. **Difference between *sydd*, *mae*, *yw*, and *oes*.** The Welsh language has these four different forms to express the 3rd person Indicative of *bod*. Each form has its own place and import; so that one cannot be employed optionally for the other, without altering the construction of the sentence, and, in most cases, giving it a different signification.

614. **General rule.** *Sydd* is *preceded* by its subject, and followed by an *indefinitive* predicate: *mae* is *followed* by its subject and accompanied by an *indefinitive* predicate, and is never *immediately* preceded by a negative particle: *oes* is employed in neg. supp., and predicative interr. sentences, and is *followed* by its subject, which must be *indefinitive*: *yw* (or *ydyw*) is sometimes *preceded* and sometimes *followed* by its subject.

Arthur *sydd* yn filwr, *Arthur is a soldier.*

Y *mae* Arthur yn filwr.

Milwr *yw* Arthur.

Nid *oes* arian ganddo.

Yr hwn *yw* dy law.

Special rules.

615. **Sydd*** is used when the emphasis is thrown on the *subject*, and has strictly an antithetical or exceptional force, equivalent to the English words "*it is . . that.*" It often how-

* Some Welsh scholars wish to lay down as a rule that *sydd* should be placed before vowels, and *sy* before consonants. Pwy *sydd* acw? Pwy *sy* draw? (Tegid's "Iawn lythyreniad," p. 14.) But while this distinction conduces to euphony of expression, it tends to obscure the etymology of the word.

ever loses its antithetical force, being used in sentences where the copula implies simply 'is.'

(a) *Sydd* (sometimes written *yssydd*) is probably compounded of *ys* = *is*, and *ydd* = *it*, thus literally signifying *is it* or *it is*.

616. *Sydd* is preceded by its *subject*, and followed by an *indefinitive* word or predicate. [Order: *subject, copula, predicate.*]

Arthur *sydd* yn frenin, *Arthur is a king.*

Arthur *sydd* yn ddoeth.

Arthur *sydd* yma.

Arthur *sydd* yn darllen.

Arthur *sydd* yn y ty.

(a) Such construction as "Y neb sydd ganddo ddwy bais" should probably be "Y neb sydd a chanddo ddwy bais;" or "Y neb sydd a dwy bais ganddo."

617. If the predicate following the verb be *definitive*, *yw* will be substituted for *sydd*.

Indef. Arthur *sydd* yn frenin. *Def.* Arthur *yw* y brenin.

(a) The terms *definitive* and *indefinitive* should be explained here. By a *definitive word* is meant the *definite article*, either expressed or virtually implied in another word. In the sentence, "Arthur yw y brenin," the article is *expressed*; in "Arthur yw fy mrenin," it is implied in the pron. *fy*. An *indefinitive word* is that which has no article, either expressed or implied; e. g., *adverbs, prepositions with their case, participles, and nouns and adjectives* admitting '*yn apposition*' before them.

618. *Negation*. Particles of negation should *immediately* precede the words intended to be negated. In a sentence with *sydd* the subject is usually the negated term. The particle will then immediately precede it; and as the verb is not affected by negative particles unless they immediately precede it, *sydd* will remain unchanged.

Affirm. Arthur *sydd* frenin. *Neg. Nid* Arthur *sydd* frenin.

Nid chwyhwi *sydd* yn dywedyd, ond yr Ysbryd Glan. S. Mark xiii. 11.

619. Sometimes, however, the copula is the negated term, and as '*sydd*' can never be immediately preceded by a negative particle, the copula *yw* (pl. *ynt*) is substituted for it.

Affirm. Yr hwn *sydd* yn caru. *Neg.* Yr hwn *nid yw* yn caru.

Cariad *nid yw* yn cenfigenu. 1 Cor. xiii. 4.

A'r gwirionedd *nid yw* ynom. 1 S. John i. 8.

Arfau ein milwriaeth ni *nid ydynt* gnawdol. 2 Cor. x. 4.

620. *Suppositions* introduced by *od, os*; and *Interrogations* introduced by *a, onid, &c.*, require the same construction as negative clauses.

621. *Mae*. *Mae* is used when 'the emphasis is on the deed or fact announced by it.' It signifies '*is*' and '*there is*.'

622. *α*. *Mae*, signifying '*is*,' is connected with *yn*. It must always precede its subject, and be accompanied by an *indefinite* word or predicate.

Y mae Arthur yn frenin.

Y mae Arthur yma.

Y mae Arthur yn ddoeth.

Y mae Arthur yn y ty.

Y mae Arthur yn darllen.

623. *Position of predicate*. The predicate usually comes after the subject, as in the foregoing examples. [Order: **copula, subject, predicate**.]

624. Sometimes it intervenes between the copula and the subject; as,

Y mae yn aros ffydd, gobaith, a chariad. 1 Cor. xiii. 13.

Mae yn angenrheidiol fod ynddi gyflawnder o eiriau. Blackwell.

625. When *mae* is auxiliary, the accompanying participle and its dependents may precede it; or the object of the participle may precede, and the participle itself follow the copula.

Aros y mae ffydd. Ei geisio ef y mae Arthur.

Efe y mae Arthur *yn ei geisio.* *Yr hwn y mae* Arthur *yn ei geisio.*

(a) When the participle comes before the verb, '*yn participial*' is left out. Thus we have "*aros y mae ffydd*," for "*yn aros*," &c.

626. If prepositions and their case, or adverbs of similar import, or conjunctive adverbs, begin the sentence, the copula is *mae*.

Yma y mae Arthur, *Arthur is here.*

Yn yr hwn y mae twyll.

Sut y mae Arthur?

At hwn y mae Arthur yn dyfod.

Pa le y mae Arthur yn myned?

Pan y mae yn dwyn.

Tra y mae hi yn ddydd.

Lle y mae Ysbryd yr Arglwydd, yno y mae rhyddid. 2 Cor. iii. 17.

Pa le y mae dy hen drugareddau? Ps. lxxxix. 49.

(a) The governing prep. is very frequently put after the verb. *Beth y mae yn gofyn am dano* = *what does he ask for?*

627. If a noun or adjective, having '*yn apposition*' before it, precede the copula, *yn* is sometimes retained, and the copula will be *mae*; but most usually *yn* is dropped, and then *yw* will be substituted for *mae*.

'*Yn*' retained. *Yn frenin y mae* Arthur, } *Arthur is king.*
'*Yn*' omitted. *Brenin yw* Arthur, }

(a) With periphrastic verbs, *yn* is retained before the predicative noun or adjective. *Yn frenin y mae Arthur yn cael ei benodi.*

628. The subject of *mae*, if it be a pronoun, is frequently omitted; as,

Y mae [efe] yn gwaredu, he delivers.

629. In the Welsh Bible the words “*pa le*,” *where*, are sometimes left out in an interrogative sentence which has *mae* for its copula; as,

Mae Abel dy frawd (= pa le y mae)? where is Abel thy brother?

Mae yr Arglwydd dy Dduw? where is the Lord thy God? Micah vii. 10.

Mae hwynt? mae dy ddoethion? where are they? where are thy wise men? Is. xix. 12.

630. *Negation.* *Mae* is never *immediately* preceded by a negative particle; therefore, if in a negative proposition the copula is the term to be negated, *yw* will be substituted for *mae*.

Affirm. Y mae Arthur yn frenin. Neg. Nid yw Arthur yn frenin.

Y mae Arthur yn rhyfela. Nid yw Arthur yn rhyfela.

(a) But if a part of the sentence intervenes between the negative particle and the copula, *mae* is retained. *Nid yma y mae Arthur. Nid darllen y mae efe.*

631. *Suppositions* introduced by *od* and *os*, and *Interrogations* introduced by *a* and *onid*, require the same construction as negative propositions.

Supp. Os yw Arthur yn frenin, if Arthur is king.

Interr. A yw Arthur yn frenin, is Arthur king?

632. β. *Mae*, signifying ‘*there is*,’ is connected with *Oes*, ‘*there is*.’ Both words occupy the same position as *mae = is*; i. e., they precede the subject, which must be *indefinite* (= *some, any, &c.*) *Mae* occurs in *affirmative* propositions; *oes* in *negative* propositions, in *suppositions* introduced by *od* and *os*, and in *interrogations* introduced by *a* and *onid*.

Affirm. Y mae ganddo arian. Affirm. Y mae rhywun yn dyfod.

Neg. Nid oes ganddo arian. Neg. Nid oes neb yn dyfod.

Supp. Os oes ganddo arian. Supp. Os oes rhywun yn dyfod.

Interr. A oes ganddo arian? Interr. A oes rhywun yn dyfod?

633. In answer to a question made by ‘*a oes*,’ the same verb is employed, and sometimes *mae* is added; as,

A oes ganddo arian? Oes; or oes, y mae.

Yw or ydyw.

634. *Affirmative sentences.* *Yw* is used when the emphasis is to be laid on the predicate: hence *yw* is preceded by the predicate, and followed by the subject. [Order: predicate, copula, subject.]

Here the predicate must be a *noun* or *adjective* unaccompanied by 'an apposition.'

Brenin yw Arthur. Doeth yw Arthur.

Ysgrifenedig yw y gair.

Cadarn yw dy law ac uchel yw dy ddebeulaw. Ps. lxxxix. 13.

Da yw moliannu yr Arglwydd. Ps. xcii. 1.

Gwaith mawr yw ceisio ei foddhau.

(a) If '*yn apposition*' be retained, *mae* should be employed. *Yn frenin y mae* (not *yw*) *Arthur.*

(b) If prepositions with their case, or adverbs of like import, or conjunctive adverbs, precede, the copula should be *mae*, not *yw*; as *sut y mae* *fy nghyfaill*, not '*sut yw fy nghyfaill.*' (§ 626.) Yet in the Welsh version of the Bible we occasionally meet with the copula *yw* after the conjunctive adverbs *pan*, when, and *tra*, whilst; as,

Pan yw yn dwyn, for "*pan y mae yn dwyn.*" Heb. i. 6.

Pan yw fy nhad a'm mam yn fy ngwrthod. Ps. xxvii. 10.

Tra yw y brenin ar ei fwrdd. Cant. i. 12.

Tra yr ydyw hi yn ddydd. S. John ix. 4.

635. When the predicate is *definitive* by being preceded by the article, or when in its own nature it is *definitive*, it may interchange position with the subject: i. e., the copula *yw* may follow the subject, and precede the predicate; or follow the predicate, and precede the subject, as above. [Order: subject, copula, definitive predicate; or definitive predicate, copula, subject.]

Arthur yw y brenin; or Y brenin yw Arthur.

Hi yw dy fywyd; or Dy fywyd yw hi.

Cydseiniaid yw esgryn geiriau; or Esgryn geiriau yw cydseiniaid.

Yr Arglwydd yw ein tarian, a Sanct Israel yw ein brenin. Ps. lxxxix. 18.

Yr Arglwydd yw yr Ysbryd. 2 Cor. iii. 17.

Yr hon yw gogoniant yr holl diroedd. Ezek. vi. 20.

Yr hwn yw dy gleddyf di. Ps. xvii. 13.

Yr hwn yw delw Duw. 2 Cor. iv. 4.

Diwedd y rhai yw distryw. Phil. iii. 19.

Cyfiawnder a barn yw trigfa dy orseddfainc. Ps. lxxxix. 14.

Prif ddyben y traethawd hwn ydyw adferu cyssondeb. Tegid.

(a) But if the subject precede, and the predicate be *indefinitive*, *sydd*, not *yw*, must be used. We should therefore write,

Thus instead of "*yn frenin y mae Arthur*," it is more usual to say "*brenin yw Arthur*."

(d) In negative, interrogative and suppositive sentences *yw* (or *ydyw*) is substituted for *mae*. *Mae Arthur yn frenin. Nid ydyw Arthur yn frenin: a ydyw Arthur yn frenin: os ydyw Arthur yn frenin.* (See below.)

(c) If the neg., interr., or supp. particles belong to some other part of the sentence, the copula is not affected. *Nid yn y ty y mae Arthur. Ai yn y ty y mae Arthur. Os yn y ty y mae Arthur.*

639. (2.) **Mae** = "there is," like *mae* = "is," is followed by its subject. It is connected with **Oes**, which occupies the same place in the sentence. *Mae* occurs in affirmative sentences: *oes* in negative, interr., and suppositive sentences. *Mae llawer o blant yn yr ysgol. Nid oes— a oes—os oes llawer o blant yn yr ysgol.*

639. (3.) **Sydd** occurs in affirmative sentences—is preceded by its subject—and is followed by an indefinite predicate. *Arthur—sydd—yn frenin.*

(a) *Sydd* has the force of "it is—that." But in relative, and often in other sentences, it means simply "is."

(b) When it is equivalent to "it is—that," the subject is the negated term, and hence the copula is not affected. *Nid Arthur sydd yn frenin.*

(c) When it means "is," *yw* (pl. *ynt*) is substituted for it in a negative sentence. *Yr hwn sydd yn frenin; y rhai sydd yn freninoedd. Yr hwn nid yw yn frenin; y rhai nid ynt yn freninoedd.*

(d) If the predicate be definite, *yw*, not *sydd*, is the copula. *Arthur sydd yn frenin* (indefinite.) *Arthur yw y brenin* (definite.)

639. (4.) **Yw** or **ydyw** in affirmative sentences is preceded by the predicate—and followed by the subject; or preceded by the subject—and followed by the predicate. *Brenin—yw—Arthur* (predicate preceding.) *Ihwn—yw—dy gleddyf* (subject preceding.)

(a) When an indefinite noun or adjective is the predicate, it always precedes the copula. *Brenin yw Arthur. Doeth yw Arthur.*

(b) When the predicate is definite, it may either precede or follow the copula. [In relative and nominal interr. sentences the rel. and interr. pronouns must, of course, precede.] *Hwn yw dy gleddyf: dy gleddyf yw hwn. Arthur yw y brenin: y brenin yw Arthur.*

(c) If the predicate is indefinite, and follows the copula, *sydd*, not *yw*, should be employed. *Arthur yw y brenin* (definite.) *Arthur sydd yn frenin* (indefinite.)

639. (5.) **Yw** or **ydyw** in negative, interrogative, and suppositive sentences is a substitute for *mae*, and it occupies the same place as *mae* in the sentence. *Mae Arthur yn frenin: nid ydyw A. yn frenin; a ydyw A. yn frenin; os ydyw A. yn frenin. Maent hwy yn freninoedd: nid [a, os] ydynt hwy yn freninoedd.*

(a) It is a substitute for **sydd** in a negative sentence when *sydd* signifies "is" and "are." Yr hwn sydd yn frenin; y rhai sydd yn frenin-oedd; yr hwn *nid yw* yn frenin; y rhai *nid ynt* yn freninoedd.

640. AGREEMENT. The rules laid down in § 569 respecting the agreement of verbs with their nominatives in sentences of simple narration, will apply to the tenses of *Bod*.

A'r cerddorion a *fyddant* yno. Ps. lxxxvii. 7.

Ti, Arglwydd, *fuost* yn breswylfa. Ps. xc. 1.

Tydi *wyt* ddysgybl iddo ef.

(a) But the occurrence of the *singular* number of this verb preceded by a *plural* nominative is so common, both in written and colloquial language, that some good critics are of opinion that a singular and a plural verb may be indifferently joined to a plural nominative.

I bawb a fu o'm blaen i, *to all that have been before me.*

Y rhai oedd yn ei lu ef, *who were in his army.*

641. When the subject of discourse is antithetical, and the predicate an *indefinitive* term, *sydd* in present tense, and the *third person singular* in other tenses, will be put for all numbers and persons.

Myfi sydd yn myned.

Tydi a fydd yno.

Tydi sydd ddysgybl iddo ef.

Chwychwi a fydd yno.

642. When the verb is followed by a *definitive* noun or adjective, *yw* in present tense, and the *3rd person sing.* in other tenses, will be put for all numbers and persons.

Myfi yw y bugail da.

Cydseiniaid yw esgyrn geiriau.

Tydi yw fy anwyl fab.

Iuddewon oedd y gwyr hyn.

Hwynt-hwy yw y gwir berchenogion.

Y rhai yw dy law.

Chwychwi yw ein gogoniant.

Tydi yw y doethaf o'r cwbl.

Chwi oedd y rhai a garaswn.

643. **Sydd.** *Sydd* is an indeclinable verb, and is put in construction both with singular and plural nominatives; as,

Y gair sydd wirionedd.

Y milwr sydd yn dyfod.

Y geiriau sydd wirionedd.

Y milwyr sydd yn dyfod.

(a) Many, even of our best writers, not considering that *sydd* is itself plural as well as singular, frequently adopt *ynt* or *dynt* as plural.

Tafodau *dydynt* arwydd (1 Cor. xiv. 22.) for Tafodau *sydd* arwydd.

Y rhai dydynt yn gofyn aceniad hir. Tegid.

Hwythau dydynt yn gwahanu 'r sacrament. M. Kyffin.

Ond y trigolion dydynt lesg. Theo. Evans.

Y rhai dydynt yn ei weled ef â llygaid yr enaid. Nicander.

(b) If the verb be negatived, then *ynt* or *ydynt*, being the pl. of *yw* or *ydyw* (which is the substitute of *sydd*) will very properly be used ; as,

Tafodau nid *ydynt* arwydd, *tongues are not for a sign.*

A'r holl bethau dymunol nid *ydynt* gyffelyb iddi. Prov. iii. 15.

644. **Ellipsis of copula.** The Welsh language frequently admits of an ellipsis of the copula, especially the form *yw* or *ydyn*.

Digon [yw] i ni wybod hyn. Eiddo'r Arglwydd [yw] y ddaiar.

Mor gu [yw] genyf dy gyfraith di.

Onid mwy hyfryd [yw] gweled Duw gyda'r bugeiliaid ?

Nid da [yw] rhy o ddim. Gwyn [yw] eu byd y rhai addfwyn.

APPOSITION VERBS.

645. In all languages there are some verbs capable of taking (a) two *nominatives*; namely, a subject-nominative which must be a noun or pronoun, and a predicative-nominative which may be a noun or adjective: (b) two *accusatives*, the former a noun or pronoun, the latter a noun or adjective.

These are verbs of *being, becoming, seeming, calling, making, appointing, considering, thinking, choosing, &c.*

He is a man.

I offer my friend as witness.

The man becomes troublesome.

He calls him an uncle.

He is appointed general.

I take him for a father.

646. '**Yn apposition.**' In Welsh, the *second nominatives* and *second accusatives* are preceded by the particle '*yn*,' which from the function it performs of setting words in apposition may be denominated '*yn* apposition.*'

(a) In English *a, an, as, and for*, are sometimes used where in Welsh *yn* would be employed.

"I offer him *as* witness" = cynnygiat ef *yn* dyst.

To these may be added the prep. *into* ; and the particle *in*, which in certain cases is exactly equivalent to *yn*, and probably of the same origin.

"Letters are divided *into* vowels and consonants" = *yn* llafariad a chydseiniaid.

"Ye shall have their careases *in* abomination" = *yn* ffield-dra.

"And smoke to roll *in* dusky wreaths" = *yn* amdyreh tywyllion.

* *Yn* is probably a participle, signifying *being*, and of cognate origin with the Greek participle *ὄν*.

(b) In Greek the prep. *εἰς* is sometimes found where *yn* would be employed in Welsh.

Ἀποβήσεται . . . εἰς μαρτύριον = *yn dystiolaeth*. S. Luke xxi. 13.
Πῶλους εἰς δασμὸν τρεφομένους = *yn deyrnged*. Xen.

647. The particle *yn* is used when the apposition word is an *indefinitive noun or adjective*. Thus *yn*, with regard to its indefinite character, resembles *a* and *an*; but *yn* can be employed before plural nouns and before predicative adjectives, whereas *a* and *an* cannot.

Examples of *yn* before the *second nominative*.

Nid yw *y rhai hyn yn feddwon*. Acts ii. 15.
Yr hwn a wnaed yn ben i'r gongl. Acts iv. 11.
Y mae Arthur yn frenin doeth.
Bydded ei *drigfan ef yn ddiffaethwch*. Acts i. 20.

Examples of *yn* before the *second accusative*.

A Duw a alwodd y goleuni yn ddydd. Gen. i. 5.
Hyd oni osodwyf dy elynion yn droedfainc. Acts ii. 35.
Hwn a ddyrchafodd Duw . . . yn dywysog. Acts v. 31.
Pa ham y gosodaist fi yn nod i ti? Job vii. 20.

648. If the word following the copula be a participle, an adverb, or a preposition with its case, *yn* cannot be used; as,
Efe sydd yn rhyfela. *Efe sydd yma*. *Efe sydd gyda'r gwaith*.

649. But if the apposition is an adjective, *yn* may be used, even when the adjective is preceded by qualifying adverbs; as,

Y mae Arthur yn dra dysgedig, *Arthur is very learned*.
Y mae Arthur yn wir ddysgedig, *Arthur is truly learned*.

(a) *Môr* and *cyn*, which precede the equal degree, cannot be preceded by *yn*.

Arthur sydd mor enwog [not *yn mor enwog*.]
Arthur sydd cyn enwoced [not *yn cyn enwoced*.]

650. **Government.** *Yn* governs all the mutable consonants, except *ll* and *rh* in the *middle* sound. *Ll* and *Rh* retain the *radical*.

Y mae Arthur yn gawr ac yn ben ar bawb.
Penodwyd Arthur yn frenin.

Ll and *Rh*. *Y mae hwn yn llyfr hardd, ac yn rhad*.

651. **Position.** *Yn* immediately precedes the word or words forming the apposition. If an adjective precede the apposition

noun, *yn* stands before the adjective; if an adverb precede the apposition adjective, *yn* stands before the adverb.

Dafydd sydd *yn ddyn*.

Dafydd sydd *yn hen* ddyn.

Dafydd sydd *yn ddysgedig*.

Dafydd sydd *yn wir* ddysgedig.

652. In ordinary discourse, whether the verb or subject precede, the apposition words are made to follow.

Bydd hyn *yn arwydd*.

Hyn a fydd *yn arwydd*.

Cyfrifir Arthur *yn ddysgedig*.

Arthur a gyfrifir *yn ddysgedig*.

Cafodd Arthur geiniog *yn wobr*.

(a) Sometimes the first nom. and first accus. are omitted.

Bu [*efe*] *yn llwyddiannus*. Y maent [*hwy*] *yn anffodiog*.

Efe a ollyngodd [*y dyn*] *yn rhydd* iddynt, yr hwn a fwriasid yng ngharegar. S. Luke xxiii. 25.

653. The apposition nom. sometimes takes the first place in the clause. Here the particle *yn* may be, and most frequently is omitted, the apposition word resuming its *radical* sound.

Yn ddysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur, or *Dysgedig* y cyfrifir Arthur.

Noeth y daethym o groth fy mam. Job i. 21.

(a) *Yn* affects the particle 'a' in the same way as a preposition does: hence if the predicate with *yn*, expressed or understood, goes before the verb, 'a' is changed into 'y' or 'yr:' thus,

Arthur *a* gyfrifir *yn* ddysgedig.

Yn ddysgedig *y* cyfrifir Arthur. *Dysgedig y* cyfrifir Arthur.

The pres. *wyf*, &c., and imperf. *oeddwn*, &c. of *bod*, however, do not admit of the particle. [See § 721.]

Cyfiawn ydyw Arthur [not *yr* ydyw.]

Cyfiawn oedd Arthur [not *yr* oedd.]

654. Sometimes the apposition nominative and apposition accusative precede the first nominative and first accusative.

Gwnaf *yn ddyfnion* eu dyfroedd hwynt. Ezek. xxxii. 14.

Hwnw a geidw *yn fyw* ei enaid. Ezek. xviii. 27.

Y maent yn gwneuthur *yn llydain* eu phylacterau. S. Matt. xxiii. 5.

A gyfrifwn *yn lan* un â ehlorianau anwir? Mica vi. 11.

(a) In poetry the apposition word sometimes intervenes between the first nom. or first accus., and the verb; as,

Y fesen *yn dderwen* a ddaw.

655. Omission of *yn*. It has been remarked that *yn* may be omitted when the predicate takes the first place in the clause.

It should be further noted that, in connection with *bod*, it is often omitted even when the predicate follows the subject and verb.

Ti wyt beu = *yn ben*. A'u tafod sydd dwyllodrus = *yn dwyllodrus*.

Ei air oedd ddigonol = *yn ddigonol*. Nid yw llyn ran fawr = *yn rhan fawr*.

(a) Here the predicate has its initial in the *middle* sound, although *yn* is omitted. (Ei air oedd *ddigonol*.) Sometimes, however, the predicate is put in the *radical*; as,

I'r dyn a fyddo *da*. Eccles. ii. 26.

Gwr da a fydd trugarog fwyn. E. Prys.

A safed *yn* ei burdeb cyssefin pan fyddo cyfansawdd. Tegid.

(b) Though *yn* governs *ll* and *rh* in the *radical* (§ 650), yet when *yn* is omitted, *ll* and *rh* take the *middle* sound. (Efe oedd *lywydd*. Nid yw llyn ran fawr.)

656. a. *Exception*. The infinitive *bod*, and the inflections *mae* and *maent*, do not admit of the omission of *yn*.

Am ei fod *yn fychan*. S. Luke xix. 2. [Not am ei *fod fychan*.]

Y mae *yn rhydd* i mi. Y maent *yn arwyddion*.

657. b. *Exception*. When the subject is a noun, and the order of the sentence is *verb, subject, predicate*, '*yn*' should be retained, in order to prevent ambiguity.

Bydd Dafydd *yn frenin*. (Not 'Bydd Dafydd *frenin*.')

INFINITIVE MOOD.

658. The infinitive mood is of very extensive usage in the Welsh language. It may be translated into English sometimes by '*to*' with infinitive; sometimes by a verbal noun; and sometimes by a finite verb with or without a governing particle.

659. "It may be found in any position competent for a noun to occupy. Thus it may be the subject of discourse, or objective to the verb; it may be followed by an adjective, or governed by a preposition."* [With this usage of the infinitive compare the Greek.]

a.) Infinitive as *subject of a verb*.

Dylyn drygioni a dywys i angu, *the following of evil leads to death*. Gweddus oedd iddo ef *berffeithio*. Rhaid yw *cymmeryd* poen.

* Hughes on "Syntax."

Caled ydyw *peidio* caru,
Caled hefyd *gwneuthur* hyny. D. S. Evans.

β.) Infinitive as *possessive case*.

Lloriau *dyrnu*, *threshing-floors*. Amser hau, *sowing time*.

γ.) Infinitive as *object to a verb*.

Dymunaf *ddysgu*, *I wish to learn*.

Mi a geisïaf *ymroddi*, *I will endeavour to devote myself*.

Efe a ddichon *gynnorthwyo*. Heb. ii. 18.

δ.) Infinitive as *object of a preposition*.

Wedi *marw* ei dad. Acts vii. 4. [Cf. Gr. μετὰ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦ.]

Wrth *ddarostwng*. Heb. ii. 8. [Gr. ἐν τῷ ὑποτάξαι.]

Fy mryd ar *geisio*. Trwy *rodio* ger dy fron.

Heb *ddal* ar chwedlau. O'u *cadw* y mae gwobr lawer.

ε.) Infinitive *with adjective*.

Canu da, *good singing*. *Dysgwyl* ofnadwy, *fearful expectation*.

660. A noun or pronoun under government of preposition often intervenes between the finite verb and the infinitive.

Erfyniais ar *Arthur* fy nghymmhorth.

Parodd *i mi* ddyfod ato.

(a) Here the infin. may be considered as both the object of the finite verb, and as the verb of the noun or pronoun under government.

661. The Infin. is often preceded by the preposition “*i*,” *to*.

Daethym yma *i weled* Arthur. Dysgodd fi *i ddarllen*.

Ymroddodd *i feddwi*.

(a) After some transitive verbs it is optional whether the prep. “*i*” comes between the finite verb and the noun (or pron.) or between the noun (or pron.) and the infinitive: thus we may say,

Dysgodd *fi i ddarllen*, or Dysgodd *i mi ddarllen*.

Cynghoraf *chwi i ddyfod*, or Cynghoraf *i chwi ddyfod*.

662. Observation on “*i*” before the Infinitive. The remark of some Grammarians, that “*i* is the sign of the Infin. mood, like ‘*to*’ in English,” has a tendency to mislead the reader, as the former does not correspond to the latter except in certain cases.

663. *I* is *not* used before the Infinitive in the following circumstances.

a.) When the Infinitive is the nominative to a verb, or an apposition (or predicative) nominative.

Dylun drygioni a dwys i aneu, = to follow evil will lead to death.
Cael ei wasanaethu ef sydd yn anrhydedd.
 Bwriad y llyfr yw *rhoddi* haues am freninoedd.
 Eu harfer lwy ydyw *ffrostio* yn ddigywilydd.

b.) When the Infinitive is the object to a verb.

Gregorius a benderfynodd fyned, *Gregorius determined to go.*
 Haeddodd ei *gospî*. Haeddodd *gael* ei *gospî*.
 Gall Dafydd *ddyfod*. Medraf *ysgrifenu*.

c.) When the preposition is put before the accusative of the person.

Perodd i Arthur *dewi* = *he ordered to Arthur be silent; he ordered Arthur to be silent.*

Gorchymmynais i *ti aros*. Gofynodd i *mi ddyfod*.

Caniataodd i'r *dyn fyned*. Gwna i *ni gredu hyn*.

Nyni yn ufudd a atolygwn i *ti roddi* dy *râs*. Com. Pr.

Ni ddygwyddodd i'm *llygaid ganfod* mo honoch. Gor. Owen.

664. The principal use of "i" before the Infinitive is to denote object, motive or purpose = *in order that*. It occurs in the following circumstances.

a.) When the Infinitive depends on a substantive or an adjective.

Cais i *dwyllo*, *an attempt to deceive*. Gallu i *ddyfod*, *power to come*.

Tuedd i *roi*, *an inclination to give*. Dyfodiad i *farnu*, *a coming to judge*.

Parod i *ateb*, *ready to answer*. Abl i *wneuthur*, *able to do*.

Addas i *esgyn*, *fit to ascend*. Teilwng i *fyned*, *worthy to go*.

Y fath gyfleusdra i *fyned* i Fon. Gor. Owen.

Mae genyf ryw awydd diwala i *ddysgu*. Gor. Owen.

b.) When the preceding verb is followed by a noun or pronoun in the accusative; and after passive and intransitive verbs, denoting object or purpose.

Cynghoraf chwi i *ddyfod*, *I advise you to come*.

Heriaf ef i *ddadlu* â mi. Galluogodd fi i *fyned*.

Annogodd y dynion i *geisio* maddeuant.

Dysgwyd ef i *ddarllen*, *he was taught to read*.

Mi a droais i *edrych*, *I turned to see = that I might see*.

Daethym yma i *adrodd* hanesyn.

Llwyddais i *weled* fy nghyfaill.

Cyttunodd â mi i *fyned* yno. Gor. Owen.

c.) After the tenses of *Bod*, to be, when *possibility, duty, futurity, &c.*, is implied.

Mae'r gair *i'w weled* yn y llyfr, *the word is to be (= may be) seen in the book*.

Yr oedd y dyn i *gychwyn* ddoe.

Yr oedd Efe i *ddyfod* y ffordd hono. S. Luke xix. 4. [Greek ἡμελλε διερχεσθαι.]

665. The following clauses (which will be explained more minutely hereafter) may have the *Infin.* as their principal verb.

Trans. Gwelais fod Arthur yno.

Time. Aethym ymaith wedi gweled o honof Arthur.

Cause. O herwydd i Arthur ddyfod.

Motive. Daethym yma i weled Arthur.

Concess. Er i Arthur ddyfod yma.

666. "When two or more verbs are coupled together, as dependent on the same conjunction, the first verb only will, in Welsh, be put in the subjunctive mood, and the *second* and following verbs will be used in their *radical* forms [*i. e., the Infin.*] If the subject of the second and other verbs be different from that of the first, it will, if a noun, be connected with its verb by the preposition *o*, or, if a pronoun, by a proper pronominal inflection of *o honof*."*

667. If the subject of the verb be not changed, the preposition with a noun or pron. may or may not be employed: if the subject be changed, it should for the sake of perspicuity be inserted.

a.) Subject not changed.

Fel y derbynier ef i arch Eglwys Crist, a gallu o hono fordwyo. Com. Prayer.

Pan y'th ddygo yr Arglwydd dy Dduw . . . a gyru o hono. Deut. vii. 1.

Tra yr elwyf a gweddio acw. S. Matt. xxvi. 36.

Pan ddychwelo'r annuwiol, a gwneuthur barn. Ezck. xviii. 27.

b.) Subject changed.

Pan ddelych gyda ni, a dyfod o'r daioni hwnw. Num. x. 32.

Od aeth neb o honoch ar gyfeiliorn, a throï o rywun ef. S. James v. 19.

Os gwyrodd fy ngherddediad, a myned o'm calon ar ol fy llygaid. Job xxxi. 7.

Pan ddelo tralloed i gyfarfod â ni, a pheri o gystudd i ni deimlo. Nicander.

668. **Government.** The Infinitive, if *immediately* followed by its object, governs it in the *radical* sound; but if an *inter-venient word* or *phrase* separates the object from the infinitive, the object will be put in the *middle* sound.

* Hughes on "Syntax."

Gwneuthur cyfiawnder. Casâu drygioni.

Gwneuthur o gydwylbod gyfiawnder. Casâu mewn gwirionedd ddrygioni.

* * * For further explanation, see §§ 592—594.

The Infinitive passive: see §§ 608—612.

PARTICIPLES.

669. Participles have the same influence over their object as the infinitive verb has; that is, they govern the *radical* sound.

670. The *present* participle is formed by setting before the infinitive verb *yn*, *gan* (*cân*), or *dan* (*tân*); the *past* by *gvedi* (*cvedi*), *wedi*, *ar ol*, or *yn ol*; and the *future* by *ar* or *ar fedr*.

The difference between yn, gan, and dan.

671. α.) *Yn* with infinitive forms the participle employed in periphrastic verbs. In this circumstance *gan* and *dan* can never be used.

Y mae efe yn dysgu. Dafydd sydd yn myned.

(α) If the participle precedes the verb, *yn* is most usually omitted. *Dysgu y mae efe.*

β.) *Yn* with infinitive may stand in apposition to a noun or pron. in any case.

Nom.	{	<i>Efe a fu yno yn ei dentio gan Satan.</i> S. Mark i. 13.
		<i>Ni fedra Cymro yn meddu deall cyffredin, byth gam-osod yr aeen. Tegid.</i>
Gen.	{	<i>Llef un yn llefain yn y diffaethwch.</i> S. Mark i. 3.
Accus.		<i>Mi a glywais lef yn dywedyd.</i> Job iv. 16.
	{	<i>Mewn pethau yn perthyn i Dduw.</i> Heb. ii. 17.

γ.) *Yn* with infinitive is used in the *case absolute*.

A Duw yn cyd-dystiolaethu. Heb. ii. 4.

A hwy yn gweled, nid ydynt yn gweled.

672. α) *Gan* (or *can*). “When the participle explains the act implied in another verb, *gan* is used.”*

Efe, gan ateb a ddywedodd.

Duw a orchymmynodd, gan ddywedyd.

β.) When intensity or certainty is to be expressed in past or future time, this is done by *gan* with infin., accompanied by the same verb in a finite mood.

* Hughes on Syntax.

Gan ddyfod y daw, nid oeda. Hab. ii. 3.

Gan fendithio y'th fendithiaf. Gen. xxii. 17.

O gan bwyso na phwysid fy ngofid. Job vi. 2.

Gan ddryllio yr ymddrylliodd y ddaiar, *gan rwygo* yr ymrwygodd y ddaiar, *gan symmud* yr ymsymmudodd y ddaiar. Is. xxiv. 19.

γ.) *Gan* with infin. is for the most part set in apposition to a noun or pron. in the *nominative* case.

Thus in the sentence, “Yna y dyry y mab fodrwy i'r ferch, *gan ei dodi* ar y llyfr,” the participle *gan ei dodi* refers to *mab*, being the nominative, not to the word *ferch*, which is in the accusative.

(a) The form *cân* occurs after *a*, and, as, and after *na*, nor, than : in other circumstances the form *gân* is preferred.

673. *Dan* (or *tan*) with infin. implies that an act is *continuous*, extending over the space of time occupied by the finite verb.

Dyna hi yn myned *tan ganu*. *Tan ymdyru* ataf.

Bwyty *dan chwynnu*. Aeth ymaith *dan felldithio*.

(a) *Tân* occurs after *a*, and, as, and after *na*, nor, than : in other circumstances it is immaterial whether this, or the lighter form *dân*, be used.

674. The participle “*having*” will be expressed in Welsh by *â* or *ag* (or *a*, *ac*) with an inflection of *genyf* (or *cenyf*) = *with me*, or of *i mi* = *for me*.

Os yw neb yn ddiargyhoedd, *a chanddo blant ffyddlawn*. Titus i. 6.

Ag aur ganddynt. Job iii. 15. Dinas *ac iddi sylfeini*. Heb. xi. 10.

Pa fodd yr oedd yn treulio ei amser, *ac yntau heb lyfrau ganddo*. Nicander.

675. If an adverb intervene between the particle and the infinitive, the adverb will have its sound regulated by the particle, while the infinitive will be put in the *middle* sound.

Yn *peraid* ganu. Gan *beraid* ganu. Dan *beraid* ganu.

Wedi *peraid* ganu. Ar *beraid* ganu.

ADVERBS.

676. **Position.** Some adverbs have one and only one place assigned to them in all sentences. *Adverbs of negation* immediately precede the negated words; as, *Ni ddaeth yma*; *Nid yma y daeth*; *Nid efe a ddaeth*. *Adverbs of interrogation* begin the sentence; as, *A ddaeth eich brawd?* *Sut y mae eich brawd?* *Adverbs of comparison* (except *iawn* and *digon*)

immediately precede the adjectives and adverbs modified by them; as, *Tra doeth yw* Arthur. The *auxiliary affirmative adverbs* immediately precede finite verbs: *Efe a ddaeth; yn awr y daeth.*

677. But adverbs of *quality, of number, order, place, time, quantity, and of doubting*, will, in general, have their position determined by emphasis. 'They may either precede or follow the verb, the subject, and the object, or come between them. The words

"*Dos nesnes i'r cynnhesrwydd, i'r adail glêd rhed yn rhwydd*"

may also be expressed thus,

Nesnes dos i'r cynnhesrwydd, i'r adail glêd yn rhwydd rhed.

Nesnes i'r cynnhesrwydd dos, rhed yn rhwydd i'r adail glêd.

*I'r cynnhesrwydd nesnes dos, rhed i'r adail glêd yn rhwydd'.**

The following classes of adverbs require a more detailed explanation.

Adverbs of negation.

678. The negative adverbs *ni, nid, nis, na, nad, nas, nac*, immediately precede the words to which they belong. They all negative *finite* verbs, except *nid* and *nad*, which negative other words also. (See § 683.)

679. The following are used before *finite* verbs, having *consonant* initials: *ni, nis, na, nas*.

(a) *Ni* and *na* are, however, often found before words that begin radically with vowels; as,

Pa ham na ysgrifenu, why do you not write?

O na argreffid hwynt mewn llyfr! Job xix. 23.

680. *Ni* and *na* govern the *first* class of mutable consonants (*c, p, t*) in the *aspirate*; the *second* (*g, b, d*) and *third* (*ll, m, rh*) in the *middle*. *Nis* and *nas* govern the *radical* of all classes.

(1st cl.) *Ni char, ni phaid, ac ni thaw efe.*

(2nd cl.) *Ni ofala (rad. gofala), ni feiddia, ac ni ddaw.*

(3rd cl.) *Ni leinw, ni feithrin, ac ni reola.*

Nis car, nis gofala, ac nis lleinw.

(a) The inflections of the verb *bod* are, after *ni* and *na*, put sometimes in the *middle*, sometimes in the *radical*.

* Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 122.

Ni fydd efe yno. Dywedodd na fu ei frawd yno.

Efe a weddiodd na byddai wlaw, ac ni bu gwlaw. S. James v. 17.

Ac ni fydd flin genym o'n rhan ninnau. Theo. Evans.

(b) The above example "*ni ofala*," requires explanation, *ni* being here used before a vowel. It was before remarked that the *omission* of the letter *g* is the sign of its *middle* sound, and as the next letter often happens to be a vowel, (as in the present example), *ni* and *na* which govern the *middle* sound, will accordingly be employed before a vowel. Some writers, however, considering this as a deviation from, rather than, as it really is, a strict adherence to rule, often employ *nid* and *nad* in such cases. (*Nid all efe ddyfod.*)

681. *Nid* and *nad* are placed before *finite* verbs with *vowel* initials; as,

Nid aeth efe, he did not go.

Dywed nad aeth efe, he says that he did not go.

682. *Na* and *nac* are used (a) before imperative verbs, (= *μη, ne*), (b) in negative answers, *na* preceding a *consonant*, and *nac* a *vowel* initial. [*Na* has the same government as *ni* and *na* in § 680.]

(a) *Na ladd, kill not. Nac ofna, fear not.*

(b) A ydyw Arthur yna? *Nac ydyw.*

683. The preceding rules regard *finite* verbs; but if the *infinitive* verb, or *any other part of speech*, be the negatived term, *nid* and *nad* solely can be employed, which in this case may be followed by *consonants* as well as *vowels*, and will always require the *radical* sound after them.

Nid canu yr oedd.

Nid arwain y fyddin yr oedd.

Nid bardd yw.

Nid pwyllog yw.

Dywed nad yno y mae.

684. *Ni, nid, nis* (= *οὐ, non, not*), head *main clauses*, and are followed by the *Indicative* mood.

Ni ddaeth fy nghyfaill. Nid aeth fy nghyfaill. Nis daeth fy nghyfaill.

685. *Ni, nid*, and *nis* are also the negatives in simple relative clauses, when the relative heading is expressed; and in explanatory cause clauses.

Yn yr hwn nid oes dwyll, in whom there is no guile.

Canys ni welais erioed mo hono, for I have never seen him.

686. The transitives *mai* and *taw* (that) are followed by *nid*; and the suppositives *os, pe, ꝑc.* (if), when separated

from the negatives by the nominative &c., are followed by *ni*, *nid*, *nis*.

Sylwer mai *nid* hawdd bod yn gywir. Os chwi *ni* ddeuwch.

687. *Na*, *nad*, *nas*, (= $\mu\eta$, *that not; not*) head *subjoined clauses*, and are followed by the *Subjunctive* mood in some, and by the *Indicative* in other clauses.

Transitive clause.	Gwn <i>na</i> ddaw.
Cause clause.	O herwydd <i>nad</i> oes ganddo lyfrau.
Concessive clause.	Er <i>nas</i> clywais air oddi wrtho.
Time clause.	Pryd <i>nad</i> oedd plentyn iddo.
Motive clause.	Fel <i>na</i> phwyswn arnoch.
Effect clause.	Ffyddlawn oedd fel <i>na</i> chaed ynddo fai.
Supposition clause.	Os <i>nad</i> yw efe yn dyfod.
Indefinite relative, and simple rel. when the rel. heading is omit- ted.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Y neb } na \text{ ddelo.} \\ \text{Hwn yw'r dyn } na \text{ wadodd.} \end{array} \right.$
Interr. adverbs.	
Wish clause.	Pa ham <i>nad</i> aethoch? O <i>nad</i> ysgrifenid fy ngeiriau!

688. Double negatives do not destroy one another, as they do in English. [In this, the Welsh resembles the Greek.]

Nid oes *na* chaeth *na* rhydd. *Ni* chaf *na* gloes *na* drygfyd.

Heb *na* rhuthro i mewn, *na* myned allan. Ps. cxliv. 14.

Yn yr hwn *ni* ddodasid *neb* erioed. S. Luke xxiii. 53. [Gr. Οὐ οὐκ ἦν οὐδέποτε οὐδέποτε.]

689. "The adverbs *dim* and *mo* are used as a species of auxiliaries to other negatives; and sometimes both may occur together in the same sentences." *

Ni ddaw Dafydd *ddim* yma, *David will not come here.*

Yr hwn *nid* adnabuasai *mo* Ioseph. Ex. i. 8.

Ni fedrant ganfod *mo* ddichellion dynion. Edw. Samuel.

Ni wiw i ti *ddim* *mo* son am hyny.

(a) *Dim* governs the radical sound; as "Ni fynwn i *ddim* cadw'r plentyn." *Mo* governs the *middle*. "*Mo* ddichellion."

(b) '*Dim* and *mo*, when auxiliary adverbs, will always follow the verb. Their force is nearly equivalent to the English *at all*.'

(c) *Mo* is a contraction of *dim o* = *nothing of*. When followed by the pron. *honof* or any of its inflections, *mo* and the pron. often coalesce into one word; thus,

Mo'nof = <i>mo honof</i> .	Mo'nom = <i>mo honom</i> .
Mo'not = <i>mo honot</i> .	Mo'noch = <i>mo honoch</i> .
{ Mo'no = <i>mo hono</i> .	Mo'nynt = <i>mo honynt</i> .
{ Mo'ni = <i>mo honi</i> .	

Adverbs of comparison.

690. *Cyn* (càn, gàn), *digon*, *go*, *iawn*, *lled*, *llai*, *lleiaf*, *mwy*, *mwyaf*, *mor*, *po*, *rhy*, and *tra*, qualify adjectives and other adverbs; and all, except *digon* and *iawn*, precede the words qualified by them. *Iawn* always follows: *digon* generally precedes, but sometimes follows, and then assumes the *mid.* sound.

Cyn ddoethed. Doeth iawn. Digon doeth, doeth ddigon.
Mi a wn yn dda ddigon. D. Ionawr.

691. *Tra* governs the 1st class of mutable consonants in the *asp*; the 2nd and 3rd in the *rad*. *Digon*, *llai*, *lleiaf*, *mwy*, *mwyaf*, and *po*, govern the *rad*. The others govern the *mid*.

<i>Tra</i> chryf.	<i>Tra</i> gwyn.	<i>Tra</i> llawn.
Digon cryf.	Po mwyaf.	Llai galluog.
<i>Cyn</i> gryfed.	Go bur.	Lled deg.

(a) *Cyn*, *mor*, and *pur*, may be followed by the *mid.* or *rad.* of *ll* and *rh*.

<i>Cyn</i> loned or lloned.	<i>Cyn</i> rwydded or rhwydded.
<i>Mor</i> lon or llon.	<i>Mor</i> rwydd or rhwydd.
<i>Pur</i> lon or llon.	<i>Pur</i> rwydd or rhwydd.

692. When they qualify adverbs, compounded of *yn* with an adjective (e. g. *yn ddoeth*), they will be placed between *yn* and the adjective; as,

Llefarodd yn bur ddoeth. Bucheddodd yn dra rhinweddol.

(a) But *cyn* and *mor* dismiss the particle *yn*; as,

Llefarodd *cyn* ddoethed. Llefarodd *mor* ddoeth.

693. Adverbs of quality (which are formed by prefixing *yn* adverbial to a common adjective, see § 345), when they begin a sentence, generally throw off *yn*, and assume the *radical* sound. Thus, instead of saying '*yn gywir* yr atebaist,' we usually say, '*cynwir* yr atebaist.'

694. Adverbs of this character, if they *immediately* precede the words modified by them, require the *middle* sound after them; as,

Awyddus ddysgwyliais am eich gweled.

695. There is class of words, such as *hynod*, *neillduol*, *nodedig*, *rhagorol*, &c. (especially, exceedingly), which may stand either before the qualified word with or without *o*, or after it.

Hynod o gymmeradwy, }
 Hynod gymmeradwy, } *eminently acceptable.*
 Cymmeradwy hynod, }

Gweithiodd y dyn yn nodedig o dda, (yn nodedig dda, yn dda nodedig),
the man worked exceedingly well.

696. **Adverbs of doubting** (see 352) if they begin a sentence, are followed by a transitive clause (§ 758, &c.); but if they are placed in the middle of the sentence, they do not affect the construction.

Hwyrach fod Arthur yn dyfod, *perhaps [that] Arthur is coming.*
 Arthur, hwyrach, sydd yn dyfod, *Arthur, perhaps, is coming.*

697. **Adverbs of showing.** The copula "is" or "are" is included in the adverbs of showing, which are *dacw*, *dyma*, *dyna*, *llyma*, *llyna*, *nycha*, *vele*.

698. Like finite verbs, these adverbs govern the *middle* sounds of such words as depend on them.

Dyma geffyl hardd, *here is a handsome horse.*
 Dacw ddau offeiriad, *yonder are two clergymen.*

Dyma and *dyna* are frequently used for demonstrative pronouns. [See §§ 201, 551.]

Auxiliary affirmative adverbs.

699. The particles of affirmation, called by the old grammarian *Edeyrn* "rhagweision berfau" are *a*, *y*, *yr*, and formerly *yđ* and *ydd*. They immediately precede *finite* verbs in affirmative sentences.

700. **A** is a mere expletive, and has no equivalent in English.* It is placed immediately before the verb, when the subject or the object, either alone, or accompanied by other words, goes before the verb. [If the verb *precede*, the particle is not employed.]

Subject preceding. Duw *a* greodd y byd. Y doeth *a* wrendy.
 Efe *a* gyfrifir yn ddysgedig. Duw pob gras *a*'ch perffeithio chwi.
 Yr hwn o'th ddwyfol ddarbodaeth *a* osodaist. Com. Prayer.

Object preceding. Yr us *a* lysg efe. Yr hwn *a* darewaist ti.
 Ammheu *a* wnaethant.

* It is a most erroneous observation, made even by the learned Tegid, that *a*, as a verbal agent, corresponds to *will* and *did* in English. (Defence of Welsh Orthography, p. 17.) Dr. Davies very properly remarks, "A item est adverbium seu particula verbis preposita nihil significans."

Verb preceding. Creodd Duw y byd. Cyfrifir ef yn ddysgedig.

(a) When the poss. pronouns are placed before verbs (see § 598, &c.), and are preceded by *a*, they are written thus:

Sing. A'm = *a ym*.

A'th = *a yth*.

A'i = *a ei*.

Pl. A'n = *a ein*.

A'ch = *a eich*.

A'u = *a eu*.

701. The present Indic. of *bod*, and the imperfect tense *oeddyn*, &c., do not require the particle when the subject precedes.

Myfi wyf yn rhedeg, *I am running*.

Arthur oedd yno, *Arthur was there*.

Dyn sydd debyg i wagedd. Ps. cxliv. 4.

(a) But the particle *y* is sometimes found before *sydd*.

Bywyd y byd *y* sydd ar ddyfod. Com. Prayer.

Gan fy nghas *y* sydd o'm cwrpas innau. Edm. Prys.

702. If, in conjoined clauses, *a* occurs in the first, it will be repeated in the clauses that follow, unless the order of construction be changed.

Ni *a* awn i gyfryw ddinas, ac *a* aroswn, ac *a* farchnatawn, ac *a* ynnillwn. S. James iv. 13.

(a) If, however, the particle does not occur in the first clause, it is questionable whether it may be properly inserted in the second, unless the subject or object precede it. The sentence, "Gwrendy eu llefain ac *a'u* hachub hwynt," would, in the opinion of some good critics, be more correctly expressed thus: "Gwrendy eu llefain ac achub hwynt;" or "Gwrendy eu llefain ac *efe a'u* hachub hwynt."

703. When the auxiliary pronouns *fe*, *fo*, *e*, are placed before verbs, *a* may or may not be employed.

Fe a gospir y dyn; or *fe* gospir y dyn, *the man will be punished*.

Fe a'm tarawodd â chareg; or *fe'm* tarawodd â chareg.

704. In a sentence, where the verb is negatived, *a* is dispensed with; but if the subject or object be the negatived term, then *a* is employed.

Verb negatived. Yr hwn ni ddel. (*Aff.* Yr hwn *a* ddel.)

Subject negatived. Nid hwn *a* ddel, oud arall.

Object negatived. Nid yr us *a* lysg efe â thân.

705. *A* is put before vowel and consonant initials, and is followed by the *middle* sound; as,

Arthur *a* aeth ymaith. Arthur *a* ddaeth yma.

706. As *a* is a mere expletive, it is very often omitted; but the verb still takes the *middle* sound.

Nos daenodd dros ei lygaid. D. S. Evans.

Arthur fu yn filwr dewr.

(a) But when in a relative clause the relative heading is omitted, *a* is then almost invariably inserted.

Gwelais y dyn *a* laddwyd. Gwelais y dyn *a* laddasant.

707. *Y* and *yr* (formerly *yd* and *ydd*) are used when the preceding words are emphatic or antithetical. They are often equivalent to the English phrase "*it is*."

(a) The oldest forms of these particles seem to be *yd* and *ydd* (= Lat. *id*, Eng. *it*), which are probably old pronouns standing as nominative to a suppressed inflection of *bod*; such as *yw* or *ys*. If this conjecture be right, the meaning now assigned to them is etymologically correct. (*Ydd ys = id est = it is*.)

708. *Yr* is put before a *vowel*; *y* before a *consonant*, and governs the *radical* sound; *ydd* before a *vowel*; *yd* before a *vowel* or *consonant*, and governs the *middle* sound of the consonant.

Hwyr *yr* erys Duw cyn taro,

Llwyr *y* dial pan y delo.

Cyflym *ydd a* rym *yr* oes. Gor. Owen.

Basaf dwfr man *yd* lefair. Adage.

709. It has been remarked that *a* is used when the subject or the object of the verb precedes it (§ 700): *y* and *yr*, on the contrary, should be employed *when the subject and object follow the verb*, but some other part of the sentence precedes it; as,

710. a.) *A preposition with its case.*

Yn y dechreuad y creodd Duw y nefoedd, in the beginning God created the heavens.

Arno yntau y blodeua ei goron. I gredu yr hyn y gorfodir fi.

(a) The participial signs *yn*, *gan*, and *dan*, are regarded here as prepositions: hence if they with their case precede the verb, *y* or *yr* will be employed.

Yn darllen y bum.

Dan ganu yr aeth.

Yn is most generally omitted; yet *y* is still used. *Darllen y bum.*

(b) '*Yn apposition*' also is regarded as a preposition: hence if it, expressed or understood, precede the verb, *y* or *yr* will be employed.

Yn bla y cawsom y gwr hwn. Dysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur.

But if *yn* be omitted before certain tenses of *bod*, *a* will be used. See below.

711. In relative and interrogative clauses the prep. is frequently placed after the verb, the governed word occupying the first place; but the particle will still precede the verb, independently of the position assigned to the preposition.

Y wlad yr hon y'm ganed ynddi. Yr hwn y mae y mab ganddo. Beth y gorfodir fi i'w gredu? Pa beth y daethoch i ymoralw am dano?

(a) The relative heading is often omitted, and sometimes the prep. also.

Y wlad [yr hon] y daethost allan o honi.

Yn y dydd [yn yr hwn] y gwnaeth yr Arglwydd y ddaiar.

Ym mhob cyflwr [yr hwn] y byddom [ynddo.]

(b) The prep. is usually omitted before words signifying duration or part of time, space, &c.

Llawer gwaith y'm cystuddiwyd. Wythnos yr arosais.

712. β) *An adverb or an adverbial phrase.*

Yma y daeth. Yno yr aeth. Toc y darfyddodd.

Echdoe y gwelais ef. Ebrwydd yr aeth ymaith.

(a) When the adverb is not emphatic, the particle may in most cases be left out.

Emphatic. Yno y bum innau. Simple. Yno bum innau.

713. γ.) *A conjunction; such as,*

Fel, mal, fal, megys, modd; nag; pryd, pryd bynag, nes, hyd, hyd nes; ag and its compounds cyhyd ag, cyn gynted ag, &c. [§§ 806, 810, 814.]

Fel y bernid hwy. Modd y delom o'r diwedd.

Bum yn hapusach nag y byddaf. Pryd yr atebodd.

Hyd nes y daeth. Cyhyd ag yr crys.

(a) *Pan* and *tra* may or may not be followed by *y*. It is occasionally found after *os* and *pe*.

Pan y'm cerydder. Pan ddaeth fy mrawd.

(b) When *y* is put after conjunctions, its antithetical force (= *it is*) is scarcely, if at all, discernible.

714. δ.) *A word in the possessive case.* *Y* is used in a relative clause where the possessive precedes, and the nominative follows the verb. [See § 875.]

Y rhai y llafari eu geneu wagedd. Y rhai yr oedd Daniel yn benaf o honynt.

715. ε.) When a subjoined clause precedes the main one, the particle is sometimes found before the verb of the latter.

Ac wedi iddynt ei fflangellu, y lladdant ef. S. Luke xviii. 33.

Pan ddaeth cyflawnder yr amser, y danfonodd Duw ei Fab. Gal. iv. 4.

716. But if the subject precede the verb, the particle *a* should be employed, even though other words precede.

Yn hyn Ioan a ragorodd, in this John excelled.

717. In conjoined sentences, if *y* occurs in the first, it will be repeated in the following clauses, unless the order be changed.

Fel y bernid hwy ac y byddent fyw. 1 S. Petr iv. 6.

718. In an Imperative clause, or in a negative where the verb is negated, *y* is never employed, notwithstanding other words precede.

Imper. Yna gwybyddwch, then know.

Neg. Yma ni ddaw eich brawd. (Pos. Yna y daw eich brawd.)

719. When the poss. pronouns are placed before verbs, and are preceded by *y*, they are thus written:

Sing. Y'm = *y ym*.

Y'th = *y yth*.

Y'i = *y ei*.

Pl. Y'n = *y ein*.

Y'ch = *y eich*.

Y'u = *y eu*.

720. *Inflections of bod.* If '*yn apposition*' be omitted before a predicative noun or adjective, the tenses of *bod* (except pres. and imperf. *oeddyn*, &c.) will be preceded by *a*; as,

Bendigedig a fyddo'r Arglwydd. Brenin a fum.

721. The pres., and the imperf. *oeddyn*, &c., will admit of no particle; as,

Gweddus yw mawl. Brenin oedd y gwr.

722. But if the pres. or the imperf. *oeddyn*, &c., begin the sentence, it will be preceded by *y* or *yr*.

Yr wyf yn myned. Yr oeddwn yn myned.

(a) Before *mae*, *is*, and *maent*, are, the particle is very often dispensed with. *Mae* Arthur yn filwr dewr. *Maent* hwy yn siarad yn gall.

With these exceptions, and the exception mentioned in § 701, the tenses of *bod* will be preceded by *a* and *y*, according to the rules laid down respecting other verbs.

Adverbs of interrogation. (See *Interrogative clause*, § 816, &c.)

CONJUNCTIONS.

723. Most conjunctions stand at the beginning of the sentences to which they belong; but some, as in other languages, may occupy any other place.

724. "Some of the conjunctions have merely a literal difference, to afford means of avoiding every hiatus and discordant sound."* These are *a*, *ac* = and; *a*, *ag* = as; *na*, *nac* = nor; *na*, *nag* (and formerly *no*, *nog*) = than; and also the conditional conjunctions, *o*, *od*; *pe*, *ped* = if; *oni*, *onid* = if not.

725. *A*, and, as; *na*, nor, than; and *no*, than, precede words with *consonant* initials; and govern the *first* class in the *aspirate*; the *second* and *third* in the *radical*.

(1st) Bara *a* chaws; cyn goched *a* than; nid oes genyf nac arian *na* phres.

(2nd and 3rd) Bara *a* gwin; gwell *na* bywyd.

Gwell *no* gwên y wawr i mi. D. S. Evans.

726. *Ac*, and; *ag*, as; *nac*, nor; *nag* and *nog*, than, precede words with *vowel* initials.

Aur *ac* arian. Y mae mor enwog *ag* unrhyw wlad.

(a) But before certain words,—chiefly adverbs, prepositions, and other conjunctions beginning with *f*, *h*, *m*, or *n*, the forms *ac*, *nac*, &c., are usually preferred to *a*, *na*, &c.

Ac fe ddaw. *Ac* fel hyn. *Ac* megys. *Ac* nid. *Ac* hefyd.

(b) The Infin. *bod*, when implying 'that . . . is,' and *darfod* = 'that . . . has,' have the twofold construction of *a bod* and *ac fod*; *a darfod* and *ac ddarfod*.

727. The disjunctive *neu*, or, governs the *middle* sound; *ynte*, or, *ai*, or, and its compounds *naill ai*, *un ai*, &c., govern the *radical*.

Dyn *neu* ddynes. *Naill ai* dyn *ynte* dynes.

(a) *Neu* governs a finite verb in the *radical* sound. "Dos allan *neu* tyred i mewn."

728. The adversatives *ond*, *onid*, *eithr*, *oddi eithr*, *oddi gerth*, *namyn*, and *heb law*, when followed by mutable consonants, govern the *radical* sound.


Nid oes genyf *ond* ceisio. Nid yw efe *ond* dyn.

(a) But when they are followed by an Infin. equivalent to *that* with a *finite verb*, (e. g. Gwn ei *fod* yno, *I know that he is there*), the initial of the verb may or may not be softened. This is especially the case with *bod*, to be, and *darfod*, to have done.

Nis gwn ddim *ond fod* Arthur yno: or Nis gwn ddim *ond bod* Arthur yno.

* Dr. Pughe's Grammar.

Nis gwn ddim ond *ddarfod* iddo ddweyd; or Nis gwn ddim ond *darfod* iddo ddwneyd.

 The conjunctions which introduce *supposition, concession, cause, motive, effect, transitive* and *time clauses*, will be treated of hereafter.

729. Some conjunctions and adverbs have other conjunctions corresponding to them in the same or in the following sentence; such as

- a) Fel or megys felly = *as so.*
- b) Felly fel = *so that.*
- c) Er eto or er hyny = *although yet.*
- d) Pe eto or er hyny = *if yet.*
- e) Mor or cyn a or ag = *as as.*
- f) Mwy na or nag = *more than.*
- g) Mor or cyn fel or nes = *so that.*
- h) Na or nac na or nac = *neither nor.*
- i) Naill ai ai, neu, ynte, ai ynte, or neu ynte = *either or.*
- j) A or ai ai, neu, &c. = *whether or.*
- k) Pa un a or ai ai, neu, &c. = *whether or.*
- l) Pa un bynag a or ai ai, neu, &c. = *whether or.*

Note. *A* is placed before *finite* verbs; *ai* under all other circumstances.

- a) Fel y gwnawn, felly y cawn (*as .. so.*)
- b) Felly ei chyflawni hi, fel y bo iddi (*so .. that.*)
- c) Er ein bod ni yn rhwym, er hyny dattoder ni (*though .. yet.*)
- d) Pe lladdai efe fi, eto mi a obeithiaf ynddo (*if .. yet.*)
- e) Mor anwyl a chanwyll ei lygad (*as .. as.*)
- f) Mwy hyfryd ei glywed ar fynydd Tabor nag ar fynydd Sinai (*more .. than.*)
- g) Mor amlwg yw'r bai nes y mae'n anafu (*so .. that.*)
- h) Nac aur nac arian (*neither .. nor.*)
- i) Naill ai mab ai merch (*either .. or.*)
- j) Ai da ai drwg ydyw (*whether .. or.*)
- k) Pa un a ddaw ai peidio (*whether .. or.*)
- l) Pa un bynag ai cymmeradwy neu wrthodedig (*whether .. or.*)

PREPOSITIONS.

730. Prepositions are in Welsh, as in English, placed before the words to which they refer. *Mewn* tref. *Gerllaw*'r bryn.

731. Prepositions govern different sounds, some taking after them the *radical*, some the *middle*, some few the *aspirate*, and *yn* the *nasal*. [In §§ 364—373, the reader will find these arranged under different heads, according to the sounds which they respectively govern.]

(a) It may be expedient here to caution the reader against an erroneous observation made by several grammarians, that 'the *middle* sound comes after *all* prepositions, except *yn*, *in*, and *tua*, towards.'

732. *Mewn* and *yn*, in.

Mewn is placed before *indefinitive* words.

Mewn llyfr, *in a book.* *Mewn* ty, *in a house.*

Yn is placed before *definitive* words; i. e., the definite article, whether expressed or virtually implied in another word.

a) *The article expressed.*

Yn y llyfr, *in the book.* *Yn y* ty, *in the house.*

b) *Proper names.*

Yn Llundain, *in London.* *Yn* Nafydd, *in David.*
Ym Mon, *in Anglesea.*

c) *The personal, possessive, and demonstrative pronouns.*

*Yn*of fi, *in me.* *Yn* fy nhŷ, *in my house.* *Yn* hynny, *in that.*

d) *A noun governing another in the possessive case.*

Ym *mhen* y ffordd, *at the end of the road.*
Yn nhŷ fy nhad, *in my father's house.*

(a) Here '*mhen*' and '*nhad*' are virtually definitive, according to § 404: hence they are preceded by *yn*, not *mewn*. If, however, the preceding noun is not definitive, *mewn* will be employed.

Mewn heddwch meddwl, *in peace of mind.*
Mewn dinas wagedd, *in a city of vanity.*

e) The words *pob*, *panb*, *pwyl*, *pa*, *holl*, and some others.

Ym mhob man, *in every place.* *Ym* mhawb, *in all.* *Ym* mhwy, *in whom?*
Ym mha ardal bydd fy lletty.

(a) *Yn* is also placed before some indefinite words to form compound prepositions.

Ym mlaen, *before.* *Yng* ngwydd, *before.* *Yng* nghyda, *together with.*
Ym mhlith, *among.* *Yn* lle, *instead of.* *Yn* ymyl, *near.*

(b) In the words '*Ym* *mhell*' *yn* preposition is used for *yn* apposition; and, on the contrary, *yn* apposition is put for *yn* preposition in '*yn* *Gymraeg*.'

733. Some writers change '*yn* preposition' into *ym* before *m* and *mh*; and into *ying* before *ng* and *ngh*. Others deny the propriety of this change, and write *yn* under all circumstances.

Ym *mhen* yr heol. *Yn* *mhen* yr heol.
Yng *Nghuersalem.* *Yn* *Nghaersalem.*

(a) Many join the preposition to the following word; as *y'mlaen*, *y'ngwydd*; but this creates an unnecessary exception to the rules of accentuation. [See § 98. (b.)]

734. The different functions of *Yn*. It may be convenient here to repeat the different functions of *yn*, with illustrations to show its force and government in each place.

α. '*Yn participial*' is placed before the Infin. mood to form a participle, and is followed by the *radical* sound.

Yn dysgu, learning. *Yn cerdded*, walking. *Yn parhau*, continuing.

β. '*Yn apposition*' is placed before a noun or adjective, to set it in apposition with a preceding word, and is followed by the *middle* sound.

Y mae Arthur yn frenin, *Arthur is king*.

Y mae Arthur yn ddewr, *Arthur is brave*.

γ. '*Yn adverbial*' is placed before an adjective to convert it into an adverb, and is followed by the *middle* sound.

Ysgrifena yn gampus, *he writes excellently*.

Darlenna yn wych, *he reads very well*.

δ. '*Yn preposition*' is placed before a substantive, adjective, or pronoun, and is followed by the *nasal* sound.

Yn nhy fy nhad, *in my father's house*.

Ym mhob ty, *in every house*.

Yng ngharchar, *in prison*.

735. *Gan*, *a* or *ag*, *gyda* or *gydag*. *Gàn* = *by*, denotes the *agent*; *â* or *âg* = *with*, denotes the *instrument*; *gyda* or *gydag* = *along with*, *together with*, implies *association*.

Tarawyd ef â chareg gân Arthur, *he was struck with a stone by Arthur*.

Tyred gyda ni, *come along with us*.

736. *At* and *i*. *At* = *to*, towards, denotes *proximity*: *i* = *to* within, into, to, denotes *entrance*.

Dos at dy frawd, *go to your brother*. *Dos i'th dy*, *go to your house*.

737. *Erbyn*, *yn erbyn*, *i . . erbyn*. *Erbyn* = against or by, refers to *time*; *yn erbyn* = against or contrary to, denotes *opposition*; *i . . erbyn* has the same meaning as *yn erbyn*, but is used only when the object is a *pronoun*.

Bydd yn barod erbyn dydd Iau, *be ready by Thursday*.

Ymladdodd yn fy erbyn. *Ymladdodd yn erbyn Arthur*.

Ymladdodd i'm herbyn.

738. *Cer*, *ger*, *by*; *cerfydd*, *gerfydd*, *by*; *cwedi*, *gwedi*, *after*; *cyda*, *gyda*, *with*; *can*, *gan*, *by*; and the pron. prep. *cenyf*, *genyf*, &c., *by me*. The strong form *cer*, *cerfydd*, *cwedi*, &c., occurs after *a* (and, as), and *na* (nor, than): in other circumstances the lighter form *ger*, *gerfydd*, &c., is generally preferred.

A cher llaw iddo y safodd. *Safodd ger llaw iddo.*

A chyda thi y safodd. *Safodd gyda thi.*

A chenyf fi yr oedd. *Genyf fi yr oedd.*

739. *Tan*, *dan*, *under*; *traws*, *draws*, *across*; *trwy*, *drwy*, *through*; *tros*, *dros*, *over*; and the pron. prep. *tanaf*, *danaf*, &c., *under me*; *trwof*, *drwof*, &c., *through me*; *trosof*, *drosof*, &c., *for me*. The strong form *tan*, *traws*, *trwy*, &c., is put after *a* and *na*: in other circumstances it is immaterial whether we employ this or the other lighter form, *dan*, *draws*, *drwy*, &c.

A than y pren yr oedd. *A thrwy y mur yr aeth.*

Dan or tan y pren yr oedd. *Aeth drwy or trwy y mur.*

A throsom ni y bu Crist farw.

Trosom or drosom ni y bu Crist farw.

(a) The adverbs *tanodd*, *danodd*, *under*; *trwodd*, *drwodd*, *through*; *trosodd*, *drosodd*, *over*; *trachefn*, *drachefn*, *again*, follow the same rule. *A thrwodd yr aeth.* *Aeth trwodd or drwodd.*

(b) The adverbs *draw*, *yonder*, *dacw*, *yonder is*, *dyma*, *here is*, *dyna*, *there is*, *gynt*, *formerly*, *beunydd*, *daily*, *byth*, *ever*, are sometimes (but seldom by good writers) made to follow the same rule. *A thyma'r ffordd y gwnaeth ef y cwrw.* I. MSS.

740. **Time and distance of place.** Before nouns of time and distance of place the prepositions are sometimes expressed, but most frequently omitted. Nouns signifying point of time are preceded by *ar*, *upon*; those which signify duration of time or distance of place, take *am*, *for*, or *tros*, *over*.

Yr oeddwn yno ddydd Llun, or ar ddydd Llun.

Cerddais filltir, or am filltir.

Gweithiais ddiwrnod, or am ddiwrnod.

741. **Compound prepositions.** By referring to § 370, &c., the reader will perceive that the compound prepositions are formed by putting in apposition two or more simple prepositions; or by the use of a substantive under government. Thus *oddî ar* is a compound, formed of the two simple prepositions

oddi and *ar*. *Ger llaw* is another compound, formed of the simple prep. *ger*, and the substantive *llaw*, under government of *ger*.

(a) Those compounds which borrow a substantive to form them, are of course only assumed as such; for (*e. g.*) *ger llaw* is strictly a phrase, signifying *near the hand*, and may be dealt with as such.

742. The difference between *the being upon* or *near*, and *the being in*, is carefully marked by means of compound prepositions. Thus the prep. '*from*,' will be expressed in Welsh by *o*, *oddi ar*, or *oddi wrth*, according as "*from*" may imply *out of*, *from upon*, or *from besides*.

Tynodd yr haiarn o'r tân = *from the fire*.

Cymmerodd y gyllell oddi ar y bwrdd = *from upon the table*.

Dychwelodd oddi wrth ei gyfaill = *from beside his friend*.

743. When '*compound prepositions ending with a substantive*' (see § 373) precede personal pronouns, a corresponding possessive will intervene between the component parts of the prepositions.

Ar ol, after.

1. *Ar fy ol i*, after me.

1. *Ar ein hol ni*, after us.

2. *Ar dy ol di*, after thee.

2. *Ar eich hol chwi*, after you.

3. *Ar ei ol ef*, after him.

3. *Ar eu hol hwy*, after them.

Ar ei hol hi, after her.

(a) Unless the phrase is emphatic, the pers. pron. may be left out, the possessive being thought sufficient to convey the meaning.

Ar fy ol; *ar dy ol*; *ar ei ol*.

744. The prep. *is law*, *ger llaw*, *unch law*, and *oddi amgylch*, usually take *i* after them.

Is law: *is law i mi*; *is law i ti*; *is law iddo ef*.

(a) *Heb law* is an exception, as it neither takes *i* nor the possessive. (*Ni ddaeth yma neb heb law chwi*.) In some instances, however, we find the pronouns inserted. *Arglwyddi ereill heb dy law di*. *Is. xxvi. 13*.

745. When the object of the prep. is a *substantive*, such compounds as take *i* after them when followed by pronouns, may or may not retain it when followed by substantives; but those which use the poss. when the object is a pron., will of course dismiss it before a substantive.

Is law i'r afon; or *Is law yr afon*, *below the river*.

Ar ol dyddiau lawer. *O flaen y brenin*.

746. The following are sometimes met with in a plural form: *am ben*, *ar ben*, at; *ar ol*, after; *ger bron*, before; *o flaen*, before; *uwch ben*, above.

Yn yr eigion maith o'n blaenau. G. Edwards.

747. **Pronominal prepositions** are a class of compound words, formed by suffixing a personal pron. to a preposition. [See §§ 374—381.] They will be rendered into English by a prep. and a pron. in the objective case.

Dos *ato*, go to him. Pwysa *arno*, press upon it.

(a) When the object of the prep. is a noun, the pronominal inflection will of course be dismissed.

Dos *at y dyn*, go to the man. Pwysa *ar y gareg*, press upon the stone.

748. When the pron. requires to be expressed with a degree of emphasis, it is repeated after the pronominal preposition.

Simple.		Emphatic.	
Ataf, to me.	Atom, to us.	Ataf <i>fi</i> .	Atom <i>ni</i> .
Atat, to thee.	Atoch, to you.	Atat <i>ti</i> .	Atoch <i>chwi</i> .
Ato, } to him.	Atynt, to them.	Ato <i>ef</i> or <i>fo</i> .	} Atynt <i>hwy</i> .
Ati, } to her.		Ati <i>hi</i> .	

749. **Am danaf, &c.**, about me; **oddi am danaf, &c.**, from about me, are used only when the object of the preposition is a personal pronoun: if the object is a noun, *am* and *oddi am* are employed.

Soniodd *am danoch*.

Tynodd y wisg *oddi am danoch*.

Soniodd *am ddyn*.

Tynodd y wisg *oddi am ddyn*.

750. **O honof, &c.**, of me. This form has three uses.

a.) To express the genitive of personal pronouns.

Mae pawb o honom yn barod, *all of us are ready*.

Efe yw'r goreu o honynt, *he is the best of them*.

Nid oes dim o hono, *there is none of it*.

If the genitive is a noun, "*honof*," &c., is dismissed.

Mae pawb o'r dynion yn barod, *all the men are ready*.

b.) It is used as the subject of an infinitive verb to express the past Indicative, or the Subjunctive, in affirmative clauses; and also to express past or future time when the infinitive is coupled to a finite verb.

Clywais ddywedyd o hono, *I heard that he said*. (§§ 763, 764.)

Gorchymmynodd ddyfod o honof, *he commanded that I should come*. (§§ 763, 764.)

Pan ddaeth, a myned o hono, *when he came, and went.* (§§ 666, 667.)
 Pan ddelo, a myned o hono, *when he will come, and will have gone.*
 (§§ 666, 667.)

If the subject of the infinitive is a noun, "*honof*," &c., is dismissed.

Clywais ddywedyd o'r gwr, *I heard that the man said.*

c.) Preceded by "*mo*," *honof*, &c. is a strong form of the accusative, and, with passive verbs, of the nominative personal pronoun in negative and interrogative clauses.

Ni chlywais [*pass. chlywir*] mo hono yn dweyd.

A glywsoch chwi [*pass. glywir*] mo hono yn dweyd?

If the accusative is a noun, *honof* &c. is dismissed.

Ni chlywais [*chlywir*] mo'r dyn yn dweyd.

A glywsoch chwi [*pass. glywir*] mo'r dyn yn dweyd?

INTERJECTIONS.

751. When an interjection is placed before a noun, adjective, or pronoun, it is followed by the *middle* sound.

O dad! O drugarog dad! Och fi!

752. When the interjection is omitted, the noun or adj. under its government is most usually put in the *middle* sound; but sometimes retains its *radical* initial.

Mid. { *Garedig* gyfaill, *dear friend.*
 { *Barchedig* Syr. *Drugarog* Dad.

Rad. Duw dad, o'r nef, trugarha wrthym.

753. When an interjection intervenes between a verb and its subject or object, it is followed by the *middle* sound.

Nid yw efe yn gallu, *ow!* dalu dim, *he is not able, alas! to pay anything.*

754. When it stands before a *finite* verb, the verb retains its *radical* sound; as,

O! tired yma, *O! come here.* Och! paid â'm lladd, *O! do not kill me.*

CLAUSES.

755. Clauses are divided into *main* (or *principal*) and *subjoined*.

756. 'The *main clause* is that which contains the leading proposition; and it must express a complete idea, even when separated from the rest of the sentence.'

He will not be pardoned, unless he repent.

He would not be pardoned, unless he repented.

Pardon him. May he be pardoned.

757. 'A *subjoined clause* is a simple sentence, or part of a sentence, modifying the main clause.'

Arthur says *that he has learnt his lesson*.

Arthur shall have a penny, *because he has learnt his lesson*.

Arthur shall have a penny, *if he will learn his lesson*.

TRANSITIVE CLAUSE.

758. The *Transitive clause* comes after words significative of *affirmation, sense, and mental operations*; as *saying, seeing, hearing, feeling, knowing, thinking, &c.* In English it is introduced by the conjunction *that*, and the late *Kerchever Arnold* defines it as "A sentence that stands in apposition to a nominative or accusative, expressed or understood, in the principal sentence."

It is strange *that you think so*. Here the clause *that you think so* is in apposition to *it*; i. e. *this thing*.

I am glad *that you are come* = I am glad of *this*; namely, *that you are come*.*

759. In Welsh this clause is expressed (a) in *positive* sentences, by the *Infinitive* mood, or by the conj. *y, yr, mai* or *taw*, with *finite* moods: (b) in *negative* sentences, by *finite* moods. The particles of negation in Transitive clauses are *na*,

* *Arnold's English Grammar*, p. 111.

nad, and *nas*, except in connection with *mai* (or *taw*), which, if retained, is followed by *nid*.

760. **The Infinitive mood.** This construction is used in simple narration, or when the emphasis, if any, falls on the verb of the clause.

761. (A.) *The Infinitive mood followed by its subject.* This construction occurs when the verb is *bod*, either as main or auxiliary, and when it simply declares a thing; i. e., when it is equivalent to a verb in the Indicative mood. The tenses of the Indic. which will admit of this form in subordinate sentences are the following:—

*Indicative.**Infinitive.*

Pres.	Yr wyf yn dysgu.	Dywed fy mod i yn dysgu.
Imperf.	Yr oeddwn yn dysgu.	Dywedai fy mod i yn dysgu.
Perf. def.	Yr wyf wedi dysgu.	Dywed fy mod i wedi dysgu.
Plup.	Yr oeddwn wedi dysgu.	Dywedodd fy mod i wedi dysgu.

Conjugation of the preceding form of the Transitive clause.

Pres. and Imperf., *that I am learning, &c.; that I was learning, &c.*

Sing. 1.	Fy mod i yn dysgu.	Pl. 1.	Ein bod ni yn dysgu.
2.	Dy fod di yn dysgu.	2.	Eich bod chwi yn dysgu.
3.	Ei fod ef yn dysgu (m.)	3.	Eu bod hwy yn dysgu.
	Ei bod hi yn dysgu (f.)		Eu bod hwy yn dysgu.
	Fod dyn yn dysgu.		Fod dynion yn dysgu.

Perf. def. and Plup., *that I have learnt, &c.; that I had learnt, &c.*

Sing. 1.	Fy mod i wedi dysgu.	Pl. 1.	Ein bod ni wedi dysgu.
2.	Dy fod di wedi dysgu.	2.	Eich bod chwi wedi dysgu.
3.	Ei fod ef wedi dysgu (m.)	3.	Eu bod hwy wedi dysgu.
	Ei bod hi wedi dysgu (f.)		Eu bod hwy wedi dysgu.
	Fod dyn wedi dysgu.		Fod dynion wedi dysgu.

Additional Examples.

Ac os bwriwn at hyn *eu bod hwy yn ddigon cydnabyddus â'r pethau.*
Edw. Samuel.

Harddwch yr iaith yw *bod ei geiriau yn dangaws eu defnydd cyssefin.*
Dr. Pughe.

Ymddengys *bod yr ysgrythyrau wedi myned yn dra phrinion.* W.
Davies.

Wrth weled *fod ei holl feddwl ar y byd a ddaw.* Nicander.

(a) If the subject be a pronoun, it may be omitted; but it is always represented by a corresponding possessive immediately preceding the verb. (*Gwyr fy mod yn dyfod, he knows that I am coming.*)

(b) With this construction of the Infinitive for Indicative compare the Greek and Latin idioms.

Τῷ οὐ νημεσιζομ' Ἀχαιοὺς ἀσχαλάαν παρὰ νηυσὶ κορωνίσιν. *Homer.*

Dicit me scribere. Ferunt unam exspirasse.

762. If the sentence is **negative**, it will be expressed by a corresponding tense of the *Indicative* mood.

Pos. Gwyr **fod Arthur yn dyfod**, *he knows that Arthur is coming.*

Neg. Gwyr **nad yw Arthur yn dyfod**, *he knows that Arthur is not coming.*

Pos. Gwyddai **fod Arthur yn dyfod**, *he knew that Arthur was coming.*

Neg. Gwyddai **nad oedd Arthur yn dyfod**, *he knew that Arthur was not coming.*

Additional Examples.

Mae'n gyffelybol **nad oedd ganddynt y llyfrau hyny**. *Edw. Samuel.*
Ffrostio **nad oes dim bai ynddi**. *M. Kyffin.*

Fel y gwybyddont **nad ydynt hwy ond dynion**. *Ed. Prys.*

Lle y dangosais **nad oes ond un gwir Dduw**. *Edw. Samuel.*

763. (B.) *The Infinitive mood with its subject connected to it by the preposition 'o,' if the subject be a noun; by an inflection of 'o honof,' if it be a pronoun.* This construction is used to express (a) *the past Indicative*, corresponding to (e. g.) *I learnt, I had learnt*; or (b) *the Subjunctive*, corresponding to (e. g.) *I should learn*.

764. In a *negative* sentence, the former will be expressed by the *perfect* and *pluperfect Indicative*; the latter by the *Subjunctive*.

(a) { Pos. Yn gwybod **fyned o'r gwr; fyned o hono ef.**
Neg. Yn gwybod **nad aeth y gwr; nad aeth efe.**

(b) { Pos. Gorehymyn **gymmeryd o honof y llyfr.**
Neg. Gorehymyn **na chymmerwyf y llyfr.**
Pos. Gorehymynodd **gymmeryd o honof y llyfr.**
Neg. Gorehymynodd **na chymmerwn y llyfr.**

Additional Examples.

a. Gwn yn wir **anfon o'r Arglwydd ei angel**. *Acts xii. 11.*

Yn gwybod **dyngu o Dduw iddo**. *Acts ii. 30.*

Y mae yn dywedyd **siarad o honaw**. *Edw. Samuel.*

b. Hyn yw ewyllys yr hwn a'm hanfonodd i, **cael o bob un fywyd trawyddol**. *S. John vi. 40.*

Chwennych yr ydym ni **gael o bawb wybod ein hachos**. *M. Kyffin.*

(a) The sentence has the force of the *subjunctive* after words that imply *commanding, entreating, wishing, praying, &c.* Here, however, the Infinitive is very often preceded by the preposition *ar*, upon, or *am*, for,

to distinguish this from the other signification of the verb. Thus, 'dywedodd *fyned o hono*' = he said *that he went*; but 'dywedodd *ar fyned o hono*' = he said (or ordered) *that he should go*.

(b) The connectives *o* and *o honof* are sometimes omitted after a certain class of verbs; as,

Hon yw y ddamnedigaeth, *ddyfod goleuni i'r byd* (for *ddyfod o oleuni i'r byd*.)

Na thybiwch *fy nyfod i dori y gyfraith* (for *ddyfod o honof*.)

765. (Γ.) *The Infinitive mood preceded by its subject under the government of a preposition.* The prepositions here employed are *i*, *ar*, and *am*. If the preposition be *i*, the verb may have the force of (a) *the past Indicative*; or (b) *the Subjunctive*, according to the import of the verb of the main clause, as above. In a **negative** sentence, the former will be expressed by *perfect* and *pluperfect Indicative*; the latter by the *Subjunctive*, or by *peidio â* (*to cease from, not to do*) followed by the other Infinitive verb.

Pos. Dywed **i mi fyned**, he says that I went:

Neg. Dywed **nad aethym**, he says that I did not go.

Pos. Gorchymmynodd **i mi fyned**, he commanded me to go.

Neg. Gorchymmynodd [**i mi**] **nad awn**; } he commanded me not
or **i mi beidio a myned**, } to go.

Additional Examples.

Y dynion a wyddent *iddo ffoi oddi ger bron yr Arghwydd*. Jonah i. 10.

Barn rhai yw, *i Wrtheyrn wahodd y Saeson*. Theo. Evans.

Gorchymmynaf *na wlawiont arni hi*. Is. v. 6.

Efe a weddiodd *na byddai wlaw*. S. James v. 17.

Y mae yn wir *i genedl y Cymry wrthsefyll y surdves yn hwy na'u cymmydogion*. W. Davies.

Traethodd *na welsai fo erioed ddyben daionus o un o'r oynghorau*. M. Kyffin.

(a) The past Indicative is often expressed by the auxiliary *darfod*, followed by the above construction. Dywed *ddarfod i mi fyned ymaith*. Cânt weled *ddarfod iddynt hwy eu hunain ymadael â'r apostolion*. M. Kyffin.

766. When the subject of the Infinitive is preceded by *ar*, with or without *i*; or by *am* with *i*, the verb has the force of the *Subjunctive*.

Deisyfodd *ar Arthur ddyfod*. Deisyfodd *ar i Arthur ddyfod*.

Dymunem *ar ein darllenwyr bwysaw yn iawndeg y rheol*. Tegid.

767. (Δ.) *Passive voice.* The passive form is made by the

use of *cael* (to have), accompanied by the constructions mentioned under A, B, Γ.

- (A.) **Fy mod i** (neg. **nad wyf fi**) **yn cael fy nysgu.**

That I am being taught.

Fod (neg. **nad yw**) **Arthur yn cael ei ddysgu.**

That Arthur is being taught.

Fy mod i wedi, or **wedi cael**, (neg. **nad wyf fi wedi**) **fy nysgu.**

That I have been taught.

Fod Arthur wedi, or **wedi cael**, (neg. **nad yw Ar. wedi**) **ei ddysgu.**

That Arthur has been taught.

- (B.) **Gael o honof** (neg. **na chefais**) **fy nysgu.**

That I was or have been taught.

Gael o (neg. **na chafodd**) **Arthur ei ddysgu.**

That Arthur was or has been taught.

- (Γ.) **I mi gael** (neg. **na chefais**) **fy nysgu.**

That I was or have been taught.

I Arthur gael (neg. **na chafodd A.**) **ei ddysgu.**

That Arthur was or has been taught.

Or with *darfod*. **Ddarfod i mi** (neg. **na ddarfu i mi**) **gael fy nysgu.**

(a) After words that imply *commanding*, &c., the following forms are common.

Dywedodd [ar] **fod i Arthur gael ei ddysgu.**

Dywedodd [ar] **fod Arthur i gael ei ddysgu.**

Additional Examples.

Gorchymmynodd *bod i'r epistolau gael eu darllen.* W. Davies.

Deddfwyd yn y senedd *fod i'r ddau destament gael eu cyfieithu.* W. D.

768. (E.) Another form for the passive is *the infinitive followed by an object* (= a subject with a finite verb.) This construction is used in *positive* sentences, and expresses (a) the *past Indicative*, and (b) the *Subjunctive*. *Negative* sentences will be expressed (a) by the *perfect* and *pluperf. Indicative*; or (b) if contingent in signification, by the *Subjunctive*, or by *peidio â*, followed by the other verb in the Infinitive.

- a. Pos. *Infin.* Dywedodd **ddwyn yr arian ymaith.**

He said that the money was taken away.

- Neg. *Indic.* Dywedodd **na ddygwyd yr arian ymaith.**

He said that the money was not taken away.

Or with *darfod*. Dywedodd *ddarfod dwyn yr arian ymaith*; neg., *na ddarfuwyd dwyn*, &c.

- b. Pos. *Infin* Gorchymynodd **ddwyn** Arthur yno.
He commanded that Arthur should be brought there.
 Neg. *Subj.* Gorchymynodd **na ddygid** Arthur yno. }
 Gorchymynodd **beidio a dwyn** Arthur yno. }
He commanded that A. should not be brought there.

(a) When the sentence has the force of the Subjunctive, the Infinitive is often preceded by the preposition *ar* or *am*.

Gorchymynodd *ar* (or *am*) *ddwyn* Arthur yno.

Gorchymynodd *ar* (or *am*) *beidio a dwyn* Arthur yno.

Additional Examples.

Gwelwch *roi y defnydd yn lle y peth a achosiwyd.* Henri Perri.

Gan brofi *ddarfod ein cyfiawnhau.* W. Salsbri.

Yn dywedyd *wneuthur Iesu Grist yn weinidog i'r enwaediad.* Rom.
 xv. 8.

Sylwasom *drin yr achaws gan ereill yn fedrus a phriodawl.* Tegid.

769. (Z.) *Y* and *yr*, *mai* and *taw*, with finite moods.

770. *Y* and *yr*, like the *Infinitive for Indicative*, are used in simple narration; and hence the order will be *conjunction, verb, subject*.

(a) *Y* is put before consonants and governs the *radical* sound; *yr* before vowels.

771. *Y* is placed before the tenses *byddwn*, *buaswn*, and *byddaf*, whether they be main or auxiliary verbs; before all tenses of the Indicative of *inflected verbs*;^{*} and before the imperfect and pluperfect of the Subjunctive.

In *negative* sentences the conjunction *y* or *yr* is omitted, the particle *na*, *nad*, or *nas*, preceding the verb.

Pos. Dywed **y bydd** efe yno, *he says that he will be there.*

Neg. Dywed **na fydd** efe yno, *he says that he will not be there.*

Pos. Dywed **y gwyr y chwedl**, *he says that he knows the story.*

Neg. Dywed **na wyr y chwedl**, *he says that he does not know the story.*

(a) The present tense, and especially the *indefinite past*, prefer the use of the Infinitive to this construction.

Additional Examples.

Yn dywedyd *y distrywiai yr Iesu y lle yma, ac y newidiai efe y defodau.* Acts vi. 14.

Caiff weled *y bydd ganddynt oll hamdden i gymdeithasu âg ef.* Nicander.

^{*} That is, verbs conjugated without the aid of *bod*: e. g. *dysgaf*, *dysgwn*.

Sylwer yma na chynnwysir moddau anorphenadwy y perwyddiaid.
Tegid.

Gellid gweled trwy hwn nas meddai yr un galon. Ellis Wynn.

Ffrostio y maent na ddichon eu heglwys syrthio. M. Kyffin.

Yn dangos nad efe yw yr achos y gwrthodwyd yr Iuddewon.

772. Mai or taw. It has been seen that *y* is found when the finite verb takes the lead in a sentence; *mai* (or *taw*), on the other hand, comes in when some other part of speech (including the Infinite verb) is emphatic, and goes before the verb. *Mai* is *never* found before *finite* verbs; and hence, as it has no influence over the verb, the verb may either be simple or compound, either in the Indicative or Subjunctive, and of any tense.

Dywedir **mai goleuni yw Duw**, *it is said that God is light.*

Dywedir **mai trwy ffydd y mae Duw yn cyfiawnhau**, *that God justifies by faith.*

Dywedir **mai ceisio anrhydedd yr oedd**, *that he was seeking honour.*

Dywedir **mai yma y daeth eich brawd**, *that your brother came here.*

(a) *Mai* in North Wales; *taw* (and sometimes *tai*) in South Wales. Both govern the radical sound.

Additional Examples.

Hyn a ddywedaf, **mai rhyfeddol yw eu digywilydd-dra**. E. Samuel.
Gosododd ar droed y chwedl, **mai trwy draws anghyfiawnder y daliasai**
efe diroedd ei ddwy nith. W. Davies.

Diammheu **mai dynion wedi ymroddi i feddalwch oeddent**. Theo. E.

Gwyddai **mai hawdd cymmodi lle byddai cariad**. Theo. Evans.

Credir **mai efe a ranodd Gymru yn esgobaethau**. Brutus.

Gwyddys **taw hirion ydynt**. D. S. Evans.

773. In a **negative** sentence the emphatic word is preceded by *nad*, or by *mai* or *taw* with *nid*; as,

Dywed **nad efe yw y gwr,** } *he says that he is not the man.*
mai nid efe yw y gwr, }

Additional Examples.

Yn meddwl **nad gwaith yr awdwyrr hyny oeddynt**. Edw. Samuel.

Dywedant **nad rhydd oedd i ni gychwyn yr helynt**. M. Kyffin.

Fe ellir tybied **mai nid ar y ddelw ei hun y gweddient**. Theo. Evans.

Sylwer **mai nid hawdd camsynied tonau (waves) a tonau (tunes.)** Tegid.

CAUSE CLAUSE.

774. Sentences introduced by *conjunctions causal* are di-

vided into (a) *cause clause* = ὅτι, *quod, because*: (b) *explanatory cause* = γάρ, *enim, for*.

The *cause clause* is headed, in Welsh, by the following words: O achos, o herwydd, o blegyd, o waith, o ran, am, (more rarely, achos, herwydd, plegyd, o ethryb, gwaith) = *because*. Gan, can, yn gymmaint a (or ag) = *since, seeing, inasmuch as*.

775. The particles of *negation* in a *cause clause* are *na*, *nad*, and *nas*, except when *mai* or *taw* is retained. (See below.)

776. The preceding causal conjunctions are followed by the various forms exhibited under the *Transitive clause*; i. e., a *Transitive* may be converted into a *Cause clause* merely by prefixing a causal conjunction.

777. (A.) *The Infinitive followed by its subject, in positive sentences. The Indicative followed by its subject, in negative sentences.* [§§ 761, 762.]

Pos. O herwydd fy mod i yn dysgu.

Neg. O herwydd nad wyf i yn dysgu.

Pos. O herwydd bod Arthur yn dysgu.

Neg. O herwydd nad yw Arthur yn dysgu.

Additional Examples.

Ni chwanegaf felldithio y ddaiar o herwydd bod bryd calon dyn yn ddrwg o'i ieuenctyd. Gen. viii. 21.

Moses a guddiwyd, o achos eu bod yn ei weled yn fachgen tlws. Heb. xi. 23.

Gan nad ystyrir pob gwneuthuriawl yn lle ei achosedig. H. Perri. Nid oes achos anghoelio yr epistol o herwydd nad yw'r awdwr yn adnabyddus. E. Samuel.

Gan fod y pwn yn bwysig. Tegid.

O herwydd bod arfau y Cymry yn fwy llewawg. W. Davies.

O ran bod yno ymherodron. Ellis Wynn.

778. (B.) *The Infinitive with its subject connected by 'o,' or an inflection of 'o honof,' in positive sentences. The perfect or plup. Indic. followed by its subject, in negative sentences.* [§§ 763, 764.]

Pos. O herwydd caru o Arthur y rhian.

Neg. O herwydd na charodd Arthur y rhian.

Pos. O herwydd caru o hono ef hi.

Neg. O herwydd na charodd efe hi.

Additional Examples.

Am hyny gan brofi o honom wirionedd y grefydd Gristionogol. E. S.

Ni chaed niwed, o herwydd credu o hono yn ei Dduw. Dan. vi. 23.

Am farnu o hono ei enaid yn gyfiawn. Job xxxii. 2.

O herwydd caru o'r Arglwydd chwi. Deut. vii. 8.

Yn gymmaint a dyoddef o hono. Heb. ii. 18.

779. (Γ.) *The Infinitive preceded by its subject under the government of the prep. 'i,' in positive sentences. The perfect or plup. Indic. followed by its subject, in negative sentences.* [§ 765.]

Pos. **O herwydd i Arthur ei charu.**

Neg. **O herwydd na charodd Arthur hi.**

Additional Examples.

O herwydd i ti eu hoffi hwynt. Ps. xlv. 3.

Gan i Dduw ddwyn tystiolaeth. Heb. xi. 4.

Am na chawsant hwy ateb. Job xxxii. 3.

Yn gymmaint ag i mi eich gwahodd. Prov. i. 24.

(a) *Darfod* is often prefixed to the foregoing construction. "O herwydd *darfod* iddo ei gyfodi ef." Acts. xvii. 31.

780. (Δ.) *Passive voice.* [§ 767.]

A. **O herwydd fy mod i yn cael fy nysgu.**

B. **O herwydd cael o honof fy nysgu.**

Γ. **O herwydd i mi gael fy nysgu.**

781. (E.) *The Infinitive followed by an object (=a subject with a finite verb), in positive sentences. The Indic. followed by its subject, in negative sentences.* [§ 768.]

Pos. **O herwydd dwyn yr arian.**

Neg. **O herwydd na ddygwyd yr arian.**

Am ddirmygu eu gwragedd gweddwon hwy. Acts vi. 1.

O blegyd maddeu i chwi eich pechodau. 1 S. John ii. 12.

(a) *Darfod* is often prefixed. "Am *ddarfod* ei gyssegru âg ysbrydoliaeth ddwyfol." M. Williams.

782. **Government.** *Am* and *gan* (or *can*) have the *middle* sound after them; as '*Am or gan ddyfod o hono.*' *Yn gymmaint a* or *ag* has the same government as *a* and *ag*. (§§ 725, 726.) The others are followed by the *radical*, (but sometimes by the *middle* of the verb *bod*.)

O achos dywedyd o hono.

O herwydd bod (or fod) Arthur yno.

783. (Z.) *Y* and *yr*, *mai* and *taw*, with *finite verbs*, in *positive sentences*. In *negative sentences* *y* and *yr* are omit-

ted; *mai* and *tan* are sometimes omitted, sometimes retained. If retained, the are followed by the negative particle *nid*. [**R** §§ 769—773.]

Pos. **Am y gwn hyny.** Neg. **Am na wn hyny.**

Pos. **O herwydd mai efe yw y gwr.**

Neg, **O herwydd nad** (or **mai nid**) **efe yw y gwr.**

Gan na wyddom yn drylwyr pwy yw'r awdwr. W. Davies.

O herwydd mai yno y ciliodd y rhan fwyaf o wyr llen. Th. Evans.

784. The *explanatory clause* 'assigns a reason for an assertion made in the preceding clause.'

785. It is introduced by *canys* = for: also by *o achos*, *o herwydd*, *o blegyd*, *o naith*.

786. The particles of *negation* are *ni*, *nid*, *nis* (never *na*, *nad*, *nas*.)

787. The *Explanatory clause*, whether positive or negative, has *always* its verb in a *finite* mood; i. e., in the Indicative or Subjunctive.

Pos. **Canys y mae yn rhyfelwr.**

Neg. **Canys nid yw yn rhyfelwr.**

Additional Examples.

Clodforwch yr Arglwydd, *o herwydd ei drugaredd a bery yn dragywydd.* Ps. cxviii. 1.

A thi a elwi ei enw ef Iesu, *o blegyd efe a wared ei bobl.* S. Matt. i. 21.

Ni allwn lai na chydabod fod ei hysgrythyrau yn wir, *o blegyd ni thardda celwydd* ond naill ai o anwybodaeth ai o feddwl drwg. E. S.

Nid anhegborawl hyn, *canys gall pob darllenwydd weled ystyr a meddwl y geiriau.* Tegid.

Yr wyt yn un o honynt, *canys y mae dy leferydd yn dy gyhuddo.* S. Matt. xxvi. 73.

788. The *explanatory* conjunctions, unlike those of the preceding clause, do not require any particular position of the verb, &c., after them. Thus we have

Subject preceding: *canys efe a ddaeth i'r ty.*

Verb preceding: *canys daeth efe i'r ty.*

Object preceding: *canys hwn a darewaist.*

(a) *Canys*, *o achos*, &c., are followed by the *radical* sound.


THE CONCESSIVE CLAUSE.

789. The *Concessive clause* expresses a concession or admission of a certain truth, and is usually followed by the adversative conjunction 'yet' in the subsequent clause. [*τί καί*, *quamquam*, *although*.]

790. It is introduced in Welsh by *er* and *serch*. The particles of *negation* are *na*, *nad*, *nas*.

(a) *Er* and *serch* are followed by the *radical* sound; but sometimes by the *middle* of *bod*. *Er bod* or *er fod*.

791. The construction of this clause is the same as that of the *Transitive clause*; i. e., a *Transitive* may be converted into a *Concessive* clause merely by prefixing a *concessive* conjunction.

792. (A.) *Infinitive followed by its subject, in positive; Indicative followed by its subject in negative sentences.* [ §§ 761, 762.]

Pos. **Er fy mod i yn dysgu.**

Neg. **Er nad wyf i yn dysgu.**

Pos. **Er bod Arthur yn dysgu.**

Neg. **Er nad yw Arthur yn dysgu.**

Additional Examples.

Er bod rhai yn llawenhau. Ellis Wynn.

Er bod gwaedd ganddynt yn ei ddinystyr. Job xxx. 24.


Er ei fod yn ffyddlaw. Hosea xiii. 15.

Er bod arno nodau oes ddiweddarach. W. Davies.

Er nad oedd y tai ond isel yma. Ellis Wynn.

Er bod llawer peth wedi llygru yn eu plith hwy. M. Kyffin.


Er na bu erioed lawenach yn ei galon. Theo. Evans.

793. (B.) *Infinitive with its subject connected by 'o' or 'o honof,' &c., in positive; perf. or plup. Indicative, followed by its subject, in negative sentences.* [ §§ 763, 764.]

Pos. **Er dysgu o Arthur; o honof.**

Neg. **Er na ddysgodd Arthur; na ddysgals.**


Er gwario o honynt y rhelyw o'r wythnos. Nicander.

794. (Γ.) *Inf. preceded by its subject under the government of 'i,' in positive; perf. or plup. Indic., followed by its subject, in negative sentences.* [ § 765.]

Pos. **Er i Arthur ddysgu.** Neg. **Er na ddysgodd Arthur.**

Er nad aeth hi erioed i mewn. Ellis Wynn.

Er iddo ddyoddef llawer o helbulon. W. Davies.

795. (Δ.) *Passive voice.* [ § 767.]

A. **Er bod Arthur yn cael ei ddysgu.**

B. **Er cael o Arthur ei ddysgu.**

Γ. **Er i Arthur gael ei ddysgu.**

796. (E.) *Infin. followed by an object* (= a subject with a finite verb), in *positive*; *Indic. followed by its subject*, in *negative* sentences. [K § 768.]

Pos. **Er dysgu Arthur.** Neg. **Er na ddysgwyd Arthur.**

Er anfon llythyr ato, *er hyny ni chlywyd oddi wrtho.*

Er estyn goleuni iddynt, *lwy a gauant eu llygaid rhag gweled.*
Brutus.

797. (Z.) [The conjunction *cyd* is also used in this construction.] In negative sentences *y* and *yr* are omitted; *mai* and *taw* are sometimes omitted, sometimes retained. If retained, they are followed by the negative particle *nid*. [K §§ 769—773.]

Pos. **Er y gwyr efe.** Neg. **Er na wyr efe.**
Er mai efe yw y dyn. Er nad or mai nid efe yw y dyn.

Additional Examples.

Cyd y gallasai ereill yn well. Henri Perri.

A chyd dylem ni addef. Com. Prayer.

Cyd na byddo ond ammod dyn. Gal. iii. 15.

A bawddyn er na byddai. Gor. Owen.

Er na fedrant silliadu braidd un gair yn ei le. Tegid.

(a) *Er* will admit of being followed by an adjective in the equal degree (e. g., *gwyned*.)

Er lleied y bo, *though it be ever so small.*

Er teced wyt, *though thou art so fair.*

TIME CLAUSE.

798. The conjunctions (or conjunctive adverbs) of *time* are the following: *Pàn, pryd* [ὅτε; *quum*; *when*.] *Cyn* [πρὶν; *antequam*; *before*.] *Wedi, gwedi (cvedi), ar ol, yn ol* [ἐν ᾧ; *postquam*; *after*.] *Tra* [ἐν ᾧ; *dum*; *whilst*.] *Cyhyd ag (cyd, cyd ag)* [ἕως; *donec*; *as long as*.] *Cyn gynted ag, er cynted ag, gynted ag, mor fuan ag* [ἐπει; *simul ac*; *as soon as*.] *Er pan* [ἐξ οὗ; *ex quo*; *since*.] *Hyd, nès, tàn, oni, onid, onis, hyd nes, hyd oni, &c.* [ἄχρι; *donec*; *till, until*.] *Pa bryd bynag, pryd bynag* [ὅταν; *quando-cumque*; *whenever*.] *Nerydd* [*just when*.] *Gyda (cyda)* [*the same time that*.]

799. Some are construed with a *finite* mood; others with a *finite* or the *infinitive*, optionally.

800. α.) The following are construed with *finite* verbs;

pan, *er pan*, *tra*, *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *hyd*, *tan*, *hyd oni*, &c.; *pa bryd bynag*, *pryd bynag*; and such as end with *ag*; as *cyhyd ag*, &c. The particles of *negation* after these words are *na*, *nad*, *nas*.

Here the verb will precede its subject. [Order : **conjunction, verb, subject.**]

Pan y daeth efe yma. Pryd nad oedd plentyn iddo.

Additional Examples.

Tra yr oedd efe yn ymddyddan. S. Luke xxiv. 32.

Hyd oni ddaeth efe. Acts viii. 40.

Pan gymmerth y Cristianogion. Theo. Evans.

A bydd pan godwyf gwmmwl. Gen. ix. 14.

Marchnatewch hyd oni ddelwyf. S. Luke xix. 13.

Hyd onid elo. Is. xxvi. 20.

A chynted ag y ganwyd ef. Ch. Edwards.

Gorfu arnom fyned oni ddaethom i'r lle. Ellis Wynn.

Penderfynais chwilio tan gawn afael arno.

Can gynted ag y cynnygid un euraidd i'm llaw. W. Davies.

(a) *Oni*, *onid*, and *onis* (until), are not frequently met with. *Tan* is colloquial. *Pan*, *pryd*, *er pan*, and *tra* are sometimes followed by *ag*. "Pan ag yr ydoedd yn sefyll ar ben uchaf y grisiau." Brutus.

801. β.) The following are construed with **finite** or **infinitive** verbs; *cyn*, *wedi*, *gvedi* (*cvedi*), *ar ol*, *yn ol*, *nes*, *hyd nes*, *gyda*, (*cyda*.)

802. a. With **finite** verbs.

Mynaf ei weled cyn yr af ymaith, I must see him before I go away.

Additional Examples.

Wedi y cadarnhaer, nid yw neb yn ei ddrymu. Gal. iii. 15.

Wedi y delo arnoch. Wedi'r el y daw'r eilwaith.

Nes y deffroer ef. Gyda y bydd amser yn darfod.

(a) *Wedi*, *ar ol*, and *yn ol* are but rarely found with a finite verb of past time.

803. b. With **Infinitive** verbs. The construction of the sentence is the same as that of the *Transitive* and the *Cause*.

804. The time marked by the infinitive depends on the verb of the preceding clause; if it be in past time, the infinitive also will refer to past time: if in present or future, the infinitive will express future time or contingency.

Cgmmnerodd ofal o hono, nes i mi ddyfod, he took care of him till I came.

Cymmer ofal o hono, nes i mi ddyfod, take care of him until I come,

Additional Examples.

Wed myned o honynt, lwy a ddaethant. Acts xii. 10.

Pa le caid awen, cyn cael o'r mor ei ddorau? Gor. Owen.

Cyn gneuthur o honot y mynyddoedd.

Wedi iddo gymmyrdd pwyll. Acts xii. 12.

Pan oedd ym Mesopotamia, cyn iddo drigo yng Ngharran. Acts vii. 2.

Nes i'r Rhufeiniaid gwbl ddinystrio Ierusalem. Ch. Edwards.

Ar ol iddo ef bregethu yn fuddiol. Ch. Edwards.

Wedi ei myned hi yn ddydd. Acts xii. 18.

Ar ol myned y wybodaeth o'r gwir Dduo ar goll. Theo. Evans.

(a) Cf. Gr. ἔως τοῦ ἐλθεῖν αὐτὸν = *nes ei ddyfod ef.*

805. The verb is put in the future *Indicative*, or in the *Subjunctive*, according as the action or state is contemplated as *certain*, or *contingent*. The future *Indicative* is, however, frequently met with, even when *contingency* is intended to be expressed

806. **Y** and **Yr**. The following conjunctions, when construed with *finite* verbs, are followed by the affirmative particle *y* or *yr*; *Cyn*, *pryd*, *wedi*, *ar ol*, *yn ol*, *hyd*, *nes*, *hyd nes*, *tra*,* *gyda*, *pryd bynag*, *pa bryd bynag*, and such as end in *ag*; as *cyhyd ag*, &c.

Pryd y daeth dy fab. *Tra y dychwelir draw'n eu hol.* Ed. Prys.

807. *Pan*, *er pan* and *tan* may or may not be followed by the particle; if they are not, they govern the verb in the *middle* sound

Pan y daeth; or *Pan ddaeth*, *when he came.*

808. *Oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *hyd oni*, &c., are never followed by *y* or *yr*. They have the same government as *ni*, *nid*, *nis*.

MOTIVE CLAUSE.

809. The *Motive clause* expresses a *purpose*, or "a *direction of the agent's will toward an end.*" [*ἵνα*, ὡς; *ut*; *in order that.*]

In Welsh it is headed

810. α.) In positive sentences, by *ma*, *fa*, *fel*, *megys*, *modd*,

* *Tra* is sometimes found without the particle, and is then followed by the *radical*, *middle*, or *aspirate*.

Tra cryno dail yr aethnen werdd. D. S. Evans.

Tra fwm yno. *Tra phery haul.*

followed by *y* or *yr*, with the *Subjunctive* mood. In *negative* sentences, by the *same conjunctions*, followed by *na*, *nad*, *nas*, with the *same mood*.

Pos. Daeth **fel y gwelai efe hi**, *that he might see her*.

Neg. Daeth **fel na welai efe hi**, *that he might not see her*.

Additional Examples.

Fel y moliannwyf dy enw. Ps. cxliii. 7.

Fel na welai farwolaeth. Heb. xi. 5.

Fel y mynegwyf dy holl wyrth. Ed. Prys.

Modd y delom o'r diwedd. Com. Prayer.

Fel nad eppilient. Acts vii. 19.

811. β.) By *i* = to; *er* = for; *er mwyn* = for the sake of; with the *Infin.*, in *positive* sentences. In *negative* sentences, we borrow the preceding form, *mal*, *na*, &c., with *Subj.*; or insert *peidio â* between the motive headings and the Infinitive.

Pos. Aethym yno **er gweled fy nghyfaill**.

Neg. Aethym yno **fel na welwn**, or **er peidio a gweled fy nghyfaill**.

Additional Examples.

Anfonwyd ef i Rydychain *i yfed yn helaethach o ffrydiau dysg.* W.D.

Er coffâu ei ryglyddus grog. Com. Prayer.

Er rhoddi terfyn ar bob ymryson. Tegid.

Ac yno syrthio i lawr i addoli'r Baban Breninol. Nicander.

Disgwyl a wnaethant am amser i ruthro ar eu meistriaid. Theo. E.

Fr mwyn cael mawr-lles gollyngdod. Com. Prayer.

Er mwyn dynodi lle yr acen. Tegid.

Sefydlu gŵyl i goffâu dyoddefaint Arglwydd y bywyd. Brutus.

(a) Cf. the Greek and English idioms.

κατέλιπεν αὐτοὺς φυλάττειν τὸ στρατόπεδον.

He left them *to guard the camp*.

(b) *I* governs the *middle*; *er* and *er mwyn*, the *radical*.

(c) *I'r dyben o*, and *i'r bwrriad o*, followed by the *Infin.*, are now frequently used. These are probably but a mere translation of the English phrase, '*for the purpose of*.'

Daeth yma *i'r dyben o weled* Arthur.

812. γ.) By *rhag*, which denotes 'a negative purpose, a purpose of prevention,' = μή; *ne*; *lest*. It is followed by the *Infinitive*, or *Subjunctive*; sometimes by the future *Indicative*.

Aeth Arthur ymaith	{	rhag gweled ei gyfaill. rhag gweled o hono ei gyfaill. rhag iddo weled ei gyfaill. rhag y gwelai ei gyfaill.
--------------------	---	---

Additional Examples.

Felly Gwrtheyrn, *rhag y difreinnid ef*, a alwodd am gymmhorth y Saeson. Theo. Evans.

Iawn yw ysgrifenu pob gair yn null ei ddefnydd, *rhag cuddiau ei ddechreuad*. Dr. Pughe.

(a) *Rhag* is followed by the *radical* sound. *Rhag bod*; *rhag dyfod*.

THE EFFECT CLAUSE.

813. The *Effect clause* expresses a *result* or *consequence*, and in English 'refers to a *so* or *such* in the principal sentence.' [*Ὡστε*; *ut*; *that*.]

'The noise was *such*, *that* I could not hear a word.'

(a) *Such* will be expressed in Welsh by *y fath* or *cyfryw*; *so* by *mor* and *cyn*, or simply by putting the adjective in the *equal* degree, (e. g., *teced*, *cymmaint*.)

The *Effect clause* is headed

814. α.) In *positive* sentences, by *mal*, *fal*, *fel*, followed by *y* or *yr*, with the *Indicative*—unless the verb is *contingent* in signification, when, of course, it is put in the *Subjunctive*. In *negative* sentences, it is headed by the *same conjunctions* with *na*, *nad*, *nas*, *ag na*, *ag nad*, *ag nas*, and joined to the *same moods*; or simply by *na*, *nad*, *nas*, without the conjunctions.

Cymmaint oedd ei lid fel y lladdodd ei frawd.

Mor anwybodus ynddi, mal nas gellwch ei chlodfori.

Additional Examples.

Y mae mor greulawn fel y lladdai ei frawd, pe gallai.

Y fath hurtrwydd a'u perchenogai fel y danfonasant genadon atynt. Theo. Evans.

Mor erchyll ac ofudwy, na allai neb eu haros. Edw. Samuel.

Cynnhyrfwyd ei feddwl gymmaint, fel yr addunodd yn sobr. Nicander.

Gan fod hyn mor eglur na ellir dim gwâd o honaw. M. Kyffin.

Mewn trefn mor odidog nad oes bossibl i un maen fod cyn hardded. E. Wynn.

(a) It is not necessary that the words corresponding to *so* and *such* should always be expressed.

Ceryddodd y môr fel y sychodd. Ps. cvi. 9.

O herwydd ffydlawn oedd efe, fel na chaed ynddo nac amryfusedd na bai. Dan. vi. 4.

815. β.) The temporals *oni*, *hyd oni*, *nes*, *hyd nes* = *until*, have often the force of *that*. *Oni* and *hyd oni* are joined

to a *finite* mood; *nes* and *hyd nes*, to a *finite* or the *infinitive* mood.

Mor dosturus oedd yr olwg, **oni orfu i'r eigyddion anfon am win.**
Ch. Edwards.

INTERROGATIVE CLAUSE.

816. 'Questions are divided into *predicative* and *nominal*, according as the question refers to a predicate or to an object (person or thing.)

817. **Predicative** questions are those where their proposer desires only an affirmation or denial to his inquiry. These are expressed in English merely by placing the finite verb first, and by the accentuation;* in Greek and Latin, generally, and in Welsh always, by interrogative particles.

818. The **Interrogative particles** are, *a*, *ai*, *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *ai ni*, *ai nid*, *ai nis*.

819. *A* is the most simple and unemphatic of the interrogative particles, and is placed before *finite* verbs. The answer to the question made by it may be *affirmative* or *negative*. [$\frac{y}{n}$; *ne*.]

A ddaeth eich brawd? has your brother come?

A atebir y llythyr? will the letter be answered?

820. *Oni*, *onid*,† *onis*, *ai ni*, *ai nid*,† *ai nis*, are, like *a*, placed before *finite* verbs, and generally expect an *affirmative* answer. [$\acute{\alpha}\gamma\alpha$ $\epsilon\acute{\iota}\nu$; *nonne*.]

Oni ddarllenasoch chi? have you not read?

Onid aeth efe yno? has he not gone there?

821. **Government.** *A* is placed before *vowels* or *consonants*, and when before consonants it governs the *middle* sound: *oni* and *ai ni* are placed before *consonants*, and govern the *aspirate* sound of the *first* class, the *middle* of the *second* and *third*: *onis* and *ai nis* are placed before *consonants*, and govern the *radical*: *onid* and *ai nid* before *vowels*.

822. *Ai* (= *is it*) is more emphatic than *a*, and *may stand before any word, except a finite verb*. The answer may be *affirm.* or *negative*.

823. *Ai* may stand before

* Kühner and Arnold's Greek Grammars.

† *Onid* and *ai nid* are also employed like *ai*. See § 824.

a. A noun: *Ai llyfr* yw?

b. An adj.: *Ai ofiach* yw?

c. A pronoun: *Ai efe* yw y gwr?

d. An Infin. verb: *Ai darllen* y
mac?

e. A partic.: *Ai wedi ei guro* y cerir ef?


f. An adv.: *Ai yma* y mae?

g. A conj.: *Ai fel* y'th gynnorthwy-
wn y daethost?

h. A prep.: *Ai yn* y ty y mae?

824. *Onid* and *ai nid*, are employed like *ai*, and generally expect an *affirmative* answer. [*ἔξ αὖ; nonne.*]

Onid dirgelwch mawr yw hyn? *is not this a great mystery?*

 Thus *onid* and *ai nid* are employed like *a* or *ai*.

825. **Government.** *Ai*, *onid*, and *ai nid*, are placed before *vowels* and *consonants*, and govern the *radical* sound.

826. **Answers** to predicative questions are made (a) by a *repetition of the verb*, preceded, in *negative* answers, by *na* or *nac*; (b) by *do* in *positive*, and *naddo* in *negative* answers; (c) by *ie* in *positive*, and *nage* in *negative* answers.

827. Questions *by* made *a*, *oni*, *onid*, &c., followed by finite verbs, if made in *any tense*, except the *perfect indefinite*, are answered by the proper tense and person of the same verb; and, if the answer be *negative*, *na* or *nac* will precede the verb.

A oes mawredd yn Nuw?

Affirm. answer, *Oes*.

A ddaw eich brawd yma?

Neg. answer, *Na ddaw*.

Additional Examples.

A all dyn waredu ei hun? *Na all*. T. Charles.

A ddylem ninnau wneuthur yr un fath? *Dylem*. T. Charles.

(a) If the verb be *periphrastic* (i. e. an inflection of *bod* with a participle of the other verb), the participle is omitted in the answer, unless emphasis is required, in which case the sentence may be repeated.

A ydyw Arthur yn dysgu? Simple: *ydyw*. Emphatic: *ydyw, y mae*; or *ydyw, y mae Arthur yn dysgu*.

(b) Very often the answer is made by an inflection of *gwneuthur* (to do), and, if emphatic, with a repetition of the verb.

A ddysgi di hyn? Simple: *gunaf*. Emphatic: *gunaf, mi a'i dysgaf*.

828. If the question is asked in the *perfect indefinite*, the answer is made *do* in *positive*; by *naddo* or *na ddo* in *negative* clauses: sometimes by a repetition of the verb.

A ddysgaist ti dy wers? Ans. *do*, or *dysgais*; *naddo*, or *na ddysgais*.

A fu pawb feirw yn Adda? *Do*. T. Charles.

A barhâodd dyn yn y cyflwr hwn? *Na ddo*. T. Charles.

(a) When emphasis is required, the verb is repeated after *do* or *naddo*.

A ddysgaist ti dy wers? Ans. *do, mi a'i dysgais: naddo, ni ddysgais hi* (or *mo honi*.)

829. Questions made by *ai*, *onid*, and *ai nid*, followed by *nouns, adjectives, &c.*, are answered, *affirmatively* by *ie*, *negatively* by *nage*.

Ai Arthur a ddygodd y llyfr? Affirm. ans. *ie*. Neg. *nage*.

(a) When emphasis is required, *ie* is followed by a part or the whole of the question (the interr. particle being, of course, omitted); *nage* is followed by *nid*, with a part or the whole of the question.

Ai Arthur a ddygodd y llyfr?

Affirm. *Ie, Arthur: ie, Arthur a'i dygodd.*

Neg. *Nage, nid Arthur; nage, nid Arthur a'i dygodd.*

830. When questions, to which affirmative answers are expected, are asked at the end of the sentences (as in English, "you wrote to your brother, *did you not?*") the forms *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, are put before *finite verbs*: *onid do* (sometimes *oni* with the proper person of the perf. indef. of *gwneuthur*, to do) is used when the verb of the sentence is in the *perf. indefinite*: *onide* (= *onid ie*) when the sentence begins with any part of speech except a *finite* verb.

Fin. verb. Mae Arthur yn ddyn da, *onid ydyw?* Ydyw.

Fe ddaw eich brawd yma, *oni ddaw?* Daw.

Perf. indef. Dysgodd Arthur ei wers, *onid do* (or *oni wnaeth?*) Do.

Other words. Llyfr da ydyw hwn, *onide?* Ie.

(See § 823.) Afiach iawn yw'r dyn, *onide?* Ie.

Efe yw'r milwr goreu, *onide?* Ie.

831. When the person spoken to expresses his assent to or dissent from an assertion or saying made by the person speaking, the assent or dissent is expressed in the same way as in answering questions.

Mae Arthur yn ddyn da. Ydyw. Nac ydyw.

Arthur is a good man. Yes. No.

Chwi a welsoch eich cyfaill ddoe. Do. Naddo.

You saw your friend yesterday. Yes. No.

Milwr dewr yw Arthur. Ie. Nage.

A brave soldier is Arthur = } Yes. No.

Arthur is a brave soldier. }

832. 'Nominal questions are those in which the enquirer wishes to know the *name of a person, place, the time, &c.*; and are introduced by substantive or adjective interrogative pronouns, or by interrogative adverbs.'

833. *Pwy*, *who*, *whose*, *whom*; *which*; *what*, is sing. and pl., and of all genders: *pa*, *what*, is sing. and pl., and of all genders.

(*Pwy*.) *Pwy* a wnaeth y byd? *Pwy* yw y rhai hyn?
Pwy wyt ti fy merch? Ych *pwyl* a gymmerais?
 (*Pa*.) *Pa* ddyn yw efe? *Pa* beth yw dyn?
Pa lyfrau a gymmerodd?

(a) The difference between *pwyl* and *pa* is this: *pwyl* being itself a substantive pronoun, should never be joined to a substantive; *pa*, being an adjective, should never be without one. Dr. Davies says: "Differentia utriusque est quod *pa* semper substantivum habet adjunctum; *pwyl* nunquam." *Pwy* however has a substantive joined to it, sometimes in good authors, and continually in colloquial language. And *pa* stands alone in ancient authors; and sometimes in modern works.

Pwy ffræthach areithydd? Gor. Owen.
 Gwraig i *bwyl* un o honynt? S. Luke xx, 33.
 Y mawr drugarog Dduw, *pa* wna? Llywarch Hen.
 Ni ddawr newynog *pa* ys. Adage.
Pa yw tadogaeth y gair? Tegid.

834. *Pa* is sometimes omitted, the following word acquiring an interrogative character. Thus we may say,

Pa beth or *beth* = what? *Pa sawl* or *sawl* = how many? *Pa faint* or *faint* = how much, how many?
Pa sawl (or *sawl*) rhan sydd mewn dyn? *Beth* a gollodd dyn?

835. The Interrogative adverbs *lle*, *sut*, *pryd*, &c., which are really substantives, have acquired an adverbial character by the omission of a prep. and the interrogative *pa*. It is often optional whether a question is asked with the separate words, or with an ellipsis of the prep., or of the prep. and *pa*. Thus we may say,

Ym mha lle, *pa lle*, or *lle*, where? *Ym mha sut*, *pa sut*, or *sut*, how?
I ba lle, *pa lle*, or *lle*, whither? *Ar ba pryd*, *pa pryd*, or *pryd*, when?
Ym mha fodd, *pa fodd* (contr. *p'odd*), or *modd*, how? *Am ba ham*, or *pa ham* (contracted *pam*), why?

(a) These interrogatives, whether expressed fully or elliptically, are followed by the auxiliary adverb *y* or *yr* in affirmative sentences; by *na*, *nad*, *nas*, in negative sentences.

Lle *yr* aeth efe? Sut *na* welsoch ef?
 Pa ham *y* daeth efe? Pa ham *na* ddaeth ef?

836. Double questions, corresponding to *πότερον . . . ἢ; utrum . . . an; whether . . . or*.

Whether = *a*, *ai*, alone or preceded by *pa un*, *pa'r un*, or *pa un* (*pa'r un*) *bynag*.

Or = *ai*, *ynte*, *neu*. [‘Or no:’ *no* is expressed by *peidio*, or *ni* with the verb of the clause.]

Nis gwn *a ddaw* Arthur *ai peidio*.

Nis gwn *pa un ai* Arthur *ai Dafydd a ddaw*.

Myfi *a af pa’r un bynag a ddeuwch chwi neu heidio*.

Myfi *a af pa’r un bynag a ddeuwch chwi ai ni ddeuwch*.

WISH CLAUSE.

837. When we wish simply, i. e., when the thing may or may not exist or happen, we use (a) either *the present Subjunctive*, or (b) *the Imperative, preceded by O*, or (c) *O am* (=Oh for.)

a.) Bendigedig *fo enw’r Arglwydd, blessed be the name of the Lord.*

Llwyddiant *a gaffo*.

Dyfod *a wnelo*.

Buan *y delo*.

Byth *na syflwyf*.

Yr Arglwydd *a’n cadwo ni*. Tywyllwch *a’i gorchuddio*.

b.) O bydded ddedwydd, *pa le bynag yr elo*.

O bydded iddo lwyddo *yn ei gais*.

c.) O am gyfeirio *fy nhraed*. Ps. cxix. 5.

O am gael gweled *fy mhlentyn anwyl*.

O am ras. O am iddo ddyfod.

838. When the wish implies a denial of the actual existence of the fact or circumstance, we use the imperfect or pluperfect Subjunctive, preceded by *O na*, *O nad*, *O nas*. [*εἴθε, εἰ γάρ; utinam; would that! oh that!*]

Imperfect. *O na wyddwn* *pa le y cawn ef!* Job xxiii. 3.

O na bai *fy mhen yn ddyfroedd!* Jer. ix. 1.

O na byddai *fyw Ismael ger dy fron di!*

Pluperfect. *O na buasit* *ti yna cyn ei farw!*

O na welswn *fy mrawd cyn iddo fyned!*

(a) “The literal signification of *O na* is *Oh! that not*; and in order to elicit the full signification from this, some ellipsis must be supplied as passed over by the speaker under the intensity of passion. It expresses rather regret that a thing is not, than a desire that a thing should be; thus, *O na ddeuai y boreu* = Oh [how grievous] that the morning cometh not.*”

SUPPOSITION AND INFERENCE.

839 *Supposition* or *conditional clauses* are divided into (a) **Fact supposition**, which expresses “possibility or simple supposition, without any expression of uncertainty.”† (b) **Con-**

* Hughes on Syntax.

† Arnold’s Latin Prose composition.

tingent supposition, which expresses "uncertainty with a prospect of decision."* (c) **Non-fact supposition**, which expresses "impossibility or belief that the thing is not so."*

840. The *Inference clause* (called also the *apodosis* or *consequence*) is that which accompanies a supposition. It may be a *main clause*, a *transitive*, an *interrogative*, &c.

841. α. The **Fact supposition** is introduced by *o* (= εἰ), *od*, or *os*, in *positive* sentences: by *os na*, *nad*, or *nas*, in *negative* sentences, if the adverb immediately follows *os*; by *os . . . ni*, *nid*, or *nis*, if the adverb is separated from *os* by the intervention of the nominative, &c. [εἰ; *si*; *if*.]

842. The *Fact supposition* has its verb in the *Indicative*; the *Inference*, in the *Indicative* or *Imperative*.

Os ydys yn ein holi ni . . . bydded hysbys i chwi. Acts iv. 9.

O chefais ffafr yn dy olwg di . . . rhodder i mi. Esther vii. 3.

(a) The *Non-fact supposition* is sometimes assumed or granted as truth, and then takes the form of the *Fact*. Here the *context*, not the *form*, must determine the clause.

Os drwg y dywedais, tystiolaetha o'r drwg. [So in Gr. εἰ κακῶς ἐλάλησα. S. John xviii. 23.]

So also in Latin. "*Si pugnat extricata densis
Cerva plagis, erit ille fortis.*" Horace.

Additional Examples.

Canys *os* Abraham a *gyfiawnhawyd* trwy weithredoedd, y mae iddo orfoledd. Rom. iv. 2. [Gr. εἰ ἐδικαίωθη.]

O thelais ddrwg, erlidied y gelyn. Ps. xvii. 2. [Gr. εἰ ἀντεπέδωκα.]

843. β. The **Contingent supposition** is introduced by *o*, *od*, or *os*, in *positive* sentences; by *os na*, *nad*, *nas*; or *os . . . ni*, &c., in *negative* sentences, like the *Fact supposition*. [ἐὰν, ἂν, ἤν; *si*; *if*.] *Negative* sentences are also introduced by *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *oddi eithr*, and *oddigerth*. [ἐὰν μὴ; *nisi*; *unless*.]

(a) *Oddi eithr* and *oddigerth* are construed with the infin. See below.

844. The *Contingent supposition* has its verb generally (but see § 846) in the *Indicative* mood: the *Inference*, in the *Indicative*, *Imperative*, *Subjunctive*, or *Infinitive*.

Os byddwch ewyllysgar . . . daioni y tir a fwytwch. Is. i. 19.

Onid af fi, ni ddaw y Dyddanydd atoch. S. John xvi. 17.

Os na bydd yno. Os efe ni bydd yno.

* Arnold's Latin Prose composition.

Additional Examples.

Os bydd wedi gwneuthur pechodau, hwy a faddeuir iddo. S. James v. 15.
Pawb a'i cefnydd, o bydd bai. Gor. Owen.
Felly ni ellwch chwithau, onid arosych ynoffi. S. John xv. 4.
Rhag i'm gwrthwynebwy'r lawenychu, os gogwyddaf. Ps. xv. 4.
Rhag, os na wnawn, na bo genym na nerth na chyflustra i wneuthur hyny. Ed. Samuel.
Os gwneir hyn, nid ydym heb ddyfal a dwys obeithiau y llwyddwn. Tegid.
Yr oedd y cyfieithiad yn ddiweddar iawn, os nad yw eto mewn bod. W. D.
Beth ynte, os y pab ni wyr oddi wrth hyn? M. Kyffin.

845. *Oddi eithr* and *oddigerth*, like the *casual conjunctions*, are followed by the *Infinitive* mood.

Oddi eithr { *ei fod yn dyfod*, except he is coming.
dyfod o hono, except he come.
iddo ddyfod, except he come.

846. If the *Inference clause* be a *Transitive*, depending on a verb of the past time, the *Contingent* has its verb in the *imperfect Subjunctive*.

Dywedodd y **cawn** fod yno, **os cadwn** ei orchymynion.

(*Explan.* 'Dywedodd,' a verb of the past time; 'y cawn fod yno,' a Transitive clause, and here the Inference of 'os cadwn ei orchymynion,' which is a Contingent supposition, having its verb in the imperfect Subjunctive.)

(a) The same construction is found after sentences which are resolvable into a *Main* and a *Transitive*. (E. g. *He promised him money* = *he said that he would give him money*.) Addawodd (= dywedodd y rhodda'i) arian iddo, os ewyllysiai.

Additional Examples.

Rhoisant gynghor i ymadaw os gallent gyrhaeddyd hyd Phenice. Acts xxvii. 12.

Cynnygiais oddef pob peth, os dileai fy enw o'r llyfr.

Cynnygiwyd ei bywyd i Margaret Pierrone os tafluai ei Beibl i'r tân. Ch. Edwards.

847. γ. The *Non-fact supposition* is introduced by *pe*, *ped*, or *pes*, in *positive* sentences: by *pe na*, *nad*, or *nas*; or *pe . . . ni*, &c.; and by *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *odd i eithr*, and *oddigerth*, in *negative* sentences. [*i*; *si*; *if*.]

(a) *Oddi eithr* and *oddigerth* are construed with the *Infinitive*, as above.

848. The *Non-fact* has its verb in the *imperfect* or *pluperfect Subjunctive*; the *Inference* in the *same mood*, except in one case where the *Indicative* is used. (§ 849.)

(a) The *Non-fact* may have its verb in the *imperfect*, and the *Inference* in the *pluperfect*; or *vice versâ*.

Pe plant Abraham fydddech, gweithredoedd Abraham a wnaech.

Additional Examples.

Pe medrai dynion ganfod erchyllod pechod, hwy a'i casâent. Ed. S.

Pe rhyngwn fodd dynion eto, ni byddwn was i Grist. Gal. i. 10.

Ped adnabuasech fi, fy nhad hefyd a adnabuasech. S. John xiv. 17.

Pe buasit ti yma, ni buasai farw fy mrawd. S. John xix. 21.

Pe galwaswn, a phed atebasai efe i mi, ni chredwn. Job ix. 16.

Diffygiaswn, pe na chredaswn. Ps. xxvii. 13.

Llawenhaem yn fawr, pe gwelem ein cydwladwyr yn fwy hyddysg yn y llythraeth Gymraeg. Tegid.

849. Sometimes the *Non-fact* is equivalent to a *Concessive clause*, and then the verb of the *Inference* will be in the *Indicative*.

Pe gwersyllai llu i'm herbyn (= er i lu wersyllu i'm herbyn) nid ofna fy nghalon.

Additional Examples.

Pe cyfodai cad i'm herbyn, yn hyn mi a fyddaf hyderus. Ps. xxvii. 3.

Pe collwn y cwbl, pa golled yw? Ellis Wynn.

Pe rhodiwn ar hyd glyn cysgod angeu, nid ofnaf niwed. Ps. xxiii. 4.

Pe llefarwn â thafodau dynion ac angylion . . . yr wyf fel efydd yn seinio. 1 Cor. xiii. 1.

850. **Government.** *O* and *pe* are placed before *consonants*; *od* and *ped* before *vowels*; *os* and *pes* before *vowels* and *consonants*.

851. *O* governs the 1st class in the *aspirate*; the 2nd and 3rd in the *radical*. *Pe* (sometimes followed by *y* or *yr*), *os* and *pes* govern the *radical* of all classes.

O cherwch fi, if you love me. *Os carwch fi, if you love me.*

Pe carech fi, if you loved me. *Pes carech fi, if you loved me.*

852. *Oni*, *onid*, and *onis* have the same peculiarities as *ni*, *nid*, and *nis*, from which they are derived. (See §§ 680, 681.) *Oddi eithr* and *oddigerth* govern the *radical* sound.

RELATIVE CLAUSE.

For a list of the relative pronouns, see §§ 204, 205.

853. *Relative pronouns* are divided into *simple* and *indefinite* (or *distributed*.)

854. The *simple* refers to a well-known object, and has its verb in the *Indicative*; the *indefinite* refers to an antecedent

in a vague manner, and, if the tense be future or contingent, it has its verb, properly, in the *Subjunctive* mood.

855. The proper *indefinite* relatives are *prwy bynag*, *pa . . . bynag*, *yr un*, *y neb*, *y sawl*; but the simple relatives, except *pa un*, *pa rai*, are often employed as such.

Pwy bynag a syrthio ar y maen hwnw. S. Luke xx. 18.

Y neb a hauo anwiredd a fed flinder. Prov. xxii. 8.

Y rhai oll a'u hiawn arferont.

856. *Pa un*, pl. *pa rai*, are always *simple* relatives.

Y dyn hwn, oblegyd *pa un* y galwodd holl liaws yr Iuddewon. Acts xxv. 24.

Wrth fydwagedd, o *ba rai* enw un oedd Siprah. Ex. i. 15.

Y gwely esmwyth, ar *ba un* y cwsg pob peth. I. MSS.

857. *A'r* and *ag* are the least emphatic forms of the relative; and they must always be placed foremost in the clause. (a) *A'r* seldom occurs except as the subject to a verb, or the object of a *finite* verb. (b) *Ag* may be employed, not only as the subject to a verb, and the object of a finite verb, but also as the object of an infinitive or a preposition, which must always be placed after the verb of the clause.

Pawb dan haul a'r a gredasant yn ei enw ef. Ch. Edwards.

Yr hwn ni chasâi ddim a'r a wnaethost. Com. Prayer.

Am ddim oll a'r a amcanasant ei wneuthur. Gen. xi. 6.

Dyweded pob un ag y sydd yn caru Duw. Mos. Williams.

Ni chaiff yr elw ag y mae mor ddiwyd *yn ei geisio*.

Hwn yw'r dyn ag y mae cymmaint o son *am dano*.

(a) *A'r* is occasionally added after the indefinite "*bynag*." Beth *bynag a'r* a ofynant. S. Matt. xviii. 19.

858. *Ag* is the proper relative after *y fath* and *y cyfryn*, such, and after substantives accompanied by adjectives of the equal degree, like the English adverbial relative "*as*."

Y cyfryw ddatguddiad ag ydyw'r Beibl. Nicander.

Cynnifer ag a'i derbyniasant ef. S. John i. 12.

Cymmaint ag sydd yn angenrheidiol.

859. After substantives accompanied by superlative adjectives, and after some other substantives or substantive words (such as *pawb*, *pob un*, *yr un*, *yr unrhyn*, *cyfan*, *cwbl*, *dim*), it is usual either to omit the relative, or to employ *a'r* or *ag*.

Ni ddichon i'r dyn doethaf a anwyd farnu yn amgen.

Parotoi bara i bob un, a gymmiero boen. Bp. Griffith.

Dyddanu pawb, a'r sydd mewn perygl. Com. Prayer.

Dyled pawb, ag sy'n ofalus am dani.

860. *Yr hyn* refers to a circumstance, a sentence, or part of sentence, as its antecedent = *which, that which, what*, L. *id quod*. [See the demons. *hyn*, § 549.]

Rhoddi o honoch eich cyrff, *yr hyn* yw eich rhesyml wasanaeth. Rom. xii. 1.

Awn rhagom i ystyried geiriau unsill, *yr hyn* sydd o bwys nid bychan. Tegid.

I gadw *yr hyn* a gollasid. Mynegais *yr hyn* a glywais.

861. **Agreement.** The form *yr hwn*, &c. agrees with its antecedent in gender, number, and person. *Y neb, yr un*, pl. *y sawl*, in number, and person: *prwy bynag, ag*, and *a'r*, are indeclinable. *Pa ... bynag* may be of any gender, number, and person, according to the word that is placed between *pa* and *bynag*.

Gender. Duw, *yr hwn* a'n gwnaeth.

Number. Y dynion, *y rhai* a welsom.

Person. Myfi, *yr hwn wyf* yn ymddyddan â thi.

(a) The agreement in person is, however, subject to the peculiarities mentioned under the syntax of the verb.

862. If the antecedent is a noun of multitude, the relative is sometimes singular, sometimes plural.

Y gynulleidfa, yr hon oedd yn ei wrandaw.

A holl *gaethglud* Iudah, *y rhai* a aethant. Jer. xxviii. 4.

863. When the relative has two antecedents of different persons, the verb of the relative clause may refer to either of the two.

Myfi yw y *gwr* a *welodd* flinder. (Here the verb refers to *gwr*.)

Myfi yw yr Arglwydd, *yr hwn* a'ch *neillduais* chwi. (Here the verb refers to *myfi*.)

864. **Position.** The relative should be placed, as in English, as near as possible to its antecedent, and before the verb of its own clause.

A rhai o'r *Saduceaid*, *y rhai* sydd yn gwadu nad oes adgyfodiad. S. Luke xx. 27.

Hwn yw y *Crist*, *yr hwn* yr wyf yn ei bregethu.

(a) To prevent ambiguity, or when emphasis is necessary, the antecedent may be repeated after the form *yr hwn, yr hon, yr hyn*; but it cannot be repeated after any other form.

Iachawdwriaeth, am yr hon *iachawdwriaeth*. 1 S. Peter i. 10.

Yr hwn *air* a arwyddocâ ynys.

Yr hyn *bethau* ydynt mewn alegori. Gal. iv. 24.

The relative governs the repeated antecedent in the middle sound. Yr hyn *bethau*.

865. When the relative is under government of a prep. the preposition is sometimes placed before the relative, sometimes after the verb of the clause in the form of a pronominal preposition. The latter is by far the more elegant and idiomatic construction.

Y cyfaill *at yr hwn* yr anfonais lythyr.

Y cyfaill, *yr hwn* yr anfonais lythyr *ato*.

866. **Omission of antecedent.** The antecedent, if a pronoun, is most frequently omitted when the indefinite *prwy bynag*, *yr un*, *y neb*, *y sawl*, are used. [Cf. *whoever*, *whosoever*.]

Prwy bynag a ddelo a wobrwyr.

Yneb a chwango wybodaeth a chwango ofid.

The antecedent of the forms *yr hwn*, *yr hon*, *y rhai*, if it be a pronoun, is generally omitted, unless it be very emphatic. Thus,

He (or that) who, he whom, him who, &c. = *yr hwn*.

She who, she whom, her who, &c. = *yr hon*.

They (or those) who, they whom, them who, &c. = *y rhai*.

867. When the omitted antecedent is governed by a prep., the prep. is put before the relative pronoun; as,

Gofynwch *i'r hwn* sydd yn gwybod.

868. **Omission of relative.** The relative pronoun is very often omitted. In this case the auxiliaries *a* and *y* (or *yr*) are carefully retained in affirmative clauses.

Arthur yw *y gwr a* ymladdodd mor wrol.

Y rheol *a* roddwn mewn perthynas iddynt yw hon. Tegid.

Yn mhob ordinhâd *a* wnelo y gynmanfa. M. Kyffin.

Efe yw'r gwr *yr* ysgrifenis ato.

(a) Those inflections of *bôd* which never take the particle *a* before them are to be excepted. (See § 701.)

Gwelais y dyn *oedd* yn canu.

869. When the omitted relative is governed by a prep., the prep. stands after the verb in the form of a pronominal preposition; as,

Y wlad y daethost allan o honi. Y dydd y'm ganed ynddo.

Yn y cyfyngder trallodus y'n dygwyd iddo. Theo. Evans.

(a) When point of time is expressed by the relative clause, the relative and preposition are frequently left out.

Hyd y dydd y cymmerwyd ef i fynu. Acts i. 22. [Unders. *yn yr hwn.*]

Yn y dydd y gwnaeth yr Arglwydd. Gen. ii. 4. [Unders. *yn yr hwn.*]

870. When both the antecedent and relative are under government of prep. and the antecedent is omitted, the prep. that governs the antecedent is put before the relative, and that which governs the relative comes after the verb in the form of a pronominal preposition.

Rhoddwch i'r hwn y cymmerasoch oddi arno.

871. Sometimes a prep. is put before the relative, and repeated after the verb. [Some consider this repetition inelegant, if not erroneous.]

I'r rhai a eisteddent . . . y cyfododd goleuni iddynt. S. Matt. iv. 16.

Ar yr hwn y gwelych yr Ysbryd yn disgyn ac yn aros arno. S. John i. 33.

Wedi dangos eisioes i ba amgylechiadau tosturus y dygwyd yr hen Frytaniaid iddynt. Theo. Evans.

872. Occasionally both the relative and antecedent are omitted in the same sentence.

Gwyn ei fyd a ystyria wrth y tlawd = gwyn ei fyd ef yr hwn, &c.

Gwae a adeilado dref trwy waed. Hab. ii. 12.

Oddi wrth a sylwid hawdd yw canfod. Tegid.

Ac na bydded a drigo ynddi. Acts i. 20.

A laddo a leddir.

Bydded ganddynt awdurdod i wneuthur a fynant. M. Kyffin.

Hithau ni fyn a gaffo; ni chaiff a ddymuno. Ellis Wynn.

873. Possessive case. Clauses introduced by *whose*, or *of which* (e. g., *whose power is infinite*), will be expressed in Welsh—

874. α.) By setting the relative pron. as the nom. of the clause, and placing the governing noun under the government of the prep. *â*. [Order: relative, verb, prep. with its case.]

Yr hwn sydd â'i allu yn ei law = *who is with his power in his hand; whose power, &c.*

Y rhai sydd â'u sail mewn pridd. Job iv. 19.

Y rhai oedd â'u synwyrâu yn effro. Theo. Evans.

(a) "Whose name" is usually expressed by "*â'i enw*" = *with his name*.

875. β.) By placing the relative in an absolute state at the beginning of the clause, and making the governing noun the nom. to the verb.* [Order: relative, verb, nom.]

Y rhai y coffêir eu henwau = (as to) whom, their names are mentioned; whose names, &c.

Yr hwn y mae ei einïoes ynddo. Gen. i. 30.

Yr hwn y mae ei wyntyll yn ei law. S. Matt. iii. 12.

876. γ.) By placing the governing noun first, and then the relative in a possessive state—as in English. [Order: nom., possessive, verb.]

Dyma y bachgen, tad yr hwn a welais.

Diwedd y rhai yw distryw; duw y rhai yw eu bol. Phil. iii. 19.

Tad yr hwn a laddwyd yn y llofruddiaeth greulawn. Theo. Evans.

877. Negative particles. A clear distinction between the negatives *ni* and *na* is not observed in relative clauses. The following may be considered as general rules: (a) *Ni*, *nid* and *nis* follow *simple* relatives; (b) *Na*, *nad* and *nas* are used after *indefinite* relatives; and (c) in *simple* relative clauses when the relative heading is *omitted*.

a) Ger bron y Pab, yr hwn *ni* ddichon gamgymmeryd. M. Kyffin.
Saif ei esgyrn allan, y rhai *ni* welid o'r blaen. Job xxxiii. 21.

b) Hawdd ei ddeall i'r sawl *nas* gallant hebgor llawer o amser. R. I. P.

c) Mewn llyfrau ereill *na* bu erioed ammhueaeth am danynt. Edw. Samuel.

Llawer o lyfrau historiau *nas* gwyddom pwy a'u hysgrifenodd. E. S.

Cymmeryd gafael yng ngwaith pellenigyn *nad* oedd yn ymholi mewn un ddawn ragorach. W. Davies.

ABSOLUTE CLAUSE.

878. The *case absolute* is expressed by the particle *a* before a consonant, or *ac* before a vowel, with a participle of any tense. [Order: absolute particle, noun or pronoun, participle.]

Pres. and Past. Dyro i ni, *a nyni yn gofyn.* Com. Prayer.

Ac a hwy yn gwrandaw, Efe a chwanegodd. S. Luke xix. 11.

Pa ham, *a mi yn dysgwyl* iddi ddwyn grawnwin, y dug hi rawn gwylltion? Is. v. 4.

A'r Cymry yn cysgu, rhuthrodd y gelyn am eu penau. Theo. Evans.

* A similar idiom is found in the Armorican language. See Ed. Llwyd's Arch. Brit., p. 193.

Perfect definite. *A mi wedi dyfod*, ymlawenhaodd pawb.

Future. *A mi ar fedr ysgrifenu*, attaliodd fy llaw.

879. In a negative clause, *heb fod* (without being) precedes the participle in present, past, and future: *heb* (without) is substituted for *wedi* in the perfect definite.

A mi heb fod yn ysgrifenu, *I not being writing.*

A mi heb fod ar fedr ysgrifenu, *I not being about to write.*

A mi heb ysgrifenu, *I not having written.*

(a) The participle “*yn bod*,” equivalent to “being,” is omitted in affirmative clauses. *A mi yno* = *I there; I being there.* *A'r brenin yno* = *the king there; the king being there.* In a negative clause, “*bod*” is expressed, preceded by *heb*. *A'r brenin heb fod yno*, *the king not being there.*

(b) The absolute particle is sometimes left out,—especially if the conjunction *ac* (and) begins the sentence, and the noun or pron. of the absolute clause has a vowel for its initial letter. For instance, ‘And He coming nigh, the multitude rejoiced,’ would be expressed by ‘*Ac efe yn nesáu, llawenhaodd y dyrfa*,’ not ‘*Ac ac efe yn nesáu*,’ &c.

APPPOSITION CLAUSE. (§§ 419—430; 475, 476; 525—528.)



SYNOPTICAL VIEW OF THE INITIAL MUTATIONS.

880. The consonants, that undergo a change or modification when standing as the initial letters in words, are the nine following: *c, p, t; g, b, d; ll, m, rh.*

881. These are divided into *three* classes, according to the modifications of which they are susceptible.

882. a.) *c, p, t*, form the *first* class, and have each *three* changes or modifications of the radical form; namely, the *middle*, *nasal*, and *aspirate*.

883. b.) *g, b, d*, form the *second* class, and have each *two* changes or modifications of the radical form; namely, the *middle* and the *nasal*. This class has no *aspirate* sound: hence the words that govern the *aspirate* of the first class govern the radical of the second.*

* The words *ni*, *na*, and *oni*, form an exception. These govern the 1st class in the *aspirate*, the 2nd and 3rd in the *middle*. (See § 913.)

884. c.) LL, M, RH, form the *third* class, and have each *one* change or modification of the radical form; namely, the *middle*. This class has no *nasal* and *aspirate* sounds: hence the words that govern the *nasal* of the first and second classes, and the *aspirate* of the first, govern the *radical* of the third class.*

885. A TABLE showing the various modifications of mutable consonants:—

		<i>Radical.</i>	<i>Middle.</i>	<i>Nasal.</i>	<i>Aspirate.</i>
1 Class.	{ C	Câr, <i>a friend</i>	Gâr	Nghâr	Châr
	{ P	Pen, <i>a head</i>	Ben	Mhen	Phen
	{ T	Tâd, <i>a father</i>	Dâd	Nhâd	Thâd
2 Class.	{ G	Gŵr, <i>a husband</i>	—ŵr	Ngŵr	
	{ B	Brawd, <i>abrother</i>	Frawd	Mrawd	
	{ D	Dant, <i>a tooth</i>	Ddant	Nant	
3 Class.	{ Ll	Llaw, <i>a hand</i>	Law		
	{ M	Mam, <i>a mother</i>	Fam		
	{ Rh	Rhwyd, <i>a net</i>	Rwyd		

886. The mutable consonants are influenced by the words that *immediately precede* them; that is, a word beginning with one of the mutable consonants retains the *radical* sound, or is changed into the *middle*, the *nasal*, or the *aspirate*, according to the government of the word that *immediately precedes* it in the same clause. Thus,

‘Ty ein tâd,’ *our father’s house*. Here *tâd* retains the *radical* form *t*, because *ein* governs the *radical* sound.

‘Ty dy dâd,’ *thy father’s house*. Here *tâd* is changed into the *middle* form *dâd*, because *dy* governs the *middle*.

‘Ty fy nhâd,’ *my father’s house*. Here *tâd* is changed into the *nasal* form *nhâd*, because *fy* governs the *nasal*.

‘Ty ei thâd,’ *her father’s house*. Here *tâd* is changed into the *aspirate* form *thâd*, because *ei* governs the *aspirate*.

887. The remaining radical consonants (*ff*, *h*, *n*, and *s*) are

* See note on p. 227.

immutable; that is, they have one, and only one, form under all circumstances; as, *Ty ein nain*; *ty dy nain*; *ty fy nain*; *ty ei nain*.

RADICAL AND MIDDLE SOUNDS.

Nouns, adjectives, pronouns, and verbs.

888. The word that occupies the first place in a clause retains its *radical* sound,

Dynion dewr a ddaethant yno. (§ 433.) *Ti a gerais.* (§ 449.) *Go-fynodd iddo.*

Cywir yr atebodd. (§ 693.) *Dysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur.* (§ 653.) *Pum diwrnod yr arosais.* (§ 454.)

(a) When an interjection is understood, the word is usually changed into the *middle* sound. *Garedig frawd = O garedig frawd.* (§ 859.)

(b) When the equal degree of an adjective is put absolutely, its initial assumes the *middle* sound. (§ 483, a.) *Goched yw'r tân! Leied o wledydd sy'n mwynhau ei bendithion!*

(c) An infinitive verb heading a transitive clause, is put in the *middle* sound. *Mae'n dweyd geisio o hono ddyfod.* (§ 592.)

The verb *bod*, when heading a transitive clause, is irregular, but should properly assume the *middle* sound. [Read § 593.] *Dywedir fod Arthur yn darllen; dywedir bod Arthur yn darllen.*

When the transitive clause precedes the sentence on which it depends, the infinitive of the transitive clause is put either in the *radical* or *middle*.

<i>Dysgu—ddysgu—o hono ei wers</i>	} <i>sydd amlwg.</i>
<i>Darfod—ddarfod—cymmyryd yr arian</i>	
<i>Bod—fod—dyn yn farwol</i>	

The verb *bod* heading rules or resolutions is put in the *radical* or *middle*. Thus,

Penderfynwyd—

Bod—fod—i swyddogion gael eu dewis.

Bod—fod—i'r swyddogion gyfarfod bob mis.

889. The *radical* sound comes after common adjectives of the *equal* and *comparative* degrees; the *middle* after the *positive* and *superlative*. (§ 473.)

Equal. *Cyn fwyned gwr.* *Mor hardd bachgen.*

Comp. *Mwynaech gwr.* *Mwy gwrol milwr.*

Pos. *Trugarog Dduw.* *Grasusol frenines.*

Super. *Anwylaf gyfaill.* *Grasusaf frenines.*

890. Nouns *masculine* retain the *radical* after the *ordinals*; nouns *feminine* are changed into the *middle*. (§ 501.)

Y pummed *dydd*. Y degfed *tro*.
Y bummed *bennod*. Y ddegfed *ran*.

(a) But the ordinal *ail* (second) is followed by the *middle* even when the noun is *masculine*. Yr *ail ddydd*.

891. *Cardinal* numbers are followed by the *radical* sound (§ 491, &c.), except

a) *Un*, feminine, *dau* and *dwy*, which govern the *middle* sound. (§ 493.) Un *ddynes*. Un *ddynes* ar bymtheg. Dau *ddyn*. Dwy *ddynes*.

(a) But *un*, fem., governs the *radical* of *ll* and *rh*. Un *llaw*. Un *rhaw*.

b) *Tri* and *chwe*, which govern the *aspirate* of *c*, *p*, *t*; the *radical* of the other consonants (§ 494.) Tri *char*. Tri *char* ar ddeg. Tri *phen*. Tri *thy*. Chwe *char*.

c) *Saith* and *wyth*, which govern the *middle* of *c*, *p*, *t*; the *radical* of the other consonants. (§ 495.) Saith *gorn* (*rad. corn*.) Saith *ben* (*rad. pen*.) Saith *dorth* (*rad. torth*.) Wyth *gwas* (*rad. gwas*.) Wyth *bys* (*rad. bys*.) Wyth *llong* (*rad. llong*.)

d) *Deng*, *deuddeng* and *pymtheng*, which govern the *middle* of *g*, the *nasal* of *d*, and the *radical* of *m*. (See § 496.) Deng *wr*. Deng *nafad*. Deng *mis*.

(a) After some of the cardinals *blynedd* and *blwydd* assume the *nasal* sound, and *diwrnod* the *nasal* or the *radical*. [See § 497.]

892. The indefinite pronouns *dim*, *pob*, *llawer*, *un* (mas.), *yr un* (mas.), *rhai*, *sawl*, and *peth*, govern the *radical* sound; the others govern the *middle*. [See § 213, &c.]

Rad. Pob *tro*. Rhai *llyfrau*. Yr *un dynion*. Pa *sawl dyn*?

Mid. Ambell *dro*. Amryw *lyfrau*. Rhyw *ddynion*. Yr *holl ddynion*.

(a) Y *sawl* = such, governs the *middle*. Y *sawl bethau*.

(b) The interrogative *pa* governs the *middle*. Pa *ddyn yw efe*?

(c) The rel. *yr hwn*, &c., governs the repeated antecedent in the *middle*. Yr *hwn dabernacl*. Heb. ix. 2. Yr *hon lanerch*. Yr *hyn beth*.

893. Adjectives and adverbs are put in the *middle* after *feminine nouns singular*; in the *radical* after *fem. plural*, and after *masculines, sing. and plural*. (§ 474.)

Fem. sing. Gwraig *ddoeth*. Gwraig *dra doeth*. Y sefyllfa *fwyaf blodeuog*.
Gwraig *dda*, *ostyngedig*, *gall*.

Fem. pl. Gwragedd *doethion*. Gwragedd *tra doethion*.
Gwragedd *da*, *gostyngedig*, *call*.

Mas. Gwr *doeth*. Gwr *tra doeth*. Gwyr *doethion*.
Gwr *da*, *gostyngedig*. Gwyr *da*, *gostyngedig*.

(a) But the adverbs *go*, *mor*, and generally *rhy*, retain their *radical* form even after a *feminine noun sing.* Geneth *go* dàl. Geneth *mòr* dàl. Geneth *rhy* dàl.

(b) The word *pobl*, though generally regarded as a pl. noun, is followed by the *middle* sound. Pobl *dda*.

894. The genitive expressed by mere apposition retains its *radical* sound. (§ 437.)

Coron brenin. Iaith plentyn. Sail *ty*. Ystyr geiriau.

(a) After *teyrnas*, *templ*, *ty*, and *eglwys*, the word *Duw* generally takes the *middle* sound. Teyrnas *Dduw*. *Dewi* and *Dafydd* have the same construction. Esgob Ty *Ddewi*. [§ 437 (b.)]

895. Nouns in the genitive case, used adjectively, follow the same rules as adjectives; i. e., they are put in the *middle* after *fem. noun sing.*; but in the *radical* after *fem. noun pl.*, and after *mas., sing.* and *pl.* (§§ 408, 439, 441.)

<i>Fem. sing.</i>	Torth geiniog.	Sarff bres.	Ysgubor goed.
<i>Fem. pl.</i>	Torthau ceiniog.	Seirff pres.	Ysguboriau coed.
<i>Mas.</i>	Ty coed.	Ceffyl pren.	Ceffylau pren.

896. Apposition-nouns and apposition-adjectives retain their *radical* sound. (§§ 420, 421, 476.)

Paul, gwas Iesu Grist. Mon, mam Cymru.

Mae genym gyfeillion ffyddlaw, brodyr caredig, merched da, a llyfrau defnyddiol.

Cymmerodd agwedd ddynol, cyffelyb i'r eiddom ni.

897. Common nouns and adjectives, used as agnomens after proper names of whatever gender, are put in the *middle* sound. (§§ 422, 477.)

Dafydd frenin. Hywel *dda*. Daniel *ddu*. Elen brydferth.

898. Nouns put in apposition to personal pronouns generally assume the *middle*; but apposition personal pronouns are generally put in the *radical*. (§§ 526, 528.)

Nouns. Myfi *ddyn*. Tydi *ferch*. Chwi *bechaduriaid*.

Ymostyngodd erom ni *ddynion*.

Pron. Gwerthwyd ni, myfi a'm *pobl*.

899. Some nouns and adjective pronouns denoting *number* and *quantity* are put in the *middle*, when the natural order is inverted. (§ 444, a.)

Dwfr *ddigon*. Rhyfeddodau *lawer*.

900. Proper names of *places* and *rivers* follow the rules of common nouns. (§§ 458, 460.)

Bum yng *Nghaer*. Aeth i *Gorwen*. Wrth *Ddyfrdwy*.

(a) Foreign proper names of *places* usually retain the *radical*. (§ 459.)
Arosodd yn *Damascus*.

(b) Proper names of *rivers*, although *fem.*, retain the *rad.* after the article. Y *Dyfrdwy*.

901. Proper names of *persons* usually retain the *radical* sound. [See § 461.]

Dywedodd wrth *Dafydd*. Anfonodd at *Llewelyn*.

902. The article *y* governs a *fem. noun sing.* or its accompaniments in the *middle*; a *feminine noun pl.*, and *masculine nouns, sing.* and *pl.*, in the *radical*. (§§ 399, 400, 401.)

Fem. sing. Y *ddynes*. Y *ddoeth ddynes*. Y *dra doeth ddynes*.

Fem. pl. Y *gwragedd*. Y *doeth wragedd*. Y *tra doeth wragedd*.

Mas. Y *gwr*. Y *doeth wr*. Y *gwyr*.

(a) *Dau*, two, though *masculine*, *pobl* and *pobloedd*, though plural, are softened after *y*. Y *ddau ddyn*. Y *bobl hyn*. Y *bobloedd hyn*.

(b) *Math*, when used adjectively with either a masculine or feminine noun, is softened after *y*; as, *y fath wr*, such a man. Spurrell, p. 132.

(c) *Cardinal* numbers, even when preceding *singular* substantives of the *feminine* gender, retain the *radical* sound after *y*. Y *tair gwaith hyn*, these three times.

But *dwy*, two, is put in the *middle* sound. Y *ddwy dynes*, the two women.

(d) *Fem. nouns sing.* beginning with *ll* or *rh* retain the *radical* after *y*. Y *llong*. Y *lleuad*. Y *rhaw*. Y *rheol*.

(e) Names of rivers: see § 900 (b.)

903. The pronouns *ym*, *ein*, *eich*, *eu*, and *ill*, govern the *radical*; *dy*, *yth*, and *ei mas.*, govern the *middle*. (§§ 537, 538.) [*Ei fem.* governs the *asp.*]

Rad. Mi a'm *tâd*. Ein *tad*. Eich *tad*. Eu *tad*. Ill *dau*.

Mid. Dy *dad*. Ti a'th *dad*. Ei *dad*.

☞ (a) But *ei mas.*, and *ei fem.*, followed by *finite* verbs with consonant initials, govern the *radical*. Efe a'i (= a *ei*) *cospodd ef*. Efe a'i *cospodd hi*. [See § 544.]

904. The auxiliaries *fe*, *fo*, *e*, and *mi*, are followed by the *middle* sound. (§ 520, a.)

Fc *ddaw*. Fo *luddiwyd fy nghais*. Mi *fceddyliais*.

905. The subject coming immediately after its verb retains the *radical*; but if separated from the verb by "an intervenient word or phrase" it assumes the *middle* sound. (§§ 589, 594.)

Y mae dyn yn y ty. Y mae yn y ty *ddyn*.
Rhoddir llyfr iddo. Rhoddir iddo *lyfr*.

(a) The verb *oes* is often followed by its subject in the *middle*. (§ 589, b.)
Nid oes dwyll ynddo.

(b) The pron. *mi* and *ti*, and their compounds, assume the *middle*, when they follow their verbs. (§ 589, a.) Caraf *fi*. Cerir *finnau*. Ceri *di*. But when the verb ends in *t*, *ti* and its compounds retain the *radical*. Ceraist *ti ef*.

906. A *finite* verb is followed by its object in the *middle* sound: an *infinitive* is followed by its object in the *radical*. (§ 590.)

Darllenais *lyfr*. Dymunodd *fyned*.
Darllen *llyfr*. Dymuno *myned*.

(a) If an intervenient word or phrase separates the object from the infinitive, the object assumes the *middle* sound. (§ 594.) Tynu ymaith *bechodau*.

(b) The pron. *ti* and its compounds are put in the *middle* after the infinitive. Y mae efe yn dy garu *di*. Y mae hwn yn dy gasâu *dithau*.

907. A Transitive clause has the initial consonant of the Inf. put in the *middle*. [See § 883, note (c.)]

Y mae yn dweyd *fyned* o hono i'r dref.

908. The Inf. is put in the *middle*, when its subject is governed by a preposition.

Gofynais *i'r dyn ddyfod*. Y mae yn gofyn *iddo ef ddyfod*.

909. Intervenient phrase.

If the subject or the object, following the verb, be separated from it by an *intervenient word or phrase*, the subject or the object will be put in the *middle* sound. (§ 594.)

Y mae ym Mhrydain *frenines ddoeth*.

Yr oedd yno *ddynion dewr*.

Cymmeryd gydag ef *fantell gyssegredig y swyddogaeth*. Brutus.

910 Prepositions.

Prepositions proper governing the *radical* sound: see § 364, a.)

Ger llaw. Mewn *ty*. Rhwng *mynyddoedd*.

(a) The participial signs *yn*, *wedi*, *ar ol*, and *ar fedr*, are here included. *Yn dysgu*. *Wedi dysgu*.

Prepositions proper governing the *middle* sound: see § 364, b.)

Ar ben. *At ddyn*. *Gan ddyn*. *Tros fynydd*.

(a) The participial signs *gan*, *dan*, and *ar*, are here included. *Gan ddysgu*. *Dan ddysgu*. *Ar ddysgu*.

Substantive prepositions govern the *radical* sound: see § 368.

Parth rhyfel yr India. *Herwydd pethau ereill*.

Compounds ending with prepositions proper govern the same sound as the *last* of their component parts: see § 372.

Oddi ar fryn. *Oddi wrth frawd*. *O fewn ty*.

Compounds ending with a substantive govern the *radical* sound: see § 373.

Ger bron gorsedd gras. *Yng nghylech pynciau dyrys*.

911. Adverbs and conjunctions.


Verbs are put in the *middle* when immediately preceded by adverbs of quality. (§ 694.)

Awyddus ddysgwyliai. *Yr oedd yn peraidd ganu*.

912. The adverbs of comparison *digon*, *llai*, *lleiaf*, *mwy*, *mwyaf*, and *po*, govern the *radical* sound; *cyn*, *go*, *lled*, *mor*, *pur*, and *rhy*, govern the *middle*; *tra* governs the *aspirate*. [§ 691.]

<i>Rad.</i> <i>Digon cas</i> .	<i>Llai dysgedig</i> .	<i>Po dysgedicaf</i> .
<i>Mid.</i> <i>Cyn gased</i> .	<i>Go ddysgedig</i> .	<i>Lled ddysgedig</i> .
<i>Asp.</i> <i>Tra chas</i> .	<i>Tra pharchus</i> .	<i>Tra thew</i> .

(a) *Cyn*, *môr*, and *pur*, are followed by the *mid.* or *rad.* of *ll* and *rh*, but generally by the *rad.* *Cyn lloned* or *loned*. *Mor llon* or *lon*. *Pur rhwydd* or *rwydd*.

913.  *Ni* (*not*); *oni* (*is not? unless, until*); and *na* (*not, imperative, that not, not*) govern the *aspirate* of the 1st class, and the *middle* of the 2nd and 3rd. But *na*, “*nor*,” “*than*,” governs the *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd.

Asp. *Ni char*, he will *not* love. *Oni char*, *will* he *not* love? *Oni phaid*, if he will *not* cease. *Oni thawo*, *until* he be silent. *Na thaw*, *do not* be silent. *Amlwg yw na thaw*, it is evident *that* he will *not* be silent. *A*

daw eich brawd? Na *thaw*. Will your brother be silent? No: lit., he will *not* be silent. Dyma'r bachgen na *thaw*, this is the boy who will *not* be silent.

Mid. Ni weithia. Oni weithia? Oni *farna*. Oni *ddelo*. Na *ladrata*. Amlwg yw na *feddylia*. A rwymir ef? Na rwymir. Dyma'r bachgen na *ddysga*.

Na, = "nor," "than." *Asp.* Na *châr* na *chyfaill*. Gwell na *thâd*. *Rad.* Na brawd na mam. Gwell na brawd ac na mam.

(a) The above *ni*, *oni* and *na* govern the inflections of *bod* in the *mid.* or *rad.* Ni *fydd* or *bydd*. Oni *fydd* or *bydd*. Na *fydd* or *bydd*.

914. Nid, nad, nis, nas, onid, onis, govern the *radical*.

Nid milwr ydyw. Dywed nad doeth yw'r cynghor.

Nis daeth. Dywed nas daeth.

Onid tywysog yw Iorwerth? Onis delo.

915. The auxiliary *dim* governs the *radical*, and *mo* the *middle*. (§ 689, note a.)

Ni fyn ddim dyfod. Ni chanfwm mo *ddichellion* y dyn.

916. The adverbs of showing *dyma*, *dyna*, &c., govern the *middle*. (§ 698)

Dyma *geffyl* hardd. Daew *ddyn* tâl.

917. The expletive *a*, the interrogative *a*, and the disjunctive *neu*, govern the *middle*: the expletive *y*,* the interrogative *ai*, and the disjunctive *ynte*, govern the *radical*. (§§ 705, 708, 727.)

Mid. Iorwerth a *ddaeth*. A *ddaeth* efe? Dyn neu *ddynes*.

Rad. Yno y gwelais ef. Ai *dyn* da ynte *dyn* drwg yw efe?

(a) *Neu* governs a finite verb in the *rad.* Aros yma neu *dôs* ymaith.

918. A, and, as; na, nor, than; and no, than, govern the 2nd and 3rd classes in the *radical*, and the 1st class in the *aspirate*. (§ 725.)

Rad. Mab a merch. Cyn goched a *gwaed*. Cochach na *gwaed*.

Asp. Mam a *thad*. Cyn goched a *than*. Na mam na *thad*.

Thus *a* expletive and *a* interr. govern the *middle*; *a* = and, *a* = as, and *â* = with, govern the *aspirate* of the 1st, and the *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd classes.

919. The concessives *er*, *serch*, *cyd*; the explanatories or transitives *y*, *mai*, *taw*; and the suppositives *os*, *pe*, *pes*, *onis*,

* The obsolete expletive *yd* governs the *middle*. Basaf dwfr man yd lefair, water is shallowest where it makes a noise.

oddi eithr, oddigerth, govern the *radical* sound. The suppositive *o* governs the *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd classes and the *aspirate* of the 1st. The suppositive *oni*, see § 913. The neg. motive *rhag* governs the *radical*.

Concess. Er dywedyd o honof. Serch ceisio o hono.

Explan. Dywed y daw. Dywed mai (or taw) brenin yw.

Supp. Os daw. Pe delai. Onis daw. Oddi eithr dyfod o hono.

O cherwch fi, cedwch fy ngorchymmynion.

Neg. motive. Rhag taro o honot dy droed.

Thus expletive *y* and transitive *y* govern the *radical*: the article *y* governs the *rad.* and *middle*, see § 902.

920. The causals *am* and *gan*, govern the *middle*; *o achos, o herwydd, o blegyd, o waith, o ran, o ethryb*, and *cany*s, govern the *radical*; *yn gymmaint a* has the same government as "*a*," *as*, see § 918.

Mid. Am ddywedyd o'r dyn. Gan geisio o honof.

Rad. O herwydd dywedyd o'r dyn. O achos ceisio o honof.

921. The temporals *pan, er pan*, and *tan*, govern the *middle*; *cyn, wedi*, or *gwedi, ar ol, yn ol, nes, hyd nes, onis*, govern the *radical*. *Oni* and *hyd oni* have the same government as "*ni*," see § 913. *Tra* is irregular: see "Alphabetical List."

Pan ddaw. Er pan ddaeth. Tan ddaw.

Cyn dyfod o hono. Wedi dyfod o hono.

922. *Yn* participial—*yn* apposition—*yn* adverbial—*yn* preposition: see § 931.

923. *Fel, fal, mal, megys*, and *sef*, are followed by the *radical*.

Ymddygodd Iorwerth fel gwr boneddig.

Efe sydd Dduw, sef Duw ein tadau.

(a) *Sef* is often followed by *bod* and *darfod*, when heading a transitive clause, in the *mid.* sound. Hyn a ddywed, sef fod dyn yn farwol.

924. The adversatives *ond, onid, eithr, oddi eithr, oddigerth, namyn*, and *heb law*, govern the *radical* sound. (§ 728.)

Nid oes yma onid ty i Dduw.

(a) They are often followed by *bod* and *darfod*, heading a transitive clause, in the *middle* sound. Ni ddywedodd ddim ond fod dyn yn farwol.

925. **Interjections.** Nouns or their concomitants assume the *middle* sound after interjections, expressed or omitted. (§§ 751—754.)

O *Dduw*. Ha *fab*. *Barchedig Syr* = O *barchedig Syr*.

(a) The *radical* form is sometimes retained, if the interjection is omitted.
Du dad.

926. Governing words omitted.

α. When the expletive *a* is omitted, the verb is still put in the *middle* sound. (§ 706.)

Pwy laddodd y ei? = *pw y a laddodd?*

Arthur fydd yn frenin = *a fydd*.

Fe gospir Arthur = *fe a gospir*.

927. β. When '*yn apposition*' is omitted, the apposition word, if coming after the verb, still assumes the *middle* sound. (§ 655.)

Arthur sydd frenin = *Arthur sydd yn frenin*.

Efe oedd ganwyll yn llosgi = *yn ganweyll*.

(a) Should the apposition word precede the verb, it resumes its *radical* form. *Dysgedig y cyfrifir* Arthur = *yn ddysgedig*.

(b) Sometimes the apposition word is put in the *radical*, even when it follows the verb. (§ 655.) *I'r dyn a fyddo da*.

928. γ. When adverbs of quality (e. g. *llefaru yn ddoeth*) begin the sentence, *yn* is thrown off, and the next word resumes its *radical* initial. (§ 693.)

Doeth y lleferaist = *yn ddoeth*.

929. δ. Interjections omitted: see above, § 925.

930. ε. Words denoting *duration* and *point of time*, *distance of place*, and *measure*, retain their *radical* initials if they stand foremost in sentences; but if they follow the verb, their initial consonants are changed into the *middle*. (§ 454.)

Deng wythnos yr arosais. *Arosais ddeng wythnos*.

NASAL SOUND.

931. '*Yn preposition*,' and the pronoun *fy*, *my*, govern the *nasal* sound.

Yn nhir Cymru.

Ym Merwyn.

Yng Nghorwen.

Fy nhad.

Fy mrawd.

Fy nghariad.

Synoptical view of the different governments of *yn*.

Yn participial	governs the	<i>radical</i> .	Arthur sydd <i>yn teyrnasu</i> .
Yn apposition	„ „	<i>middle</i> .	Arthur sydd <i>yn frenin</i> .
Yn adverbial	„ „	<i>middle</i> .	Arthur sydd <i>yn rhyfela yn dda</i> .
Yn preposition	„ „	<i>nasal</i> .	<i>Yn nhir</i> Cymru.

(a) *Yn* apposition and *yn* adverbial govern the *radical* sound of words beginning with *ll* and *rh*.

932. The *nasal* sound comes after some of the cardinal numbers. (§§ 496, 497.)

Deng nafad. Saith niwrnod. Pum mlynedd.

(a) Dr. Aufrecht has endeavoured to prove that all the words which take the nasal sound after them ended originally with an *n*. "C G, P B, T D, are respectively changed into NGH, NG, MH, M, NH, N, if preceded by the possessive pronoun *fy* (my), the preposition *yn* (in), and certain numerals. These numerals are *pump* or *pum* (five), *saith* (seven), *wyth* (eight), *naw* (nine), *deg* (ten), *ugain* (twenty), and its compounds, *can* (a hundred). . . . Only three words undergo usually a change after these [numerals], namely, *blwydd* or *blynedd* (year), and *diwrnod* (day). The simple reason why the above-mentioned numerals only, and no others, have this influence, is because they alone ended originally with an *n*. Compare

WELSH.		SANSKRIT.		GOthic.		LITHUANIAN.
Pump	....	pancan	....	—	....	—
Saith	....	saptan	....	sibun	....	septyni.
Wyth	....	ashtan	....	—	....	asztūni.
Naw	....	navan	....	niun	....	dewyni.
Deg	....	daçan	....	taihun	....	—

"*Can*, a corruption of *cant*, which still exists and agrees with the Irish *cet*, has exceeded these limits, and produces the change in consequence of its present final *n*, while *un* (one) is prevented from exercising a similar influence, because it originally terminated with a vowel (*uno*). The preposition *yn* agrees with *ἐν*, Latin *in*, Gothic *in*, Oscan and Umbrian *en*, Lithuanian *in*, and belongs to the same category as *pump*, &c.


"In composition, a corresponding nasal must be substituted for a mute, if a word is preceded by the negative particle *an*, which corresponds to the Greek *ἀν*, Umbrian and Oscan *an*, Sanscrit *an*, Gothic *un*, Latin *in*. Thus we have *anghadarn* (powerless) for *an* + *cadarn*, *anmhech* (sinless) for *an* + *pech*, *anneffro* (not awake) for *an* + *deffro*. The same takes place after another particle, *cy*, *ξύν*, *cum*; we find, therefore, *cynghas* (mutual hate) from *cy* + *cas*, *cynghofal* (mutual care) from *cy* + *ghofal*, *cymhorth* (mutual aid) from *cy* + *porth*, *cynrawdd* (discourse) from *cy* + *brawdd*, *cynhebygu* (to compare) from *cy* + *tebygu*, *cynfod* (custom) from *cy* + *defod*.

"From all these cases it is evident that the *n*, coming in contact with the following mute, had the power to assimilate it, though in course of time the cause might disappear, and the effect alone remain.

"Having shown that nasalization took place only where a preceding word ended with an *n*, we are naturally led to suppose that *fy* (my) also must have been originally *fyn*, though this form is no longer to be discovered even in the oldest literary monuments of the Kelt. But we must recollect that our *my*, *thy*, are a similar corruption of the Anglo-Saxon *mīn*, *thīn*, and that the Gothic *mein*, as well as the Lithuanian *mīnas*,

have an *n* in the possessive pronoun." (See a paper, read May the 23rd, 1856, before the Philological Society, by Theodore Aufrecht, Ph. D., author of "De accentu compositorum Sanscritorum," &c., &c.)

ASPIRATE SOUND.

933.  *Ni*, not; *na*, imper. not; that ... not; *ai ni*, is not; *oni*, is not, unless, until, govern the *aspirate* of the first class, and the *middle* of the 2nd and 3rd classes.

Ni <i>char</i> .	Na <i>char</i> .	Amlwg yw na <i>char</i> .
Ni <i>ddarllen</i> .	Na <i>ddarllen</i> .	Amlwg yw na <i>ddarllen</i> .

934. The prepositions *â*, *gyda*, and *efo*, with; *tua*, towards; and *tra*, beyond, govern the *aspirate* of the 1st class, and *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd.

Lladd *â chleddyf*. Gyda *thi*. Taraw *â bys*.

935. The conjunctions *a* and, as; *na*, nor, than; the obsolete *no*, than; and *o*, if, govern the *aspirate* of the 1st, and *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd.

Bara <i>a chaws</i> .	Cystal <i>a thi</i> .
Bara <i>a gwin</i> .	Gwell <i>na byyd</i> .

936. The numerals *tri* and *chwe*, and the pronoun *ei feminine*, govern the *aspirate* of the 1st, and *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd classes. (§§ 494, 540.)

<i>Tri chosyn</i> .	<i>Chwe chosyn</i> .	<i>Ei chosyn</i> .
<i>Tri gwr</i> .	<i>Chwe gwr</i> .	<i>Ei gwr</i> .

937. Vowels aspirated. Vowel initials take the aspirate *h* before them after the pronouns *ym*, *ei feminine*, *ein*, and *eu*. (§ 542.)

Myfi *a'm hawen*. Ei *hawen*. Ein *hawen*.

938. *Ei masculine* is followed by the aspirate *h*, if the following word be a *finite* verb. (§ 543.)

Arthur *a'i* (= *a ei*) *handwyodd ef*. Pan *y'i* (= *y ei*) *handwyir*.

939. The numeral *ugain* is aspirated after the preposition *ar*; as,

Un *ar hugain*. Dau *ar hugain*.

AN ALPHABETICAL LIST OF WORDS AND PARTICLES, WITH EXAMPLES TO SHOW THEIR GOVERNING POWERS.

940. In the following alphabetical list, which contains, principally, simple prepositions, conjunctions, adverbs, and indefinite pronouns, it was thought unnecessary to insert all the compounds, (e. g. *o herwydd, oddi wrth, naill ai*), as the government of these depends on the last word. For example, "herwydd" takes the *radical* after it, therefore the compound "o herwydd" requires to be followed by the *radical*. "Wrth" governs the *middle*, and therefore "oddi wrth" governs the same sound. (See §§ 370—373.)

A, expletive: *mid*. Duw a ddywedodd, *God said*.

A, interrogative: *mid*. A ddywedodd efe, *did he say?*

A, and; as: *asp*. Bara a chaws, *bread and cheese*. Môr ddysgedig a thithau, *as learned as you*.

A, *â*, with: *asp*. Lladd â chleddyf, *to kill with a sword*.

Achos, on account of, because: *rad*. Achos dyfod o hono, *because he came*.

Ai, interrogative: *rad*. Ai ceiniog yw, *is it a penny?*

Ail, second: *mid*. Yr ail ddydd, *the second day*. Yr ail bennod, *the second chapter*. (See § 501, note *b*.)

Am, round; for; because: *mid*. Am ganol, *round the middle*. Am geiniog, *for a penny*. Am ddywedyd o hono, *because he said*.

Ambell, some few: *mid*. Ambell dro, *sometimes*.

Amgylch, about: *rad*. Myned amgylch dinas, *to surround a city*.

Amrai, { several: *mid*. Amrai bennodau, *several chapters*. Amryw
Amryw, { lyfrau, *several books*.

Ar, upon; participial sign of future = about: *mid*. Ar ben y tŷ, *on the top of the house*. Ar ddyfod, *about to come*.

(a) *Ugain*, twenty, is aspirated after *ar*. Saith ar hugain, *seven and twenty*.

Ar fedr, participial sign of the future = about: *rad*. Ar fedr myned, *about to go*.

Ar warthaf, upon: *rad*. Dyfod ar warthaf lladron, *to surprise thieves*.

At, to, towards: *mid*. Uchenaid at ddoeth, *a sigh towards the wise*.

Can, as; since; with; participial sign of the present: *mid.* Can gynted a'r gwynt, *as swift as the wind.* A chan ddysgwyl o hono, *and since he expected.* Nid oes llyfr na chan fab na chan ferch yr ammaethwr, *neither the son nor the daughter of the farmer has a book.* A chau gyfaddef ei bechodau, *and confessing his sins.*

Canys, for: *rad.* Canys daeth Arthur yma, *for Arthur came here.*

Câr, cêr = *gêr*: *rad.*

Cerfydd = *gerfydd*: *rad.*

Cwedi = *gwedi*: *rad.*

Cyd, although: *rad.* A chyd dylem ni, *and although we ought.*

Cyda = *gyda*: *rad.*

Cyfryw, such: *mid.* Y cyfryw bethau, *such things.*

Cylch, about: *rad.* Cylch pethau, *about things.*

Cyn, before: *rad.* Cyn dydd dial, *before the day of vengeance.*

Cyn, as, so, how: *mid.* Cyn ddued a'r frân, *as black as the crow.*

(a) **Cyn**, may be followed by the *mid.* or *rad.* of *ll* and *rh.* Cyn lloned or loned, *as cheerful.*

Chwe, six: *asp.* Chwe chorn, *six horns.* Chwe phen, *six heads.*
Chwe thŷ, *six houses.*

Dacw, yonder is: *mid.* Dacw ddau offeiriad, *yonder are two clergymen.*

Dân, under; participial sign of the present: *mid.* Dan do, *under cover.*
Dyna hi yn myned dan ganu, *there she is going singing along.*

Dau, two (mas): *mid.* Dau fardd, *two bards.*

Deng, ten: *rad.* of *m*; *mid.* of *g*; *nasal* of *d.* Deng marchog, *ten knights.* Deng air, *ten words.* Deng nafad, *ten sheep.* (See § 496.)

Digon, enough or very: *rad.* Digon call, *cunning enough.*

Dim, no; any: *rad.* Nid oes dim daioni ynddo, *there is no good in him.*
A oes genych ddim gwin, *have you any wine?*

Drôs, over; for: *mid.* Myned dros gamfa, *to go over a stile.* Gwna dda dros ddrwg, *do good for evil.*

Draws = *traws*: *rad.*

Drwy, through: *mid.* Aeth drwy dân, *he went through fire.*

Dwy, two, (fem.): *mid.* Dwy gâth, *two cats.*

Dy, thy: *mid.* Dy dâd, *thy father.* Dy fam, *thy mother.*

Dyma, here is: *mid.* Dyma gleddyf miniog, *here is a sharp sword.*

Dyna, there is: *mid.* Dyna fachgen da, *there's a good boy.*

E, expletive pronoun: *mid.* E ddywedodd Arthur y gwir, *Arthur said the truth.*

Efo, with, along with: *asp.* Tori efo chyllell, *to cut with a knife.* Aeth i ffordd efo chyfaill, *he went away with a friend.*

Ei, his: *mid.* *Ei* goes, *his leg.* *Ei* ganu, *his singing.*

(a) *Ei mas.*, placed before a *finite* verb, governs the *radical*.
Arthur a'i (= a ei) dysgodd ef, *Arthur taught him.*

When *ei mas.* precedes a *finite* verb with a vowel initial, the said verb has the aspirate *h* prefixed to it. Arthur a'i (= a ei) handwyodd ef, *Arthur ruined him.*

Ei, her: *asp.* *Ei* choes, *her leg.* *Ei* chanu, *her singing.*

(a) *Ei fem.*, placed before a *finite* verb, governs the *radical*.
Arthur a'i (= a ei) carodd hi, *Arthur loved her.*

When *ei fem.* precedes a word with a vowel initial, that word has the aspirate *h* prefixed to it. Angharad a'i (= a ei) hawen, *Angharad and her muse.* Daeth i'w handwyo hi, *he came to ruin her.* Efe a'i handwyodd hi, *he ruined her.*

Eill = *ill*: *rad.*

Ein, our: *rad.* *Ein* tad, *our father.* *Ein* gwlad, *our country.*

(a) When *ein* precedes a word with a vowel initial, that word has the aspirate *h* prefixed to it. *Ein* hiaith, *our language.*

Eithr, but: *rad.* Na châr, *eithr* casâ ddrygioni, *do not love, but hate evil.* (See § 728, note a.)

Er, for; since; although: *rad.* *Er* ceiniog, *for a penny.* *Er* doe, *since yesterday.* *Er* dywedyd o hono y gwir, *though he said the truth.*

(a) *Er* is sometimes followed by the *mid.* of *bod.* *Er* bod or *er fod*,

Erbyn, against or by; against or contrary to: *rad.* *Erbyn* dydd Llun, *by Monday.* Siarad yn *erbyn* gwr doeth, *to speak against a wise man.*

Er mwyn, for sake of: *rad.* *Er* mwyn dyn, *for man's sake.*

Er pan, since: *mid.* *Er* pan ddaeth Arthur, *since Arthur came.*

Er's, *er ys*, since: *rad.* *Er* ys talm byd, *for a long while since.*

Erwydd = *herwydd*: *rad.*

Eu, their: *rad.* *Eu* tâd a'u mām, *their father and their mother.*

(a) When *eu* precedes a word with a vowel initial, that word has the aspirate *h* prefixed to it. *Eu* hawen, *their muse.*

Fâl = *mâl*: *rad.*

Fath, (from radical *bath* or *math*), such, sort: *mid.* Y fath bethau, *such things.* Pa fath ddyn yw efe? *what sort of a man is he?*

Fe, expletive pronoun: *mid.* *Fe* ladrataodd Ioan lawer oddi arnaf, *John stole much from me.*

Fêl = *mâl*: *rad.*

Fo, expletive pronoun: *mid.* *Fo* luddiwyd Arthur rhag dyfod, *Arthur was prevented from coming.*

Fy, my: *nasal.* *Fy* nhad a fy mrawd, *my father and my brother.*

Gân, as; since; with; participial sign of the present: *mid.* Pa gân

goched bynag ydyw, *however red it is*. Gan ddywedyd o hono y gwir, *since he said the truth*. Nid oes gan fab yr ammaethwr lyfr, *the farmer's son has not a book*. Gân ladrata ciddo ei gymnydog, *stealing his neighbour's property*.

Gâr, *ger*, by or near: *rad.* Gâr llaw, *near the hand*. Gêr bron, *near the breast; before*.

Gerfydd, in contact with, or by: *rad.* Llusgo gerfydd gwallt, *to drag by the hair*.

Go, somewhat: *mid.* Dynes go dlws, *a tolerably handsome woman*.

Gwaith, because: *rad.* Gwaith goddeu, *on purpose*.

Gwedi, after; participial sign of the past: *rad.* Gwedi gwaith, *after work*. Gwedi darfod, *having finished*.

Gyda, with: *asp.* Aethym gyda thâd yr eneth, *I went with the girl's father*.

Heb, without; beside: *mid.* Heb Dduw, heb ddim, *without God, without anything*. Mal ydd oeddynt yu myned heb gastell, *as they were going by a castle*.

Heb law, besides: *rad.* Heb law pethau ereill, *besides other things*. (See § 728, note a.)

Heibio, by or beside: *rad.* Aeth ymheibio tŷ fy nghyfaill, *I passed by my friend's house*.

Herwydd, because: *rad.* Herwydd gweled o hono, *because he saw*.

Holl, all: *mid.* Yr holl genedlaethau, *all generations*.

Hyd, as far as; over; until: *mid.* Hyd ddiwedd byd, hyd ddydd barn, *to the end of the world, to the day of judgment*. Taena hwna hyd fwrdd dy gyfaill, *spread that over your friend's table*. Hyd âdyfodiad Arthur, *until Arthur's coming*.

(a) *Hyd*, and its compound *ar hyd*, sometimes govern the *radical*.

I, to, into: *mid.* Myned i dŷ, *to go into a house*.

(a) *I* governs *ti*, thou, and its compounds in the *radical*. Gofynais i ti ddyfod, *I asked you to come*. It governs *mi*, I or me, and its compounds; *mewn*, in; and *maes*, out, in the *rad.* or *mid.* Dywed i mi, or i fi, *tell me*.

Ill, their or they: *rad.* Ill dau, *they two*.

Is, below: *rad.* A ei di is gwynt, ai uwch gwynt? *wilt thou go below wind or above wind?*

(a) In *is law*, below, *is* is a prefix, and hence it governs the *middle*.

Llai, less: *rad.* Llai parablus, *less talkative*.

Llawer, many, much: *rad.* Llawer gwaith, *many a time*. Llawer mwy, *much more*.

Lled, partly: *mid.* Mae efe yn lled gyssurus, *he is tolerably comfortable*.

Lleiaf, least : *rad.* *Lleiaf cynnuhenus, least quarrelsome.*

Llyma, here is : *mid.* *Llyma Grist, behold Christ.*

Llyna, yonder is : *mid.* *Llyna ddyn dysgedig, behold a learned man.*

Mai, that : *rad.* *Dywed mai dyn earedig yw Arthur, he says that Arthur is a kind man.*

Mâl, as : *rad.* *Gair gwraig mâl gwynt y cychwyn, a woman's word sets off like the wind.*

Megys, as : *rad.* *Megys diddym, as nothing.*

Mewn, in : *rad.* *Mewn tŷ, in a house.*

Mi, expletive pronoun : *mid.* *Mi ddaw, he will come.*

Mo, auxiliary adverb : *mid.* *Nis medrant ganfod mo ddichellion y dyn, they cannot perceive the man's tricks.*

Môr, as, so, how : *mid.* *Môr ddu a'r frân, as black as the crow. Mae môr falch fel na sieryd â mi, he is so proud that he will not speak to me. Gwelwch mor falch yw Arthur, see how proud Arthur is.*

(a) *Môr* may be followed by the *mid.* or *rad.* of *ll* and *rh.* *Môr llon*, or *mor lon*, so cheerful.

Mwy, more : *rad.* *Mwy dysgedig, more learned.*

Mwyaf, most : *rad.* *Mwyaf dysgedig, most learned.*

Myn, by, in swearing : *rad.* *Myn dyn = by man; by heavens.*

Na, not (imper.); no; that . . not : *asp.* of the first class; *mid.* of the second and third. (1st class) *Na châr, love not. A gâr efe? Na châr. Will he love? He will not love. Amlwg yw na châr efe, it is evident that he will not love. (2nd and 3rd) Na fenthyca, borrow not. A ddaw efe? Na ddaw. Will he come? He will not come. Amlwg yw na lwydda efe, it is evident that he will not succeed.*

(a) *Na* governs the inflections of *bôd*, to be, sometimes in the middle, sometimes in the radical. *Dywedodd na fydd, or na bydd yno, he said that he will not be there.*

Na, nor; than : *asp.* *Na thâd na thaid, neither father nor grandfather. Gwell na thâd, better than a father.*

Nad, that . . not : *rad.* *Tybiaf nad gwir y chwedl, I think that the story is not true.*

Nuill, one or the other : *mid.* *Ar y naill du, on one side.*

Namyn, except : *rad.* *Namyn Duw nid oes dewin, except God there is none that knows the future. (See § 728, note a.)*

Nas, that . . not : *rad.* *Dywed nas daeth Arthur, he says that Arthur did not come.*

Nês, until : *rad.* *Ni ddywedais ddim nes clywed oddi wrtho, I said nothing until I heard from him.*

Neu, or : *mid.* *Bara neu gaws, bread or cheese.*

(a) *Nen* governs a finite verb in *rad.* *Dos allan neu tyreil i mewn, go out or come in.*

Newydd, newly or just: *mid.* Mae newydd fyned, *he is just gone.*

Ni, not: *asp.* of 1st class, and *mid.* of 2nd and 3rd. *Ni phaid*, *he will not cease.* *Ni ddaw*, *he will not come.* *Ni fedr*, *he is not able.*

(a) *Ni* governs the inflections of *bôd*, to be, sometimes in the middle, sometimes in the radical. *Ni fu*, or *ni bu yma*, *he has not been here.*

Nid, not: *rad.* *Nid milwr yw Arthur*, *Arthur is not a soldier.*

Nis, not: *rad.* *Nis gwelais neb*, *I saw nobody.*

No, than (obsolete): *asp.* *Gwerthfawroech no theyrnas*, *more valuable than a kingdom.*

O, from: *mid.* *Aeth o dŷ i dŷ*, *he went from house to house.*

(a) *O* in some instances governs the middle or radical. *O fewn*, or *o mewn*, *within.*

O, if: *asp.* *O cherwch fi*, *if you love me.*

Oddi, from: usually the middle, but sometimes the radical. *Oddi fry*, *from above.* *Oddi tân*, *from under.*

Oddi eithr, } except: *rad.* *Oddi eithr dyfod o hono*, *except he come.* (See *Oddigerth*, } § 728, note a.)

Ond, but: *rad.* *Nid derwydd ond Duw*, *there is no druid but God.* (See § 728, note a.)

Oni, if not; until; is not (interr.): *asp.* of 1st class, and *mid.* of 2nd and 3rd. *Oni chais efe*, *unless he tries.* *Oni ddelo*, *until he come.* *Oni fedr efe ddyfod?* *is he not able to come?*

Onid, *onis* = *oni*: *rad.*

Onid, but: *rad.* *Onid tŷ i Dduw*, *but the house of God.* (See § 728, note a.)

Os, if: *rad.* *Os daw yma*, *if he comes here.*

Pa, what: *mid.* *Pa beth ydyw?* *what is it?*

Pân, when: *mid.* *Pan glywais oddi wrtho*, *when I heard from him.*

Parth and *parthed*, as to: *rad.* *Parth gwirionedd y chwedl*, *as to the truth of the story.*

Pes, if: *rad.* *Pes cytunasai efe âg Arthur*, *if he had agreed with Arthur.*

Peth, some: *rad.* *Peth daioni*, *some good.*

Plegyd, because: *rad.* *Plegyd dywedyd o honof y gwir*, *because I said the truth.*

Po, by how much: *rad.* *Goreu po cyntaf*, *the sooner the better.*

Pob, every: *rad.* *Pob dyn*, *every man.* *Pob mân*, *everywhere.*

Pobl, people: *mid.* *Y bobl dda hyn*, *these good people.*

Poni = *oni*: *rad.* (Obsolete.)

Ponid = *oni*: *rad.* (Obsolete.)

Pur, very : *mid.* *Pur garedig*, *very kind.*

(a) *Pur* may be followed either by the *mid.* or *rad.* of *ll* and *rh.*
Pur rhwydd, or *pur rwydd*, *very free.*

Rhàg, from, for ; *lest* : *rad.* *Ffo rhag drwg arglwydd*, *fly from a bad lord.* *Rhag dyfod o hono*, *lest he should come.*

Rhai, some : *rad.* *Rhai dynion*, *some men.*

Rhwng, between : *rad.* *Rhwng mynyddoedd*, *between mountains.*

Rhy, too : *mid.* *Mae hyna yn rhy ddrwg*, *that is too bad.*

Rhyw, some : *mid.* *Rhyw ddyn*, *some man.* *Rhyw faint*, *some quantity.*

Saith, seven : *mid.* of 1st class, and *rad.* of 2nd and 3rd. *Saith ganwyll*, *seven candles.* *Saith derwen*, *seven oak-trees.*

Sawl, how many : *rad.* *Sawl gwaith ?* *how many times ?*

(a) *Y sawl*, such, governs *mid.* *Y sawl bethau*, *such things.*

Sef, that is, or namely : *rad.* *Efe sydd Dduw, sef Duw ein tadau*, *he is God, namely, the God of our fathers.*

(a) *Sef* is often followed by the verb of a transitive clause in the *middle.* *Hyn a ddywed, sef ddarfod iddo ei gynnorthwyo*, *this he says, namely, that he assisted him.*

Serch, notwithstanding : *rad.* *Serch ceisiaw o hono fy nrygu*, *although he tried to injure me.*

(a) It is sometimes followed by the *mid.* of *bod.* *Serch bod* or *serch fod.*

Tàn, under ; participial sign of the present ; until : *mid.* (See “*dân.*”)
Tan ddaw efe, *until he comes.*

Taw = *mai* : *rad.*

Tra, beyond (obselete) ; very : *asp.* *Tra chàll*, *very prudent.*

Tra, whilst, is irregular : it is followed by the *radical*, the *middle*, or the *aspirate.* Its general tendency, however, is to govern the *radical.*
Doeth dyn tra tawo, *a man is wise whilst he keep silent.*

Traws, cross, over : *rad.* *Traws mynydd*, *over a mountain.*

Tri, three : *asp.* *Tri thylwyth*, *three families.*

Tròs = *dròs* : *mid.*

Trwy = *drwy* : *mid.*

Tua, towards : *asp.* *Myned tua thref*, *to go towards home.*

Uch, *uwch*, above : *rad.* *Uwch gwynt*, *above wind.*

(a) In *uwch ben* and *uwch law*, *uwch* is a prefix, and hence it governs the *middle.*

Un, one (masculine) : *rad.* *Un dyu*, *one man.*

Un, one (feminine) : *mid.* *Un ddynes*, *one woman.*

(a) *Un* feminine before *ll* and *rh* governs the *radical.* *Un llwy*, *one spoon.* *Un rhaw*, *one spade.*

Unrhyw, any: *mid.* Cymmeraf unrhyw beth a fynoch, *I will take anything you like.*

Wedi = *gwedi*: *rad.*

Wele, behold: *mid.* Wele ddyn glwth, *behold a gluttonous man.*

Wrth, close to, by; to: *mid.* Sefyll wrth dan, *to stand by a fire.*
Dywedwch wrth fab Arthur, *tell Arthur's son.*

Wyth, eight: *mid.* of the 1st class, and *rad.* of the 2nd and 3rd. Wyth ben, *eight heads.* Wyth bys, *eight fingers.*

Y, the (masculine): *rad.* Y brenin, *the king.*

(a) It governs *dau*, two, *mâth*, such, *pobl* and *pobloedd*, people, in the *middle* sound. Y ddau ddyn, *the two men.* Y fath leidr, *such a thief.* Y bobl lyn, *these people.*

Y, the (feminine), governs the *singular* in the *middle*, the *plural* in the *radical.* Y frenines, *the queen.* Y breninesau, *the queens.*

(a) *Feminine nouns singular*, beginning with *ll* or *rh*, retain the *radical* after *y.* Y llong, *the ship.* Y rhodd, *the gift.*

(b) The cardinal numbers, even when *feminine*, retain the *radical* after *y.* Y deng morwyn, *the ten virgins.* But *dwy*, two, is put in the *middle.* Y ddwy eneth, *the two girls.*

(c) The word *Bala*, and proper names of *rivers*, although *feminine*, retain the *radical* after *y.* Y Bala. Y Teifi.

Y, expletive; *that*: *rad.* Yn y dechreuad y creodd Duw, *in the beginning God created.* Dywed y daw, *he says that he will come.*

Ychydig, a little, a few: *mid.* Ychydig lesâd, *little benefit.* Ychydig ddynion, *a few men.*

Yd, expletive (obsolete): *mid.* Mân yd lefair, *where it makes a noise.*

Ym, my: *rad.* Mi a'm (= a ym) tâd, *I and my father.*

(a) When *ym* precedes a word with a vowel initial, that word has *h* prefixed to it. Myfi a'm hiaith, *I and my language.*

Ym, in: *nasal.* Ym mhlwyf Pennant, *in the parish of Pennant.*

Ymhlith, for *ym mhlith*, amongst: *rad.* Ymhlith lladron, *amongst thieves.*

Ymron, for *ym mron*, almost: *rad.* Ymron marw, *almost dying.*

Ymysg, for *ym mysg*, amidst: *rad.* Mwy no physg ymysg môr, *more than fishes in the midst of the sea.*

Yn, participial sign of the present: *rad.* Yn canu, *singing.*

Yn, apposition and adverbial: *mid.* Arthur sydd yn frenin, *Arthur is a king.* Arthur sydd yn rhyfela yn dda, *Arthur fights well.*

(a) *Yn* apposition and *yn* adverbial govern *ll* and *rh* in the *radical.*

Yn, in: *nasal.* Yn nhref y Bala, *in the town of Bala.*

Yng, in: *nasal.* Yng ngharchar, *in prison.*

Ynghyda, for *yng nghyda*, together with : *asp.* *Ynghyda phethau ereill*, together with other things.

Ynghylch, for *yng nghylch*, about : *rad.* *Ymryson ynghylch geiriau*, to contend about words.

Yngŵydd, for *yng ngŵydd*, before : *rad.* *Yngwydd brenin*, in the presence of a king.

Ynte, or : *rad.* *Naill ai dyn ynte dynes*, either a man or a woman.

Yr hwn, *yr hon*, *yr hyn*, who, which (rel.) : *mid.* *Yr hwn ddyn*, which man.

Yr un (masculine), the same; any : *rad.* *Yr un gwr*, the same man.

Yr un (feminine), the same; any : *mid.* *Yr un fenyw*, the same woman.
(See *un* feminine.)

Yth, thy : *mid.* *Tydi a'th* (= a yth) *dâd*, thou and thy father.

QUESTIONS GIVEN TO THE CANDIDATES

FOR THE

POWIS EXHIBITION.

IN 1848.—EXAMINERS.

The Ven. JOHN WILLIAMS, M. A., Archdeacon of Cardigan.

The Rev. ROWLAND WILLIAMS, B. D., Vice-Principal of St. David's College, Lampeter.

1. Welsh vocables for the following English words:—
1. Reason. 2. Understanding. 3. Intellectual powers.
4. Virtue. 5. Honour. 6. Moral feelings.

2. English vocables for the following Welsh words:—
1. Amynedd. 2. Gwladgarwch. 3. Pwyll. 4. Diddig-
rwydd. 5. Diwygiad. 6. Rhagwybodaeth. 7. Rhagluniad.
8. Rhagflaeniad.

3. Give the various forms which the English verb "is" takes in the Welsh language, and state the different ways in which these forms may be used.

4. Give the Welsh forms of the Substantive verb "wyf" "I am," in all the tenses of the Indicative mood.

5. Give the same forms of the verb "credaf."

6. Give the same forms of the verb of which the participle is "yn canfod."

7. Show the manner in which the last verb exemplifies, more than the regular verb, the great fact, that the verb in all languages is compounded of a certain root, and of parts of the substantive verb.

8. Take the words "Càlon," a heart, "Pen," a head, "Dydd," day, "Gair," a word, "Bôn," a stem, "Tir," land, "Gwir," truth, "Ffordd," a road, "Mam," a mother, "Wy," an egg, and show their mutations when preceeded by the possessive pronouns, "fy," my, "dy," thy, "ei," both his and her, and "eu," their.

9. Give the various forms of the numbers two, three, and four, and the principle on which they take a different form.

10. State the rules for using "Os," if, and "Pe," if, in the Welsh language.

11. Also, the true use of "Nid," not, and "Na," not.

12. Conjoin "Caib and Pâl" in Welsh, "Dwr and Tân," "Pant and Cwm;" conjoin them also in the plural, putting "Pâl, Tân, and Cwm" first. Disjoin with the double "Na," "Cynffon and Corn;" also, in the plural, putting "Corn" first.

13. Give the Welsh forms of the Latin phrases:—"Vir doctus—aurum coctum—amnis brevis—terra lata—mel et lac—mala (apples) mellea.—Vir discet, vir didicit."

IN 1852.—EXAMINERS.

The Rev. THOMAS BRISCOE, B. D., Fellow and Tutor of Jesus College, Oxford.

The Hon. ROBERT CHARLES HERBERT, M. A., St. John's College, Cambridge.

1. Give the laws of the changes of initial consonants.

2. Enumerate the adjectives that take a plural form to agree with substantives.

3. Wherein do Welsh numerals differ from the English ones?—and give the reason of the peculiarity of the former.

4. The verb "canu" in its different tenses, moods, and voices.

5. The law of accentuation.

6. How do Welsh substantives form their plurals?—Give instances.

7. Give the terminations of derivative adjectives and their force, with instances to prove your assertion.

8. State the syntax of adjectives, and the exceptions.

9. Marked agreements, or differences, between Welsh idioms and those in Greek and Latin.

10. Give the derivations and historical associations of the following words:—viz. llong, plygu, gwydr, bara, haul, seren, syr, dydd iau, melldith, gwydd, pasc, pastwn, pori, gwae, Prydain, Cymru.

IN 1854.—EXAMINERS.

The Rev. THOMAS BRISCOE, B. D., Fellow and Tutor of Jesus College, Oxford.

The Rev. FRANCIS FRANCE, B. D., Fellow and Tutor of St. John's College, Cambridge.

1. Give the voices, moods, tenses, and persons of *gweled* and *grneyd*.

2. Compare the *personal* and *other affixes* of verbs with the same in Greek and Latin.

3. Give the various uses of the *infinitive mood*.

4. What words have the first syllable aspirated; and under what circumstances does this happen? Give instances thereof.

5. Enumerate the various forms of the personal pronouns, and their distinctive uses.

6. Give forms of the *superlative* and *comparative* degree cognate to the same in Welsh.

7. Give the distinctive uses of *bod* and *fod*, of *oes*, *mae*, *yn*, and *sydd*, of *yn* and *mewn*, of *ond* and *eithr*, of *ger bron* and *o flaen*, of *ar ol* and *yn ol*, of *holl* and *oll*, of *pob* and *panb*, of *y* and *yr*, of *ym mhlith* and *ym mysg*, of *neb*, and of *dim*.

8. Give the derivation of, or words cognate to, *cymdeithas*, *sulgwyn*, *cynnither*, *haf*, *cerdd*, *gryllt*, *dangos*, *anrhaith*,

prynu, calon, symmud, Arglwydd, tragwyddol, llin, gwall, ieuo, clod.

9. Give the terminations of nouns substantive, and their general signification, with instances.

10. In what cases does there seem to be a violation of rule as to gender in nouns adjective and substantive?

11. Distinguish between *nerth* and *cadernid*, *gwybod* and *adnabod*, *cyfoeth* and *golud*, *buchedd* and *byrwyd*, *gallu* and *medru*, *gwasanaeth* and *gweinidogaeth*, *canlyn* and *dylyn*.

12. Translate into a proverb-like form, “*καλον κορακος καλον ωον*,” “brevity is the soul of wit,” “*quot homines tot sententiæ*,” “the greater the difficulty, the greater the glory.”

“Early to bed and early to rise,
Is the way to be healthy, wealthy, and wise.”

IN 1856.—EXAMINERS.

The Rev. ROWLAND WILLIAMS, B. D., Vice-Principal of St. David's College, Lampeter.

The Rev. WILLIAM BASIL T. JONES, M. A., Fellow and Tutor of Univerity College, Oxford.

1. What is peculiar in the Welsh usage of *tenses*, as compared with the English idiom?

2. When does the Article, and when the word *yn*, affect the following initial, and when not?

3. Translate; and analyse the *initial mutations*, giving the reason for each, and the primary form:

Ar y gair, ni a droisom ein hwynebau oddi wrth y Ddinas fawr Ddienydd, ac aethom ar i fynu, tua'r ddinas fach arall: wrth fyned, gwelem ym mhen uchaf yr ystrydoedd lawer wedi llettroi oddi wrth hudoliaeth y Pyrth Dienydd, ac ymorol am Borth y Bywyd; ond naill ai methent ei gael, ai blinent ar y ffordd; nid oedd fawr iawn yn myned trwodd, oddi eithr un dyn wynebdrist oedd yn rhedeg o ddifrif, a myrdd o'i ddentu yn ei ffoli, rhai yn ei watwar, rhai yn ei sygwrth; a'i geraint

yn ei ddal ac yn ei greu i beidio â'i daflu ei hun i golli yr holl fyd ar unwaith.

4. Give the futures of *aros*, *taflu*, *ceisio*, *cael*, and *grybod*; and the Welsh for *two guineas*, *two pounds*, *two shillings*, *two pence*, *two hands*, and *two feet*.

IN 1860.—EXAMINERS.

The Rev. RICHARD BRISCOE, D. D., Senior Fellow of Jesus College, Oxford, and Vicar of Whitford.

The Rev. ROWLAND WILLIAMS, D. D., Vice-Principal of St. David's College, Lampeter.

1. What affinities exist between the Welsh and the Greek and Latin languages.

2. Mention the plurals of *llo*, *alarch*, *iar*, *bwyall*, *eryr*, *hwch*, *nant*, *bustach*, *pandy*.

3. Illustrate by examples the degrees of comparison of adjectives. What is the affix *ed* in *amled*, *ofered*, *glaned*?

4. Conjugate "*prynu*" in the indicative mood active and passive. Give instances of neuters, middles, and impersonals.

5. Explain *a*, *y*, *ei*, preceding verbs. Mention the different uses of *yn*.

6. Distinguish between *pori* and *bwyta*: *os* and *pe*: *maint* and *sawl*: *dynes* and *gwraig*: *ceiliog-rhedyn* and *ceiliog-hwyad*: *pryf copyn* and *pryf y rhwd*.

7. Correct, if necessary, stating reasons. *Y brenin y wlad a daeth. Daeth allan waed a dwfr. Mawr yw Diana'r Ephes-iaid. Nid ydyw'r llyfr hwn i'w chymmeryd ymaith. A'r Iorddonen a lanwai dros ei glânau oll holl ddyddiau'r cynauaf.*

8. The names of the months and seasons in Welsh.

Translate into Welsh. Prepare dinner for three ladies at three o'clock. The sooner the better. Run as fast as you can. The one hundred and thirty-seventh Psalm, on the fifty-ninth page. I want to have my hair cut, it is so thick and long.

The sick man pined on his sick-bed. Where is your money? It is locked up in a box. Where is your silver? It is concealed in the stackyard. In earing time and in harvest thou shalt rest. He is worthy of stripes.

Translate into English. Morgan a aeth i'r dref ar ei ben ei hun. Ioan a ymwelodd â Thomas.

9. Mention variations in the dialects of North and South Wales.

10. What are the principal theories regarding Welsh Orthography?

IN 1862.—EXAMINERS.

The Rev. WILLIAM BRISCOE, M. A., Fellow, Tutor, and Welsh Reader of Jesus College, Oxford.

The Rev. ARTHUR HOLMES, M. A., Lecturer of St. John's College, Cambridge.

1. Translate into English: Y dydd hwnw y codaf babell Dafydd yr hon a syrthiodd, ac a gauaf ei bylechau, ac a godaf ei hadwyau, ac a'i hadeiladaf fel yn y dyddiau gynt: fel y meddianno y rhai y gelwir fy enw arnynt, weddill Edom, a'r holl genedloedd, medd yr Arglwydd, yr hwn a wna hyn.

2. Translate into Welsh: A good name is rather to be chosen than great riches, and loving favour rather than silver and gold. The rich and poor meet together: the Lord is the maker of them all. A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself: but the simple pass on, and are punished. By humility and the fear of the Lord are riches, honour, and life. Thorns and snares are in the way of the froward: he that doth keep his soul shall be far from them.

3. Write down a brief conversation in Welsh on the International Exhibition, or the American Civil War.

4. What are the special difficulties of Welsh writing and speaking? Suggest methods for meeting such difficulties.

5. Give Welsh equivalents for Industry, Horse-shoe, Last year, This year, Night before last, Day after to-morrow, May

Day, New Year's Day, Good Friday ; and English equivalents for Segur, Byddar, Amynedd, Ymenydd, Huno, Corlan.

6. Give the different usages of Am, Ar, Er, Braidd, Cyn, Rhag, Tra, Dros, Wrth, Gan.

7. Give the principal tenses of Caffael, Cadw, Agoryd, Ffoi, Gwrandu, Sefyll, Rhoddi, Myned, Ymadael, Ymafael.

8. "Language is not made, but grows." Examine this Dictum with reference to the past and present history of the Welsh language.

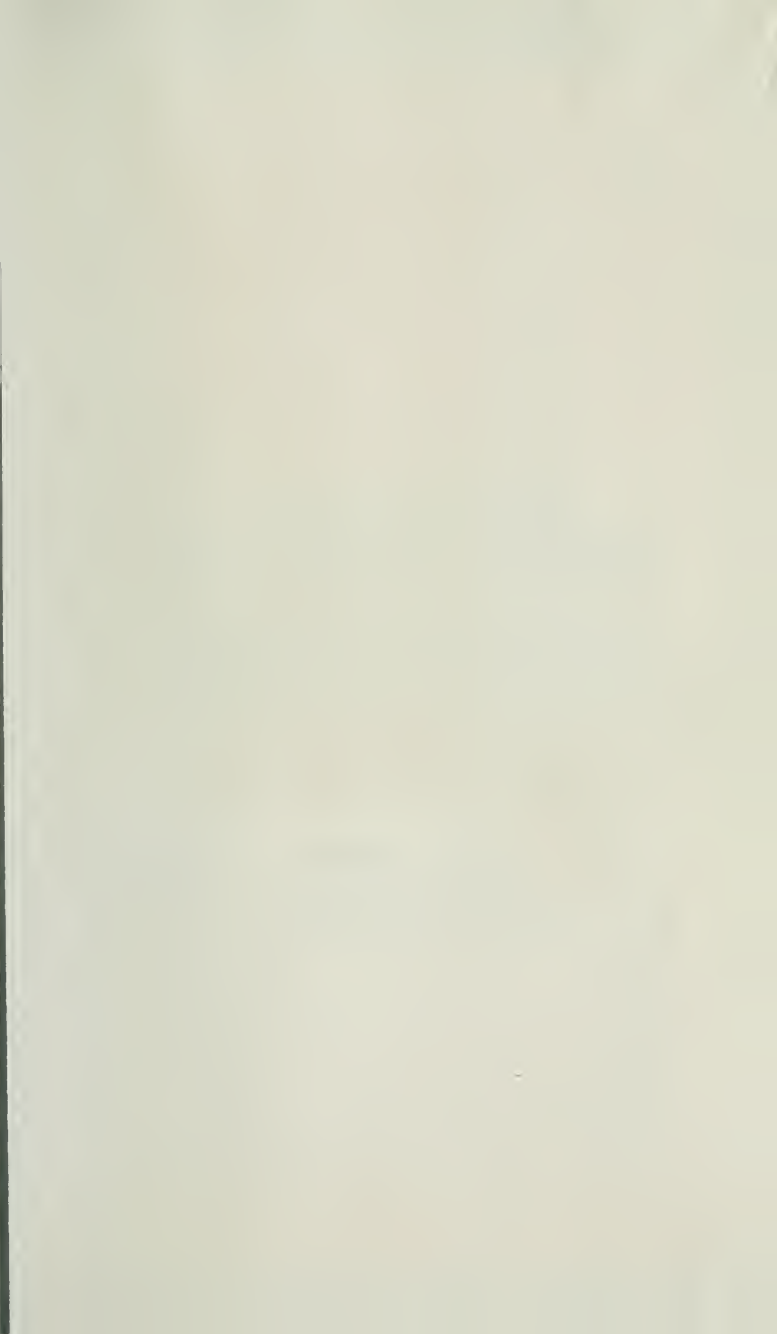
9. Write the year and day of the month in Welsh.













78

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

LaCelt.
R8835g

Rowland, Thomas
A grammar of
the Welsh language

UTL AT DOWNSVIEW



D RANGE BAY SHLF POS ITEM C
39 11 12 06 11 010 8